



8/11 Very Scarce  
653

*Library of the Theological Seminary.*

PRINCETON, N. J.

Collection of Puritan Literature.

*Division* .....

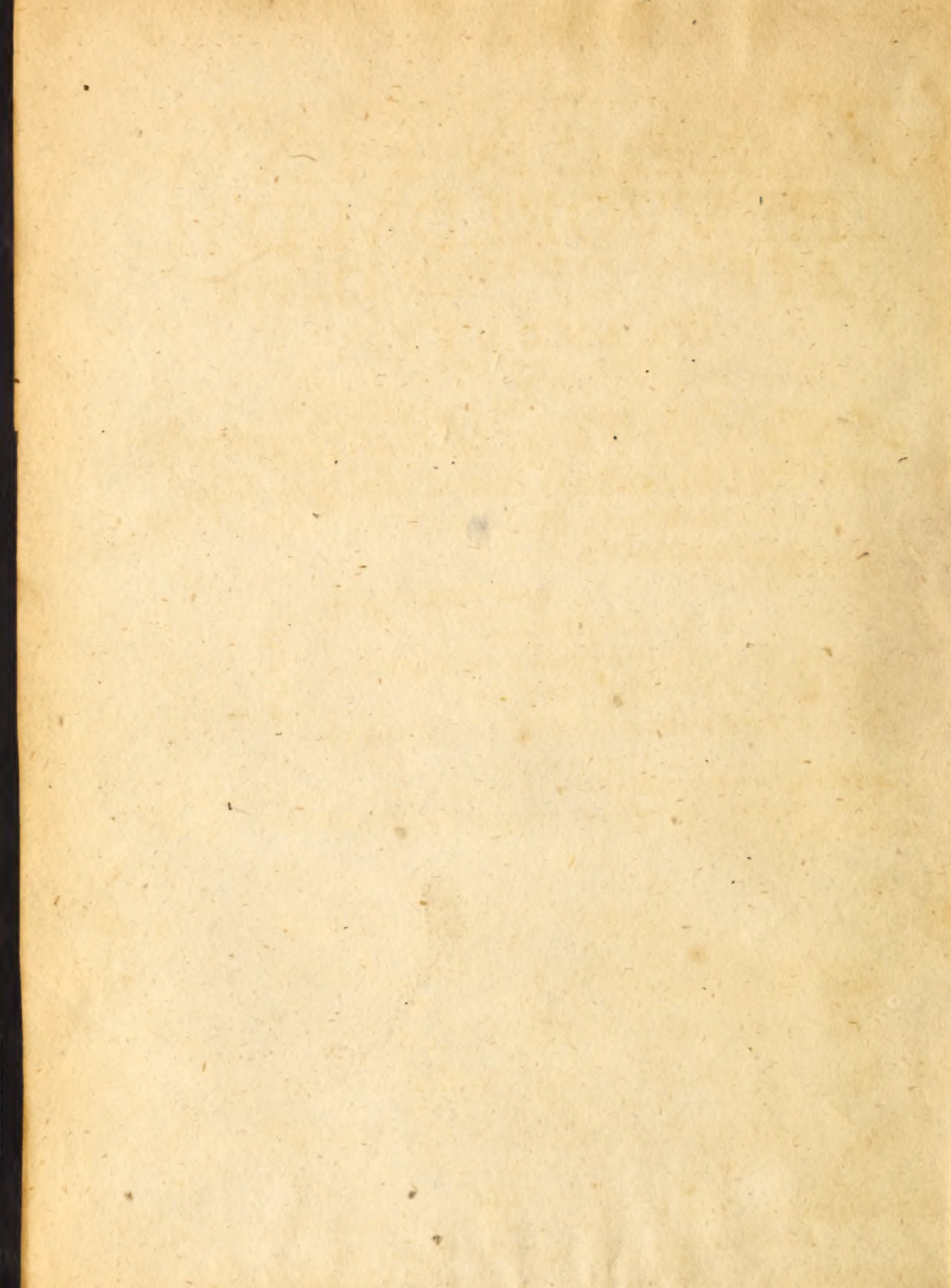
*Section* .....

*Number* .....

SCC  
9252







ESSEX DOVE,  
 PRESENTING  
 THE VVORLD VVITH  
 A FEVV OF HER OLIVE  
 BRANCHES:

OR,

*A taste of the Workes of that Reverend,  
 Faithfull, Iudicious, Learned, and holy Mi-  
 nister of the Word, Mr. I O H N S M I T H, late  
 Preacher of the Word at Clauering in E S S E X.*

*Deliuered in three severall Treatises, viz.*

- |   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| { | 1 <i>His Grounds of Religion.</i><br>2 <i>An Exposition on the Lords Prayer.</i><br>3 <i>A Treatise of Repentance.</i> | } |
|---|--|---|

V P R I G H T N E S S E h a t h B O L D N E S S E.

I T I M. 3. 16.

*And without Controuersie, great is the Mystery of godlinesse, God manifested in the Flesh, Ia-  
 sified in the Spirit, scene of Angels, Preached unto the Gentiles, beleueed on in the World, recei-  
 ued up into Glory.*



L O N D O N,

Printed by A.L. for George Edwards, and are to be sold at his house in the Old Bailey,  
 in Greene Arbor, at the signe of the Angell. 1629.

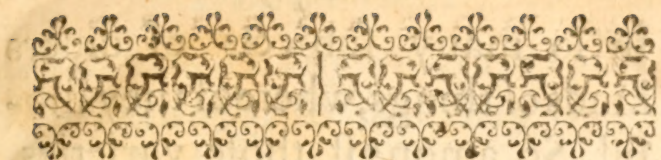


PRESENTING  
THE VOYAGE OF HER MAJESTY  
THE QUEEN

OF THE VOYAGE OF HER MAJESTY  
THE QUEEN  
TO THE  
WEST INDIES  
AND  
TO THE  
COAST OF AFRICA  
IN THE  
YEAR 1801  
BY  
JAMES JOHNSON, STATIONER, &c.  
No. 7, in Pall Mall.



LONDON:  
Printed by J. JOHNSON, STATIONER, &c.  
No. 7, in Pall Mall.



TO THE RIGHT  
HONOURABLE, THO-  
MAS, Lord COVENTRY of  
ALESBOROUGH, Lord KEE-  
PER of the Great Seale of *England*, and one  
of his Maiesties most honourable Priuy Coun-  
cell, &c. And to his Right Honourable and Noble  
Lady, ELIZABETH, &c. Lady COVEN-  
TRY, all happinesse.

*Right Honourable :*



S there is no-  
thing which  
doth more  
beautifie and  
adorne this  
great admi-  
rable frame  
of Heauen and Earth, then the  
wonderfull variety of those rari-  
ties, created in and about the same,



## The Epistle

in so many subiects of diuers kinds of things, whereof they subsist. So amongst those varieties, nothing is so wonderfull as the seuerall gifts proceeding from that All-quickenig Spirit of God: which as at first, *It moued vpon the waters*, cherishing, vpholding, and quickning *that rude, vndigested great formelesse lumpe*, vntill by Diuine power, it had animated that, and all things therein contained, setting them in their most beautifull formes; breathing, as naturall life in man, so, at length a more abounding spirituall life, which should vent and diffuse it selfe in so many thousand seuerall gifts and excellencies, as (in a manner) there are seuerall Christians: especially in the Ministers of the

VVord:



## Dedicatorie.

Word: whose *lippes*, as they pre-  
serue knowledge, so haue they their  
seuerall abilities, some to cast  
downe, raise vp, intreat, perswade,  
conuince, instruct, threaten, insinu-  
ate, reforme, illustrate, explaine, o-  
pen, divide, and conueigh truthes to  
the seuerall capacities of their  
hearers. In which the Author  
of this Booke (a man well known  
to your Honours) being so excel-  
lently sometime adorned with a  
compound of these and many  
moe gifts, (in most whereof hee  
excelled) that the memory of so  
*pious, painfull*, and *learned* a man  
of God might not be forgotten, I  
aduentured to shrowd this booke  
vnder your Honours wings of  
protection, to receiue some lustre  
and countenance by your fauour,

*The Epistle.*

clearing the obscurity thereof, in place of the curious hand of the most worthy Author now dead: who as he *was*, and his Name and Fame (I hope) yet *is* and *ever will be* precious in your sight; So I hope the Relation hee sometime had with some of yours, and estimation from you, would purchase me easily a pardon for this *intruding boldnesse*, whereby I haue assayed to declare my selfe euer,

Your Honours in all humble  
duty bound,

I. HART.



## To the Reader.



Know not what Apologie to make for my selfe, that now in the copious multiplicity of Treatises of this nature, I should yet thrust forth more, as though I could be a poore meanes to bring unto thee any new matter, which by some former Worthy had not beene said before.

And surely, this had almost discouraged me, untill I called to mind the speeche and counsell of a Right Reuerend Father of the Church (yet aliue) which was, That if a thousand seuerall men had all written on these seuerall subiects: yet he could wish them all Printed. For (said he) though all doe agree in the maine, yet should we see a different carriage of elegancy and variety of the same spirit in the diuers distributions, amplifications, and prosecutions of the same subiect; Whereby (at least) this profit would come, that the soule might now and then be raiued in the admiration of the rarities of that Wonder-working spirit, which so diffuseth it selfe in choyce of excellent abilities (all exquisite and diuers) among such multitudes of seuerall men. This with the delight I tooke in reading, trimming and writing them out (with very much adoe) together with the desire I had to doe some poore seruice to the Church, and perpetuate the memory of the All-deseruing, most worthy, and learned Author (sometime my deare friend) imboldened mee to venter them unto thy view: at the request of his sometime deare Wife and Executrix. I beseech thee therefore, fauorably, to censure what is done, accepting the same in good part from him who chused rather to present thee with a few Crummes which fell from this Holy mans Preaching:



## To the Reader.

ing: then altogether bury in silence with him, his Words and Workes. True it is, he wrote an infinite, intricate exceeding small abreviated hand: out of all hope and possibility to be read (a fault yet incident to too many good Preachers, whereby they robbe Posterity of their Labours) by reason whereof, these three Treatises (mangled as they are) were, with much ado, by a painfull Writer, and other helpes, fetcht (as it were) out of the fire, and so brought to this imperfect perfection. The former two, by him were neuer intended for the publike view: onely that of Repentance, with his owne Epistle, he had appointed for the Presse, at our earnest intreaty, but left it unfinished to his mind. Therefore if therein thou findest anything pleasing for thy good: and so canst measure *Ex vngue Leonem*: iudge, if the Eccho of his voyce, the traces of his foot-steps, be such in scattered vnperfect Notes; what were those sweet and Excellent Straines of Learning and Piety, wherewith he was most Plentifully indowed, and wherewith this Booke had beene more abundantly stored if his exact curious hand had limned it out for this use. Much more I might say of him, but why should I? seeing it were but to extenuate the Worth of such a shining and a burning Lampe, by labouring to expresse, that which was unexpressable, and which my ignorance was neuer able to reach or search into. Onely my request unto thee now is, to forgive my weakenesse, and those mangling mistakings, which (by my ignorance and want of iudgement to dispose aright) are found therein: assuring thy selfe I meant well, though I could not reach the Altitude of the Author as I wished; nor amplifie his breuities (as not daring to meddle with Apelles vnfinished Picture:) which great fauour shall bind me yet further to ayme at thy good: remaining in the meane time,

Thy seruant in Christ Iesus,

I. HART.



**An Alphabetical Table to this worthy Worke :**  
Wherein we would intreat the Reader to take notice of  
this one thing, *to wit*, that this Booke is diuided into three seue-  
rall Treatises, and therefore the Table is made accordingly,  
as for instance, where you see T. 1. that stands for *Trea-*  
*tise 1.* T. 2. that stands for *Treatise 2.* T. 3. for *Trea-*  
*tise 3.* And P. stands for the *Page*, of that first,  
second, or third *Treatise*.

**A.**

**A**doption, How wee are  
adopted, *Treatise 1.*  
Page 19. The fruits of  
Affection. *ibid.* &c.

Adoption, with what affection  
we must pray. T. 2. p. 17, 18.

Affliction, how to be patient in  
affliction, T. 1. p. 44.

Almighty, of Gods Almighty-  
nesse, T. 1. p. 79. the use of it, 80.

Amen, what it signifies and con-  
taines in our Prayers, T. 2.  
p. 141.

Angels, how they doe Gods Will,  
T. 1. p. 116. T. 2. p. 68, 69. &c.

Anger, whether we may be angry,  
T. 1. p. 34.

Apparell, how to be sober in appa-  
rell. T. 1. p. 31.

Application, of the application

of the forgiveness of sinnes to  
a mans owne selfe. T. 1. p. 104.

Armour, the parts of a Christi-  
ans Armor, T. 1. p. 72.

Ascension, of Christs Ascension  
with many circumstances ther-  
of, necessarily to be known. T. 1.  
p. 91.

Assurance, whether a man may  
be assured of his salvation. T. 1.  
p. 76. whether we may not bee  
deceiued in our assurance, T. 1.

p. 77.  
Attention, it ought to be in our  
prayers. T. 2. p. 141.

**B.**

**B**aptisme, whether children  
may be saved without bap-  
tisme, T. 1. p. 130, 131. whe-  
ther it be Lawfull for a private  
person to baptise or no, T. 1.  
p. 131.

# THE TABLE.

p.131. the pretended necessity,  
ibid. &c. why there are two  
signes in the Lords Supper,  
and but one in baptisme, T. 1.

P.137.

Bargaining, how our love to our  
neighbour is shewed in it, T. 1.

P.39-40.

Beleeue, what it is to beleeue in  
God, T. 1. p. 75. vide Faith.

Blood, the resemblances betweene  
Wine and blood in the Lords  
Supper, T. 1. p. 137. how the  
Wine is the blood of Christ,  
T. 1. p. 138. how Christs blood  
was shed for many, T. 1. p. 140  
the benefit of it, ibid. &c.

Bread, of that Petition, Give vs  
this day our daily bread, T. 1.  
p. 117. what is meant by  
bread, ibid. &c. T. 2. p. 97.  
many other necessary questions  
concerning it, T. 1. p. 117, 118

119, 120.

Of Bread in the Lords Supper,  
T. 1. p. 133. &c. why we pray  
for bread, before remission  
of sinnes, T. 2. p. 77. why we  
pray for bread, having enough  
of it, T. 2. p. 82. how much  
bread we may pray for, T. 2.  
p. 84. whose bread we pray for  
T. 2. p. 86. two breads unlaw-  
full, t. 2. p. 87. daily bread what  
it should teach vs, T. 2. p. 90.

Buriall, of Christs burial, and the  
circumstances thereof. T. 1.  
p. 89, 90.

C.

Are, of ordering our care for  
things of this life, T. 1.

P. 75. of moderating our care,  
T. 2. p. 76.

Change, what change repen-  
tance makes in the inward  
man, T. 3. p. 31, 32. what in  
the outward, T. 3. p. 34, 35.

Children, their duty towards  
their parents, T. 1. p. 57, 58.

Christ, what our estate is in  
Christ, T. 1. p. 15. how hee  
wrought it, ibid. by what  
means we receive Christ, T. 1.  
p. 8. how hee doth save vs  
from the punishment of sin, T. 1  
p. 82. why twas necessary that  
Christ should be God. T. 1.  
p. 84. how he may be said to be  
the ONELY Sonne of GOD,  
ibid. why he is called a Lord,  
t. 1. p. 85. how he was conceived  
by the Holy Ghost, ibid. why  
twas needfull that Christ  
should be Man, ibid. of Christs  
humiliation and glorification,  
T. 1. p. 86. &c. of his being cru-  
cified, T. 1. p. 87. of his death.  
88. of his buriall 89 of his re-  
surrection, 90. and Ascension.  
91.

Christian, the common duties of  
a Christian, T. 1. p. 30. why  
we are called Christians, T. 1.  
p. 83. how Christians are both  
Kings,



# THE TABLE,

*Kings, Priests, and Prophets,*  
ibid.

**Church,** what T. 1. p. 99. *What we beleue concerning it,* T. 1. p. 100. *why holy,* ibid. &c. *why Catholicke* ibid. *the markes of it,* ibid. &c. *the Popish markes of it,* T. 1. p. 101. *the benefites that God bestowes on his Church,* T. 1. p. 102.

**Communion,** of the communion of Saints, T. 1. p. 102, 103. *vide Fellowship.*

**Company,** that the company of the godly are a good helpe to an holy life. T. 1. p. 69

**Conference,** its end, T. 1. p. 51.

**Confession,** whether in repentance, man be bound to confesse his sinnes to men, T. 3. p. 110.

**Consideration,** *it is an helping cause to repentance,* T. 3. p. 45. *which consideration, must be of foure things.* ibid. &c.

**Coueteousnesse,** the causes of it, and remedies, T. 1. p. 41.

**Creator,** why God is so called, T. 1. p. 80, 81.

**Creed,** why called the Apostles Creed, T. 1. p. 75. *its parts,* ibid.

**Crucifie,** of Christs being crucified, T. 1. p. 87.

**Cup,** the Cup in the Sacrament, whether to be administred to all or not. T. 1. p. 138.

D.

**Day,** how we are to spend both Sabaoth and weeke dayes T. 1. p. 72, 73, 74.

**Death,** of Christs Death, T. 1. p. 38. *with many circumstances thereof.* p. 89 90. *whether a man may pray for his owne Death,* T. 1. p. 114. *of the death of Christ,* whether any forget it. T. 1. p. 136. *how a man may desire his owne death,* T. 2. p. 54. *That a man may truly repent, and yet shew but little signe of it at the day of death,* T. 3. p. 138. *their causes of it,* T. 3. p. 140, 141. *the generall cause of want of comfort in death,* T. 3. p. 145 *the way to dye comfortably,* T. 3. p. 146 147. *In this way there are two things,* T. 3. p. 149, 150. *Reasons to prepare us for death,* T. 3. p. 150, 151, &c. *Preparation for death stands in five things,* T. 3. p. 152, &c. *there must be an holy disposition in death,* T. 3. p. 162. *which stands in fixe things.* 162, 163. &c.

**Debts,** why sins are called debts, T. 1. p. 121. T. 2. p. 99. *that we are all fallen into this debt,* T. 2. p. 101. *that we are not able to pay this debt,* T. 2. p. 103

**Delay,** five reasons why we should

# THE TABLE.

not delay our repentance, T. 3.

P. 52, 53, 54, 55.

Deprecation, what it is, T. 3.

P. 77.

E.

**E**Arth, why there are in the  
Lords Prayer but one Petiti  
on for earthly things, & two for  
heavenly, T. 2. p. 94 95.

End, of desiring the end without  
using the means, T. 2. p. 32.

Estate, what it is in our selues,  
t. 1. p. 15. what in Christ, t. 1. p. 15

Euill, of all euills, the euill of sin  
is the greatest, T. 2. p. 127.

what use to make of it, p. 128,

129. We desire to be deliuered  
from three euils, T. 2. p. 131,

133.

Examination, of its necessity, be-  
fore we come to the Lords Sup-  
per, T. 1. p. 141, 142. about the

Examination of our repen-  
tance, T. 3. 68, 69, 70. the rule

for it, T. 3. p. 70. the heads  
upon which we must examine,

T. 3. p. 72, &c.

Excesse, against it, T. 2. p. 84, 85

F.

**F**Alling, vide relapse of fal-  
ling damnably, T. 3. p. 92.

cautions, ibid, &c. of the com-  
fort which a man may haue of

falling into sinne after repen-  
tance, T. 3. p. 95. Whether a

man falling into the same sinne  
again, after repentance, may  
be renewed, Affirmat. T. 3. p. 97  
but not so easily as others, T. 3.  
p. 98, 100. objections against  
it, T. 3. 101.

Bather, of God the Father, T. 1.

p. 78. wherein wee may finde

God a Father, T. 1. p. 105.

Faith, what it is, T. 1. p. 17. its

kinds, and meanes to beget it,

ibid. the fruits of it, T. 1. p. 18

how iustified by faith, ibid. the

difference betweene historicall

and iustifying faith, T. 1. p. 76

how a man may know that hee

hath faith, ibid, &c. 77. means

of strengthening our faith, T. 1.

p. 106. two grounds of faith in

prayer, t. 2. p. 19, 20, 21. three

Acts of faith, T. 3. p. 23. the

faith that a Christian man

must dye in consists in three

things, T. 2. p. 163.

Of the feare of God, T. 1. p. 27,

28. what it will worke in vs.

ibid. &c. 28. how we may set-  
tle it in our hearts, ibid. wee

must pray with feare, T. 2.

p. 23.

Feastings, how lawfull, T. 1. p. 30

Fellowship, what fellowship we

haue with Christ, t. 1. p. 102,

103. wherein it stands, ibid.

Forgiueneffe, what we are to be-  
lieue, concerning it, t. 1. p. 103.

how to apply it to a mans selfe.

t. 1.

# THE TABLE.

**T. 1. p. 104.** of the *Petition of forgiveness*, **T. 1. p. 120, 122.** the instruction and consolation we have by this *Petition*, **T. 1. p. 122, 123.** that we have all need of forgiveness, **t. 2. p. 109** that forgiveness is a most excellent mercy, which all should seeke for, **T. 2. p. 106.** why so few seeke for it, **T. 2. p. 108.** the extent of the *Petition of forgiveness*, **T. 2. p. 109.** the time of asking it is daily, **ibid.** the condition of forgiveness, **what**, **T. 2. p. 112, 113, 114.**

**Freewill**, against *Papish freewill*, **T. 3. p. 39.**

G.

**G**lory, the glory of God is the first thing we should desire in our Prayers, **T. 2. p. 30.** reasons why we may pray for the kingdom of glory, **T. 2. p. 51, 52.**

**God**, how knowne, **T. 1. p. 1, 2,** what he is, **T. 1. p. 2.** that we are to conceive of him by his properties, **T. 1. p. 2.** the use of God 4 properties, **T. 1. p. 4.** how many persons there be in the Godhead, **t. 1. p. 7. et 78.** that he is Almighty, **T. 1. p. 79.** why a Creator, **T. 1. p. 80, 81.** how God is our Father, **T. 1. p. 108.** of Gods Name, **T. 1. p. 110.** why we must pray to God

only,

**T. 2. p. 15.** **Godliness**, how necessary to salvation, **T. 1. p. 23.** how to begin a holy life, **ibid.** furtherances thereto, **T. 1. p. 24.** the points of godliness what, **T. 1. p. 43.** what difference betweene the state of the godly, and of the wicked, **T. 1. p. 68.**

**Gospel**, what it is, **T. 3. p. 13.** the main thing promised in it, **ibid.** two uses of it, **ibid.** &c. the difference betweene the Law and the Gospell, **T. 1. p. 16.**

**Grace**, it is to be nourished, **T. 1. p. 66.** impediments of grace, **T. 3. p. 57.** how a Christian may grow in grace, **T. 3. p. 194, 195, 196.**

**Grow**, of growing in the grace of repentance, **Treat. 3. p. 183.** how a Christian may grow in grace, **T. 3. p. 194, 195, 196.**

H.

**H**allowing, of the *Petition*, **Hallowed be thy Name**, **T. 1. p. 110, 111.** Gods Name hallowed of us, three wayes, **T. 2. p. 33.** three things helping herunto, **T. 2. p. 35, 36.** **Haire**, whether lawfull for men to weare long haire, **T. 1. p. 31.** **Heart**, what a man must doe to reforme the heart, **T. 1. p. 26.** what we must first plant in it, **T. 1. p. 27.** how we must bring



# THE TABLE.

our hearts in love with God

ibid.

Holy Ghost, vide Spirit, what  
we beleeve concerning the Ho-  
ly Ghost, T. 1. p. 95. what hee  
worketh in vs, p. 96. how a man  
may know whether he hath the  
Holy Ghost, ibid.

Husbands, their duties towards  
their wives, T. 1. p. 53. 54

Humiliation, what it is, and how  
to be performed, T. 3 p. 73.

I.

**I**Nward, what a change repen-  
tance maketh in the inward  
man, T. 3. p. 31.

Judgement, of the Iudgement  
day, T. 1 p. 93. the circumstan-  
ces thereof, T. 1. p. 94. 95. whe-  
ther all wish for it. T. 1. p. 114  
the iudgement of God is an  
helping cause of repentance,  
T. 3. p. 44.

Iustice, wherein the Iustice of  
God appeareth, T. 1. p. 4. how  
it stands with his Iustice, that  
the godly are commonly in  
worst estate, T. 1 p. 4.

Iustification, how wee are iusti-  
fied by faith, T. 1 p. 18. how de-  
clared, ibid. &c. that to the  
grace of iustification we must  
ioyne sanctification, t. 2 p. 120.

K.

**K**ill, how to kill sin, T. 1. p. 25.  
Kingdome, of that Petition,  
Thy Kingdome come, T. 1.

p. 111. its dependance with the  
former, ibid. Gods Kingdome  
twofold, T. 1. p. 112. what wee  
pray for in it, ibid. & T. 2 p.  
40. the evils that wee pray a-  
gainst in that Petition, T. 1. p.  
114. the impediments of the  
comming of Christ in others,  
T. 1. p. 41. and in our selues,  
T. 2 p. 42. a definition of the  
Kingdome of grace, T. 2. p.  
43. how the Kingdome of  
grace is already come, T. 2 p.  
44. the excellencies of this  
Kingdome of grace before all  
others, T. 2. p. 45. a further  
scope of this Petition, thy king-  
dome come, T. 2. p. 46. two  
wayes by which the Kingdome  
of God may come to vs, T. 2.

p. 52, 53.

Knowledge, of the knowledge  
of God, what, T. 1. p. 28. its  
parts, with the uses thereof,  
ibid.

L.

**L**Aw, what there must be in vs  
to haue the Law effectually  
to worke upon vs, T. 3. p. 1.  
the Law of a foure-fold use to  
an unregenerate man, T. 3. p.  
3, 4. 5. three uses of it in a re-  
generate man T. 3. p. 7. the dif-  
ferences between the Law and  
the Gospell, T. 3. p. 16, 17. the  
uses of it, ibid.

Life, how a good life is needfull to  
salua.

# THE TABLE.

saluation, T. 1. p. 23. where to  
begin a godly life, ibid. farther  
rances thereto, T. 1. p. 24. of  
the well-ordering of our liues,  
T. 1. p. 29. helps to an holy life,  
T. 1. p. 66, 67, 68. of our dayly  
practise in our life, T. 1. p. 70,  
71. of euerlasting life, T. 1. p.  
106. &c.

Loue, how wee must bring our  
our hearts in loue with God,  
T. 1. p. 27. how loue should bee  
shewed, T. 1. p. 34. the points  
of inwards loue, ibid. &c. how  
our loue in words should bee  
shewed, T. 1. p. 35. how in deeds  
ibid. how we must loue men in  
their soules, T. 1. p. 36. how in  
their goods, T. 1. p. 38. who of-  
fend herein, ibid. how to shew  
our loue to God, T. 1. p. 43.  
loue must be had in Prayer,  
T. 2. p. 22.

*c M.*

**M**An why made, T. 1. p. 1.  
Marriage, whether it bee  
lawfull for a Christian to mar-  
ry with a Jew, T. 1. p. 57.  
Masters, their duty, T. 1. p. 59, 60  
Meanes, of desiring to obtaine the  
end, without the use of the  
meanes, T. 2. p. 39. Meanes  
to grow in grace, T. 3. p. 196.  
Mercy, wherein Gods mercy ap-  
peareth T. 1. p. 5. the uses it,  
p. 6. the mercy of God is an  
helping cause to repentance, T.  
3. p. 43.

Merit, against Popish merits, T.  
3 p. 189.  
Ministers, their duty, T. 1. p. 65.  
Mirth, how to be moderate in it,  
T. 1. p. 33. Whether a continu-  
all penitent can euer be merry,  
T. 3. p. 129.  
Moderation, of moderation in  
mirth, T. 1. p. 33. more of it,  
T. 2. p. 84.  
Mourning, vide Sorrow.

*N.*

**N**ame, we must loue our bre-  
thren in their names, T. 2.  
p. 41. six duties required here-  
unto, ibid. of the Name of God  
T. 1. p. 110.  
Night, what we are to doe when  
night comes in, T. 1. p. 75.

*O.*

**O**bedience, of obedience to  
the will of God, T. 1. p.  
29. how wee may bring our  
hearts it, ibid.  
Occasion, whether if we would auoyd  
sin, we must auoyd the occasi-  
on, T. 2. p. 124.  
Office, how they that are in Of-  
fice should carry themselves,  
T. 1. p. 63, 64.  
Order, of well-ordering our liues,  
T. 1. p. 29.  
Outward, what a change repen-  
tance makes in the outward  
man, T. 3. p. 34.  
Pardon,

# THE TABLE.

P.

**P**ardon, that upon pardon of former sinnes, the diuells is ready to fasten new upon vs,

T.2.p.120.

Parents, their duty towards their children, T.1.p.56,57. how to be honoured of their children,

T.1.p.58.

Pastors, vi. Ministers, T.1.p.65.

Patience, how to fit our selues to be patient in trouble, T.1.p.44.

We must shew forth patience in the houre of death, T.2.p.165. their helpes to this patience,

T.2.p.166.

Perfection, of the perfection of good works, T.3.p.186. of the perfection of repentance in a Christian, T.3.p.187,188.

Power, Wherein Gods power appeareth,

T.1.p.2

Prayer, it is commended as a speciall part of godlinesse,

T.1.p.

44.45. the fittest time for it,

T.1.p.45. What prayer is, T.1

p.106. T.2.p.2, how many

things in it, T.1.p.107. T.2.p.

2. of the Lords Prayer, and its

parts, ibid. how to prepare our

selues to prayer, ibid. &c. of

the prayers of the common sort

T.1.p.109. Why we must pray

T.2.p.6.8. directions therein,

T.2.p.10.11. Whether a man

may vse a set forme of prayer,

T.2.p.11. Why we must pray

to God onely, T.2.p.15. With what affection we must pray,

T.2.p.17. two grounds of faith

in prayer, T.2.p.19, 20, 21.

We must pray with feare and

reuerence, T.2.p.25. the things

that we must labor for in pray-

er, T.2.p.26, 27. reasons to en-

force our Petitions, T.2.p.134

135, 136. the uses of it, T.2.

p.131.

Preface, why Christ useth a Pre-

face before his praier, T.2.p.13

Punishment, how to keepe a mo-

deration therein, T.1.p.60.

R.

**R**ecreations, how to bee used,

T.1.p.32.

Regeneration, three uses of the

Law in a regenerate man, T.

3 p.7,8.

Relapse, vide falling away. The

case of relapse, T.3.p.89. cau-

tions of falling away, T.3.p.92

cōsorts after relapse, T.3.p.95.

Repentance, the necessity of it,

T.3.p.18, 19. the uses of its

necessity, T.3.p.20. its order,

T.3.p.22. the difference of the

workes of faith, and true re-

pentance, T.3.p.23. the na-

ture of true repentance, T.3.

p.27. the world deceived ther-

in, T.3.p.28. repentance de-

fined, Treat.3. p.29. What a

change repentance worketh in

the whole man, T.3.p.31.32,

&c.



# THE TABLE.

&c. the causes, t. 3. p. 37, 38, 40. of the helping causes, t. 3. p. 42, 43. the time of repentance, t. 3. p. 49, 50. of deferring repentance, t. 3. p. 52. five main reasons why repentance is not to be deferred, t. 3. p. 53, 54. &c. In the particular time of repentance, there are six things to be considered, t. 3. p. 60. the practice of repentance, t. 3. p. 67. there are four things in repentance, t. 3. p. 68. the impediments of it, t. 3. p. 79, 80, 82, 85. how to remove these impediments, t. 3. p. 87. the cases of it, t. 3. p. 89. of the iteration of it, t. 3. p. 103. that we both may, and must repent often, for one and the same sin, t. 3. p. 104. three causes why we must renew our repentance, t. 3. p. 106, &c. whether a penitent sinner can ever be merry, t. 3. p. 109. teares not alwayes true tokens of repentance, t. 3. p. 120. vide plura teares. in repentance there is comfort at our death, t. 3. p. 137. that a man may truly repent, and yet shew little signe of it at his death, t. 3. p. 138. three causes of it, t. 3. p. 140. of the contraries of repentance, t. 3. p. 175, 176. unsound repentance. What, t. 3. p. 176. two sorts of unsound repentance, t. 3. p.

176, 177. of hypocriticall and desperate repentance, t. 3. p. 179. of late and forced repentance, t. 3. p. 179, 180. of the increase of repentance, t. 3. p. 183. that no repentance is perfect in this life, t. 3. p. 184, 185. &c. that repentance hath two parts, t. 3. p. 188. a sweet comfort to him that increaseth his repentance, t. 3. p. 190. three wayes wherein a Christian may grow in the grace of repentance, as well as in any other graces, t. 3. p. 192, 193.

Reproofe, what things are required in reprooving, t. 1. p. 37.

Restitution, Whether a man repenting, is bound to restitution, t. 3. p. 115, 116.

Resurrection, of Christs resurrection, with the circumstances thereof, t. 1. p. 90. What we are to beleue concerning it, t. 1. p. 104, 105.

Reuolt, vide relapse.

S.

Sabboth, the sanctification of it is the very sinew and life of all other Christian duties, t. 1. p. 47. how sanctified, ibid. the publicke exercises of it, what, t. 1. p. 49. the private, t. 1. p. 50. how long the Sabboth doth last, p. 52. when it begins, t. 1. p. 53. of spending the Sabboth, t. 1. p.

# THE TABLE.

- Sacraments,** vide *Supper of the Lord*. The name of a Sacrament, T. 1. p. 129. and definition with the use, *ibid.* number of them, T. 1. p. 130. be that comes to the Sacrament, must haue two hands, T. 1. p. 134. who they are that take no good by the receiuing of the Sacrament, *ibid.* the difference betweene ours and the Popish Sacrament, T. 1. p. 135. when Christ ordained the Sacrament, T. 1. p. 137. whether all may come to the Sacrament, T. 1. p. 141. of tryall before we come to the Lords Supper, *ibid.* of our behaniour in receiuing of the Sacrament, T. 1. p. 142. what we are to do after receiuing it, T. 1. p. 144. the reason of selfe dom receiuing it, T. 1. p. 146.
- Saluation,** how a man may be saued, T. 1. p. 10. vide *Life eternall*, T. 1. p. 106.
- Sanctification,** what, T. 1. p. 21. how so sanctified, *ibid.* &c. its fruits, T. 1. p. 22. that to the grace of iustification, we must labour to ioiue sanctification, T. 2. p. 120.
- Scriptures,** how knowne to be the Word of God, T. 1. p. 8. their drift, T. 1. p. 10. how to reade them with profit, T. 1. p. 67, 68
- Seruants,** their duty, T. 1. p. 61, 62, &c.
- Sinne,** Our sinfull estate, T. 1. p. 11. of sinne originall and actual, *ibid.* three sorts of actual sinnes, T. 1. p. 12. the misery of our sinnefull estate, p. 12, 13. by what meanes wee become sorrowfull for sinne, T. 1. p. 14. no man able to free himselfe from all sinne, T. 1. p. 24. how a man may know his darling sinne, *ibid.* how to kill sinne, T. 1. p. 25. sinnes why called debts, T. 1. p. 121. T. 2. p. 99. the meanes that God vseth in deliuering us from sin, T. 1. p. 127. originall sin, what, T. 1. p. 130. how taken away in baptisme, *ibid.* that upon pardon of former sinnes, the diuell is ready alwayes to fasten new upon vs, T. 2. p. 120.
- Sit,** what is meant by Christs sitting at the right hand of God, T. 1. p. 92.
- Sobriety,** what, T. 1. p. 30. in meates, *ibid.* in apparell, T. 1. p. 31. and in other creatures. T. 1. p. 32. &c. of other things wherein sobriety should be shewed T. 1. p. 33.
- Sonne,** why Christ is called Gods ONELY Sonne, When as wee also are called sons, T. 1. p. 84.
- Sorrow,** vide *mourning*, by what meanes wee may become sorry for our sinnes, T. 1. p. 14. how to be moderate therein, T. 1. p. 33.

# THE TABLE.

*r. 1. p. 33. sorrow for sinne requires sine qualifications, T. 3.*

*p. 74.*

*Spirit, vide Holy Ghost, T. 1. p. 95, 96, 97. the markes whereby we may know whether wee haue the Holy Ghost or no, T. 1. p. 98.*

*Subiection, the wines subiection to her husband, declared, T. 1. p. 55.*

*Suffer, of Christs sufferings, T. 1. p. 86.*

*Supper, the Lords Supper, vide Sacrament, T. 1. p. 132. the needfulnesse of it, ibid. the resemblances betweene the Bread and the Body in the Lords Supper, T. 1. p. 133. whether wee receive nothing but a signe in the Lords Supper, T. 1. p. 135. the resemblance betweene the Blood and the Wine in the Lords Supper, T. 1. p. 137.*

**T.**

**T***Eares, they are not alwayes true tokens of repentance, T. 3. p. 120. how to find comfort in teares, T. 3. p. 121. three things for which a man may shed teares, T. 3. p. 123. hinderances of penitent teares, T. 3. p. 127. that a man may truly repent, and yet not shed teares, T. 3. p. 128, 129. the*

*reasons why some men weepe sometimes, and others reioyce, at the first conuersion, T. 1. p. 132.*

*Temple, what are wee to doe before, in, and after we goe into the Temple, T. 1. p. 72, 73, 74, &c.*

*Temptation, of that Perdition: Lead vs not into temptation, T. 1. p. 123, 124. God tempts no man, ibid. how God workes in temptation, and yet is free from sinne, ibid. the evils that we pray against, in that we say, Lead vs not into temptation, T. 1. p. 125. that wee may pray not to be tempted, T. 2. p. 121. two kinds of temptations that a man is subiect vnto, T. 2. p. 122. that we are exceeding apt to yeeld to temptation, T. 2. p. 123. how God may be said to tempt, & how not, T. 2. p. 125. the uses of it, T. 2. p. 126. whether a man may resist temptation by the power of Nature, T. 2. p. 129, 130.*

*Testament, what, T. 1. p. 139. the tenour of both Testaments ibid.*

*Tryall, we should daily try our estates, T. 1. p. 67.*

**V.**

**V***Nregenerate, a fourfold vse of the Law to the vnregenerate,*



# THE T A B L E.

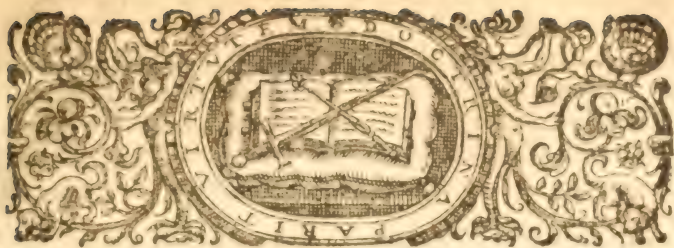
regenerate, T. 3. p. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.  
 Vowes, the remembrance of  
 them are helpe to an holy life,  
 T. 1. p. 69.  
 Vsury, what T. 1. p. 40. how al-  
 lowed by our Lawes, *ibid.* why  
 not condemned in the New  
 Testament, *ibid.* &c.

W.

**W**atch, we must watch ouer  
 our life, T. 1. p. 67.  
 Wife, her duty, T. 1. p. 55, 56.  
 her subiection how declared,  
*ibid.*  
 Will, of that Petition, Thy Will  
 be done, T. 1. p. 115. What the  
 will of God is, *ibid.* how done of  
 of us, *ibid.* how of the Angels,  
 T. 1. p. 116. Will and Testa-  
 ment, what, T. 1. p. 139. how  
 many Wils God did make, *ibid.*

three motives to subiect vs to  
 the Will of God, T. 2. p. 48, 49.  
 whose will must be done, T. 2.  
 p. 58. Gods Will opposed by  
 three wills, T. 2. p. 59, 60. what  
 will of God must be done, T. 2.  
 p. 62. foure speciall Wils that  
 God requires in his Word, T. 2.  
 p. 63, 64. In what manner wee  
 must doe the will of God, T. 2.  
 p. 65. Why Christ fetcheth a  
 patterne from heauen for doing  
 his wil, T. 2. p. 66.  
 Wisedome, wherein Gods wise-  
 dome appeareth, T. 1. p. 3 spiri-  
 tuall wisdome, wherein con-  
 sisting, T. 1. p. 28  
 Witches, running to such, repro-  
 ued, T. 2. p. 81.  
 Word, what it is, T. 1. p. 8. how  
 we may know the Scriptures to  
 be the Word of God. *ibid.*

*The end of the Table.*



# SMITHS GROUNDS of Religion.

---

Question.

*Hy was man made?*

*Answer.* To serue God, *Pro. 16. 4.*

*Acts 17. 27.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That our first, and chiefeſt care must bee to serue God, *Matt. 6. 33.*

*Pro 4. 7.*

*Q. Whom doſh this Doctrin meeete withall?*

*A.* First with thoſe that thinke it enough to liue ciuilly and honeſtly in the world, hauing no loue to Religion no care of ſeruing God.

Secondly, it meeteth with thoſe; who though they haue ſome care of it; yet make it not their firſt and chiefeſt care, but let euery worldly buſineſſe take place before it.

*Q. How doe wee know there is a God?*

*God.*

*A.* Firſt, by the Scriptures. Secondly by the light of Reaſon.

*Q. What bee the reaſons?*

*A.* The firſt is drawne from the Workes of God: The ſecond

cond is taken from the Testimonie of our owne Conscience.

*Q. What is the first?*

*A.* When wee see a faire and a goodly Tower, though we saw not the workman when he built it, yet wee easily conceiue that there was some Architect that framed it, and set it vp; So when wee see the glorious frame of *Heauen*, and *Earth*, wee easily conceiue, that there is a God who made it, though wee see him not.

*Q. What is the second?*

*A.* When as a man hath committed any horrible fact as murder, theft, blasphemie, and the like; Though he hide it from men, yet hee feelles (then especially when he is wakened vp with some iudgement) continuall gripings and gnawings, and fearefull terrors in his heart, which is nothing else, but a secret guiltinesse, and a close feeling, that there is a God, who will reuenge it.

*Q. What is God?*

*A.* God is a Spirit, or a spirituall substance, hauing his being of himselfe, *Iohn 4.24.*

*Q. What gather wee of this that God is a Spirit?*

*A.* That they that conceiue God to be like an old man sitting in heauen, worship an horrible Idol in stead of the true God, *Luke 24.39. Numbers 23.19.*

*Q. What say you then of picturing God in glasse windowes to worship?*

*A.* It is one of the abominations in Poperie, cleereley condemned by the Lord, *Dent. 4.14.15. Rom. 1.23.*

*Q. Why is God said to haue his Being of himselfe?*

*A.* Because all that wee haue, we haue from God, but whatsoever God hath, hee hath of none, but of himselfe alone, *Heb 1.3.*

*Q. How are wee to conceiue of God?*

*A.* By his properties, That God is a Diuine power. First most *Mightie*. Secondly most *Wise*. Thirdly most *Iust*. Fourthly most *Mercifull*, And fifthly *Infinite*.

*Q. Wherein appeareth the great might and power of God?*

*A.* First in making the world of nothing, all the world being not able to make one silly flie. Secondly, in vpholding it now



5622. yeares ; Whereas Iron houses that men make will moulder away in many little.

Thirdly, in conuerting the soule of a sinner, it being a harder matter, then to make the world : For in creating the world , the Lord found no resistance, nothing that stood vp against him to hinder his worke, but in conuerting the soule of a sinner the Lord findes a resistance, men labouring to hinder his worke in them, and opposing themselves against it, *Ephes. 1. 19.*

*Q. What use may wee make of this Propertie ?*

*A.* First, that seeing wee be glad to get the fauour of mightie men, wee be more careful to get the Lords fauour, who is mightier, then they all, *Psal. 20. 7.*

Secondly, that wee faint not in any trouble, seeing God is most mightie that takes our part ; For no man is so poore, but God by his power can make him rich ; No man is so sicke , but God by his power can make him whole: No man is so weake, but God by his power can make him strong, *Heb. 13. 6.*

Thirdly, that wee feare to displease him, who is able to doe vs more harne, then all the men in all the world can doe, *Luk. 12. 5.*

*Q. What is the second Propertie of God?*

*A.* Hee is most Wise.

*Q. Wherein appeareth the Wisedome of God?*

*A.* In two things principally. First, In framing the world so wisely ; that men and Angels may wonder at it : If the *Sunne* had been set lower, it would haue burnt vs; if higher, the beames of it with such comfort would not haue reached vnto vs. If all had bin *Summer*, heate would haue parched vs. If all had beene *Winter* cold would haue killed vs. If all had beene *Day*, many a miser would haue killed vp himselfe, and his seruants and his cattell with too much working, many an angry man would haue killed himselfe with Fretting.

Secondly, In ordering the things of this world with such most excellent wisedome surpassing all admiration. For some things wee may buy, as Meate, Drinke, and cloathes ; And some things againe wee cannot buy, when wee haue meate, wee cannot buy a good stomacke to our meate ; When wee haue Corne, wee cannot buy seasonable weather to sowe our corne, most wisely God hath layd vp some part of euery blessing with himselfe,

and retained it, as it were in his owne hand, that men might bee  
 ,, driuen thereby more often to resort vnto him. For if men  
 ,, might haue all things here below ; They would neuer goe so  
 ,, farre as Heauen to fetch any thing thence.

*Q. What vse may wee make of this Property ?*

*A.* To rest contented with that portion, that God giues vs,  
 with that weather, which God sends vs, with those losses, and  
 troubles, that God brings vpon vs. God is wiser then the wisest  
 of vs, and therefore knowes alwayes what is fittest for vs, And  
 therefore to thinke, when God sends vs sicknesse, that health were  
 better ; when God takes away our children, it were better to haue  
 them still ; It is the folly of our hearts to make our selues wiser  
 then God.

*Q. What is the third Propertie of God ?*

*A.* Hee is most *Iust*.

*Q. Wherein appeareth the Iustice of God ?*

*A.* In blessing the goodly, and punishing the wicked.

*Q. How stands it then with Iustice, that the godly are com-  
 monly in worst state ?*

*A.* Very well, for though they haue but little, yet they haue  
 more contentment, and more ioy in that little, then the wicked  
 haue in all their plenty, *Psal.* 37. 16.

Secondly, though they haue but little, yet God giues them a  
 true, and an holy vse of it : they spend, and vse that little well,  
*Esay* 23. 18.

Thirdly, that little they haue is a pledge and a pawne, that  
 God hath greater things reserued for them : As a man is put in  
 possession of the whole field by receiuing a little Turfe in his  
 hand, *Prou.* 13. 9.

Fourthly, that they want outwardly, they haue inwardly,  
*Psalme* 45. 13. Though they be not rich in the purse, yet they  
 are rich in Faith, *James* 2. 5. Though they haue not gold, yet they  
 haue that which is better then gold, *Iob* 28. 15. 16. *1. Pet.* 1. 7.

Fifthly, that which God is behinde with them in this world, shall  
 be paid them with vantage in the world to come, *Mat.* 19. 28.

*Q. What vse may wee make of this Propertie ?*

*A.* That seeing all our sinnes were punished in Christ, they  
 cannot in iustice be punished in our selues againe eternally, and  
 there-

therefore all they stand fully discharged before the Iudgement seate of God, who by a true & a liuely faith haue receiued Christ. For as when the Surety hath answered the debt, it cannot in any right be demanded of the debtor againe: So seeing Christ hath discharged for our sinnes, we ought not in any equiue to be charged with them, *Esay 53.5.*

*Q Why then are the godly punished when they sinne?*

*A.* They are punished not in Iudgement, but in Mercie to weaken the strength of sinne, and to keepe vnder the rebellion of their nature, which still dwelleth in them, *Psal. 119.71.*

*Q What may wee further learne from this Propertie?*

*A.* That God will right wrongs of his children, *2. Theff. 1. 6.7.* And that the wicked haue good cause to hang downe their heads, knowing that God in Iustice for euery sinne will be auenged of them; they must pay tull sweetly for euery oath they sweare, for euery lie they tell, for euery *Sabbath* they mispend, and therefore with trembling hearts they may looke euery houre when the fire will fall from Heauen, that shall burne them, when the great Iudge shall appeare in the cloudes, who will condemne them, *Prou. 11.21.*

*Q What is the fourth Propertie of God?*

*A.* Hee is most Mercifull.

*Q Wherein appeareth the mercie of God?*

*A.* First in making vs *Men*, when hee might haue made vs *Beasts*; In making vs *wise*, when hee might haue made vs *stark* fooles; In giuing vs *limbes*, when he might haue made vs *lame*; In giuing vs *sight*, when he might haue made vs *blinde*;

Sccondly, in prouiding things needfull for vs. When wee are sicke, herbes to heale vs: when wee are cold, fire to warme vs: when wee are hungry, meate to feede vs: when wee are naked, wooll to cloathe vs. And the more to commend his Mercies, hee prouides vs of all these things, when wee are his greatest enemies. No man will doe so much for his friend, as God doth for his foes. Wee came into the world with neuer a penny in our Purse, with neuer a sheate in our Barnes, with neuer a sheepe in our folds, with neuer a Coate on our backe, and yet the Lord hath filled our liues with great abundance.

Thirdly, in sparing of our sinnes, and that diuersly. First, in



hiding many of our sinnes from the eyes of the world : For if the world knew as much by vs as God knowes, the best man that liues would blush to shew his face.

Secondly, in giuing vs a time to repent ; for if God should damne euery sinner so soone as hee sinnes against him, wofull were our case, for none would be saued : it is Gods mercy, that wee liue and breathe vpon the *Earth*, being guiltie of so many rebellious mutinies, and treasons against our heauenly King, as *Jeremiah* saith, *Lament.* 3. 22.

Thirdly, in vsing all meanes to draw vs to repentance like one that would gladly vndoe a doore ; he tries key after key, till he hath tryed euery key in his bunch, So God hath tryed by Mercy, and tryed by Iudgement ; he hath tryed by pouertie, and tryed by plenty, because he would gladly by some meanes bring vs to him, *Esay* 5. 4. As when a great fish is caught vpon the hooke, the fish pulls and the man pulls, and the fish pulls againe. So God and the sinfull soule lie wrestling together, the soule drawes to *Hell*, and God pulls to *Heauen*, so faine God would haue vs, who care too little to be saued of him.

*Q. What use may wee make of this Propertie ?*

*A.* First, that men haue good cause to loue God, seeing hee doth more for them then the dearest friend in the world will do ; If we should iniure your friend but halfe so much, as we iniure God, he would soone cast vs off, *Psal.* 27. 10.

Secondly, they doe the Lord of Heauen great wrong who pray to the *Virgin Mary*, or to any of the *Saints*, as if they were more fauourably inclined to *Mercie* then the Lord, *Psal.* 50. 15.

*Q. What is the last Propertie of God ?*

*A.* Hee is *Infinite*.

*Wherein appeareth the infinitenesse of God ?*

*A.* In two things } First, in respect of Time. }  
                              } Secondly, in respect of Place. }

In respect of Time ; because hee is euerlasting without beginning, and without end, beyond all time, *Esay* 51. 5.

In respect of place ; because he filleth all places with his presence, *Psalms* 139. 7. 8.

*Qu. What use doe wee make of this Propertie ?*

*A.* First, to walke with feare and reuerence all our daies, because

cause God is an eye-witnesse of all we doe, or say, and therefore wee ought to walke with as great shamefacednesse, and bashfulness before him, as before the greatest Prince or power in the world, *Prou. 15. 11.*

Secondly, not to be dismayed in any trouble, because God is euer at hand to take our part; As a childe will not care for the seruants, so long as hee is in his fathers presence, *Psal. 23. 4.*

Thirdly, that the diuine Nature ought rather with reuerence to be adored, then curiously to be searched, for seeing God is infinite in all his nature; so mightie that none can conceiue how mightie he is, so wise that all the wits in the world cannot tell how wise he is; Wee are no more able to comprehend his excellent Nature, then wee are to graspe the Mountaines in our armes, or to span the broadest of the Sea with our fingers, *1. Tim. 6. 16.*

Qu. *How many persons be there in the Godhead?*

Godhead.

A. Three, the Father, the Sonne, and the holy Ghost.

Qu. *Is it needfull for vs to know the distinction of the Persons?*

A. Very needfull, for the Turkes and the Jewes confesse one God, but because they denie the distinction of the Persons, they neither acknowledge the Sonne of God their Redeemer, nor the holy Ghost their Sanctifier.

Secondly, the Maiestie of God is vnsearchable, and cannot be apprehended, but as it commeth forth, and reueales it selfe in the Person of the Sonne, and therefore they that know not the Sonne of God, they in very deed know not God, *Iohn 1. 18. 1. Ioh. 2. 23.*

Qu. *What is the Father?*

A. The Father is that Person in the Godhead, who begetteth the Sonne, *Psal. 2. 7.*

Qu. *What is the Sonne?*

A. The Sonne is that person, who is begotten of the Father, *Iohn 1. 14.*

Qu. *What is the Holy Ghost?*

A. The Holy Ghost is that Person, who proceedeth from them, both from the Father and the Sonne, *Iohn 15. 26. Gal. 4. 6.*

Qu. *Was not the Father before the Sonne?*

A. The Sonne is euerlasting as well as the Father, for the Sonne is the Wisdome of the Father, and therefore as wee cannot say, there was any time when God was without wisdom: So

wet cannot say there was any time, when God was without a Sonne, *Pro. 8. 23.*

*Qu. Are there not three Gods as there are three Persons?*

*A.* No. for all the three Persons, are but one and the selfe-same God; so that as the Root, and the Body, and branches of a tree, are all but one tree; So the Father, the Sonne, and the Holy Ghost are all but one God, and therefore they that conceiue, the three Persons to be so distinct, as threemen are; they entertaine a false conceite of the liuing God, *Cor. 8. 4.*

*Qu. What use may wee make of this?*

*A.* That whosoever worshipping one of the diuine Persons, worshipping them all, because they are all but one and the selfe-same God; And therefore men may not thinke when they pray to one of the diuine Persons, the other is passed by, but hee that honoureth one, honoureth all, and hee that prayeth to one, prayeth to all, *Iohn 5. 23.*

*Qu. How must wee serue God?*

*A.* According to his Word, not after our fancies, but as God himselfe will be serued, *Dent. 12. 32.*

*Qu. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That all will-worship brought in by men without warrant of the Word of God, is to be condemned, *Mark. 17. 17.*

*Qu. What is the word of God?*

Word of God.

*A.* That which is contained in the holy Scriptures in the Bookes of the old and new Testament, there God speakes vnto vs, and breakes his minde familiarly, how and in what sort hee will be serued of vs, *2. Tim. 3. 16.*

*Qu. What use may wee make of this?*

*A.* To remember, that as oft as the Bible appeareth, the blessed mouth of God is open to instruct vs, and that they which regard not the Scriptures, regard not the voyce of God, and they that suffer the Bible to lye clasped and shut in their houses, doe as it were seale vp the mouth of God that hee may not speake vnto them.

*Qu. How know wee that the Scriptures are the word of God?*

*A.* By the power of them. for God alone is able to conuert the soule of a sinner, and to beget faith, and therefore seeing the preaching of the Scriptures hath begotten faith in vs, and con-

uerted



uerred vs vnto God, wee must needes confesse, euen from our owne feeling, that the Scriptures are the very arme and power of God.

Qu. *Why are they termed the old and new Testament?*

A. Because as a man by his Will and Testament disposeth those lands and goods which he hath: So God in the Scriptures, hath bequeathed many blessings, as it were a number of legacies to the sonnes of men.

Qu. *What did God bequeath in the Old Testament?*

A. Saluation and eternall Peace to those that fulfill the Law; Miseric and hell, and eternall death to those that breake the Law, *Deut. 28. 15.*

Qu. *What did God bequeath in the New Testament?*

A. Saluation and eternall Peace to those that belecue in Christ, and contrariwise; Condemnation and Eternall death to those that beleue not in him: By the Old Testament none inherite, but those that fulfill the Law. By the New Testament, all those inherite, who beleue in Christ, *M. ark 16. 16.*

Qu. *Are all the Bookes in the Bible to be receiued alike?*

A. No, for the Apocryphall, are no further to bee receiued, then they consent with the Canonickall bookes, or with sound reason.

Qu. *What Bookes are Canonickall?*

A. All in the New Testament, and so many in the Old as were written by *Moses*, or any of the Prophets, so that all are Canonickall from *Genesis* to *Malachy* who was the last Prophet.

Qu. *Why are they called Canonickall?*

A. Because they are the rule to direct our faith, and our life; for *Canon* in Greek signifieth a *Rule*, or a square, which a Mason, or a Carpenter useth for his direction in his worke; So that as they worke all by rule and line, so wee must square out both our Faith and our life by these holy Bookes.

Q. *What Bookes are Apocryphall?*

A. All in the Old Testament, that were written after the time of the Prophets, as the first of *Esdras*, and the second of *Tobith*, *Iudeth*, *Wisdome*, *Ecclesiasticus*, or *Iesus Sirach*, certaine peeces of *Esther*, and *Daniel*, with the *Prayer of Manasses*, the 1. of *Maccabees*, and the second.

Q. *Why*

*Q. Why are not these Canonick as well as the rest.*

*A.* Because they were not written by *Moses*, or the Prophets, who were the penne-men of the Holy Ghost, but by other godly men, who hauing not so great a measure of the Spirit, could not write all things so heauenly, and so purely as the Prophets did.

*Q. Why are they called Apocryphall?*

*A.* Because they come not forth with publike authoritie from God, but crept in closely, and by stealth into the Church: for *Apocryphall* in Greeke signifieth a thing lurking in a hole or a corner, to shew that these Bookes are not nobly borne; And therefore howsoeuer they may be profitable, yet they ought not to speake with equall authoritie in the congregation of the Lord, *Dent. 23. 2.*

*Q. Had wee not need of good warrant to strike off so many Bookes from the Canon?*

*A.* So wee haue Christ himselfe, who interpreting all the Scriptures, interpreted no more but *Moses* and the Prophets. And therefore seeing these Bookes of *Tobith*, *Iudeth* and the rest, belong neither to *Moses*, nor the Prophets, as being written after their time. It is manifest that our Sauour Christ, hath shut them out from the Canon of the Scriptures, *Luke 24. 27.*

*Q. What is the drift and scope of all the Scriptures?*

Scriptures.

*A.* To teach vs how to be saued, and to chalke out the way that leadeth vnto true happinesse, and eternall life, *2. Tim. 3. 15. Iohn 20. 31.*

*Q. How may a man be saued?*

Saluation.

*A.* There are three things required of him that will be saued. First, he must know and bee perswaded of his owne miserable estate, by nature, and be humbled for it.

Secondly, hee must bee perswaded of his happie estate in Christ.

Thirdly, he must practise that godly and Christian kinde of life, which euery one is commanded to liue, that beleeueth in Christ.

*Q. What is the first thing required of him that will be saued?*

*A.* Hee must know his miserable estate in himselfe, how wretched and how wofull hee were if God should not looke vpon

vpon him with fauour, and mercie in the face of Christ.

*Q. Why is it needfull to know our miserable estate?*

*A.* Because the sight of it will send vs more speedily to Christ. Secondly, it will make vs set greater price on the benefit, which we haue by him.

*Q. How doth this appeare?*

*A.* For when we see, how deeply we are indebted, and endangered to God, that it is no dribling summe that we owe him, but so huge a matter, that neither wee, nor all the friends we haue, are able to discharge it; This will make vs seeke more carefully to Christ to discharge it for vs, and offer occasion to thinke more highly of him, who hath brought vs a full discharge for so great a debt.

*Q. What is our Estate in our selues?*

*A.* Wee are dead in sinnes, like a Corse, that is layed out, and waites but the buriall, to be cast into the graue.

*Q. How are wee falne into this estate?*

*Fall.*

*A.* Two wayes, } Partly by *Adams* sinnes, }  
And partly by our owne sinnes. }

*Sinns.*

*Q. What was Adams sinne?*

*A.* The eating of the forbidden fruit, whereby he wrapt vp himselfe, and all his Posteritie in the wrath of God, as wee see a Noble man by committing Treason, not onely hurts himselfe, but stains his blood, & doth hurt to his children too, *Rom. 5. 12.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That he that will stand off from Christ, had need haue a good purse, when he shall not onely pay that which himselfe owes, but that also wherein *Adam* his father was indebted to God.

*Q. What is our owne sinne?*

*Our sinfull state.*

*A.* Our owne sinne } 1. Originall Sinne, } *Rom. 5. 24.*  
is of two sorts, } 2. Actuell sinne, }

*Q. What is originall sinne?*

*A.* Originall sinne is that backwardnesse, and vntowardnesse of our nature, whereby we stand not indifferently affected, but vtter enemies to all the duties of obedience, and holinesse required of vs, *Rom. 7. 23.*

*Q. In what part is originall sinne?*

*A. It*



*A.* It hath stricken like a poyson through all our parts, so that they are all bent against God like a sort of Rebels, that haue put themselues in armes against their King, *Gal. 5. 27.*

*Qu.* How is the Understanding corrupted?

*A.* It is blinde and ignorant in the things of God, and therefore euen they that are wise and wittie in the matters of the world, in the matters of God are of no capacitie, and of no conceite, *1. Cor. 2. 14.*

*Q.* How is the will corrupted?

*A.* It onely willeth and lusteth after euill, like a sicke man, that cares not for wholsome meate, but his stomacke onely stands to supperfauce, and that which is naught, *Iames 4. 5.*

*Q.* What is Actuall sinne?

*A.* That which ariseth from the corruption of our nature, like sparkes from a Furnace, *Galat. 5. 19.*

*Q.* How many sorts are there of it?

*A.* Three sorts, { 1. Euill thoughts in the minde.  
2. Euill desires in the heart.  
3. Euill words and workes arising thence,  
*Mash. 15. 19.*

*Q.* What gather wee of this?

*A.* That we are not dead in some one sinne, but are dead in many sinnes, the soule being wounded in euery part, and hauing bled as it were to death at euery ioynt.

*Qu.* What is the miserie of this estate?

*A.* Exceeding great, partly in respect of sinne it selfe, and partly in respect of the punishment of sinne, *Rom. 7. 24.*

*Qu.* What is the miserie of this state in respect of sinne?

*A.* First, that men grow worse and worse in this estate, euen as a dead man, the longer hee lies aboue ground, the more he fenteth; So they that are dead in sinne, the longer they liue, the more sinfull they are, as yeares increase, so wickednelle and sinne is increased with them, *2. Tim. 3. 13.*

Secondly, That men liue in it without any feeling and trouble of minde; euen as a dead man, though he fents and sauiours, that no man can abide him; yet hee smells it not himselfe, and therefore is neuer grieved nor troubled for it. So they that be dead in sinne, though they be loathsome both to God and man, yet they haue

haue no feeling of their bad estate, and therefore they are neuer vexed nor grieved for it, *Rev. 3. 17.*

Thirdly, that men seeke not to come out of it, euen as a dead man will neuer stirre his foote, nor so much as becken with his finger for one to helpe him, and giue him life. So they that are dead in sinne, are well content to lye still in that estate, and will not vse the least meanes for the recouering of themselves, *Mat. 4. 16.*

Fourthly, that they profite nothing by all the meanes that should doe them good; let the Lord ring his iudgements in their eares, yet they heare no more, then a dead man heares: let him set vp neuer so many shining lights in the Church, yet they see no more then a dead man sees: they taste no more sometimes in the word, then a dead man doth in his meate, *Math. 13. 14.*

*Q. What is our misery in regard of the punishment of sinne?*

*A.* We are subiect to the curse of God, both in this life, and in the life to come, *Gal. 3. 10.*

*Qu. What is the curse of God in this life?*

*¶* Partly on our selues.

*A.* It is of two sorts, *¶* And partly on the things that belong to vs.

*Qu. What is the curse of God on our selues?*

*A.* It is the losse of our happy estate: For whereas before we were the heires of God, and all his blessings belonged vnto vs; now wee haue no right, nor interest in any of them. As a dead man loseth all that his father by will had bequeathed him.

Secondly, the calamities, that are false vpon vs; on our bodies; riches, sicknesse, and death it selfe: on our soules, feare, sorrow and despaire.

*Qu. What is the curse of God on the things that belong vnto vs?*

*A.* In our Goods, hinderances and losses. In our Name, infamie and reproach. In our children, seruants, parents, and friends, infinite miseries that may grieve vs.

*Qu. What is the Curse of God in the life to come?*

*A.* Eternall damnation both of body and soule in hell fire; Whereas the state of the wicked is much more miserable then the state of a dogge, or a toade; For when they die all their miseries end,

end, but when the wicked dye, then their greatest miserie begins,  
*Math. 25. 41.*

*Q. What will the sight of our miserable estate worke in vs?*

*A.* In those that belong to God, it will worke true humiliation and sorrow for their sinnes. For when they shall see themselves so many wayes guiltie of the wrath of God; This will melt them into teares, and turne their ioyes into heauynesse, and all their mirth into mourning, *Acts 2. 37.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they, who haue not truely sorrowed for their sinnes, nor wept as it were at the feet of Iesus in remembrance of them, can finde no sound comfort, nor peace in Christ, *Mat. 21. 28.*

*Q. What are the meanes to further and helpe on this sorrow for sinne?*

Sorrow for  
sinne.

*A.* First to consider, that we, and all we, so long as we liue in sinne, are subiect to the Curse of God, cursed in our selues, and cursed in our friends, cursed in our bodies, and cursed in our soules, *Dent. 28. 16. 17.*

Secondly, to consider that wee are subiect to all the curses of God: And therefore if some one bee so heauie and intolerable, that it makes vs euen weary of our liues; How will it be with vs, when the whole wrath of God shall be poured out vpon vs, *Dent. 28. 45.*

Thirdly, to consider that we are subiect to the curse of God, continually, sleeping and wakiug, riding and going, working and playing, liuing and dying, in this life, and in the life to come, *Dent. 28. 46. 47.*

Fourthly, to consider that many thousands lie Damned in Hell for those sinnes, wherein we liue. *Sodom* is in hell for pride, and yet we are proud. The *Glutton* for abusing his wealth, and yet we abuse it. *Corazin*, because they profited not by the Gospel, and yet we profit not by it, *Iude 7. verse.*

Fifthly, to consider our mortalitie, and the vncertaintie of our life, that we know not how soone we shall die, and if wee die in this sort, we goe damned to hell, *Luk. 12. 20.*

Sixtly, to consider, that there is no meanes to shift away from the iudgement of God, but howsoeuer they seeme to sleepe for a while: yet they will awake, and ouertake vs at the last, *Num. 32. 13. 2. Pet. 2. 6.*

Seuenthly,



*Q. What is Faith?*

*A.* Faith is a sure perswasion of the heart, that all our sinnes are pardoned in Christ, and that God by meanes of his death is reconciled, and become fauourable to our soules, *1.Ioh.5.11.*

*Qu. How many kindes of faith are there?*

*A.* Two kindes,  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{An Historicall faith,} \\ \text{And a Iustifying faith,} \end{array} \right\}$

*Q. What is Historicall faith?*

*A.* The Historicall faith, is that, whereby a man beleeueth in generall, there is a God, and that there is saluation in Christ, but for his life, hee cannot apply any of these things particularly to any comfort of himselfe, this faith may be in the Reprobates and in the diuels, *James 2.19.*

*Q. What is Iustifying faith?*

*A.* The Iustifying faith is that whereby a man beleeueth, not onely that there is a God; but, in particular, that hee is his God. Not onely, that Christ is a Saviour; but in particular, his Saviour, as *Thomas* said in *Iohn 20.28.* *Thou art my God, and my Lord,* And as *Paul* also saith to the *Galat.2.20.* *I liue by faith in the Sonne of God who hath loued mee, and giuen himselfe for mee.*

*Q. How is it declared, that speciall Faith is needfull?*

*A.* If a man be impleaded for debt, it shall not be enough to say, such a man at such a time payd a great summe of money for other men, but he must bring his Euidence that hee was one of those for whom he payd it. So it is not enough to say, that Christ dyed for sinne, vnlesse thou be able to shew thy Euidence, euen speciall faith, that Christ dyed for thy sinne.

*Q. What is the meanes to beget Faith?*

*A.* The outward most vsuall meanes, whereby faith is wrought in vs, is the preaching of the word, *Rom.10.17.*

*Qu. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they that absent themselues from the preaching of the word, or marke it not when they bee present, deprive themselves of the meanes of Faith, and so consequently of all the happinesse, that comes by Christ.

*Qu. What is the inward meanes?*

*A.* The working of the Spirit of God, who openeth the heart

to beleue those things that are preached, *Acts 16. 14.*

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That faith is not of our selues, but the gift of God, and therefore we stand wholly beholden to God for our saluation, who hath giuen vs Christ, and also the hand of Faith to receiue him, *Ephes. 2. 8.*

*Q. Must wee rest here, when faith is begotten in vs?*

*A.* We must labour by all meanes to strengthen and increase our faith, and daily to grow into a more sweet feeling of the loue of God in Christ, *Rom. 1. 17.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That those men who neglect the ordinarie meanes to increase faith, as preaching, praying, reading, meditating, the Sacraments and the like, haue no true sauing faith: Because sauing faith continually growes, and increaseth in those that haue it.

*Q. What are the fruites and benefits of Faith?*

*Fruit of  
Faith.*

*A.* We inioy wonderfull liberties, and priuiledges thereby. First, we are iustified. Secondly, we are adopted and made the sonnes of God. Thirdly, we are sanctified by faith in Christ.

*Q. How are we iustified by Faith?*

*Iustification.*

*A.* In that Christ, hauing cleerly discharged for all our sins, wee know and are assured vpon the promise and the word of God, that though we sinne daily, and there be infinite matters of condemnation in vs: yet wee shall not bee challenged, nor impleaded for any of our sinnes, but shall be accepted as iust, and righteous for the obedience of Christ, *Ro. 8. 33.*

*Q. How is this declared?*

*A.* By a similitude; For no suite in law holdeth against the wife, so long as her husband liues; but if the wife oweth any thing, her husband must answer for it: Euen so when our soules by true faith are espoused and married vnto Iesus Christ, if the Deuill lay any thing against vs, hee cannot bring his Action against vs, but against Christ our head and husband, who hath vndertaken to answer for vs.

*Q. What is the first fruit of Iustification?*

*A.* The first fruit, is *Peace of Conscience.* For whereas before we had a hell in our hearts, and our conscience was euer accusing vs, and arraigning vs for our sinnes, now we haue rest and peace with

with God, and as it were a heauen in our hearts by the assurance which wee haue in the blood of Christ, that it hath fully and cleerely discharged vs of all our sinnes, *Rom. 5. 1.*

*Q. What is the second fruit of Iustification?*

*A.* It is *ioy in the holy Ghost*, whereby a man reioyceth with vnspeakable gladnesse for the great fauour, and mercy of God in Christ, *Rom. 5. 2.*

*Q. What is the third fruit of Iustification?*

*A.* The third fruit is reioycing in troubles; for all the troubles of the Godly are the blessings of God, and are sent for their good, and therefore vnlesse they will grieve at Gods blessings, and the furtherance of their owne good, they cannot grieve at any of the troubles, which God in fauour and mercy brings vpon them, *Rom. 5. 3.*

*Qu. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That when the will of God is so, it is better for vs to lose our wealth, then to haue our wealth: To lose our children, then to haue our children; to part with our liberties, then to inioy them, and therefore we ought to rest with comfort in whatsoeuer it shall please God to bring vpon vs, *Rom. 5. 4.*

*Qu. What is the fourth fruit of Iustification?*

*A.* Sensible feeling of the loue of God; for the godly shall euen sensibly perceiue, that they are in good regard, and in good account with the Lord, in that hee takes not euery occasion to breake off, and to be angerie with them, but passeth by many iniuries, and many wrongs that are done against him, *Rom. 5. 5.*

*Q. What is the second benefite we receiue by faith in Christ?*

*A.* We are daily Adopted and made the sonnes of God, *Adoption. Gal. 3. 26.*

*Q. How are wee made the sonnes of God by faith?*

*A.* By faith we are made one with Christ, members of his body, flesh of his flesh, and bone of his bone, And therefore, seeing Christ is the Sonne of God, we who are one with Christ, must needs bee the sonnes of God; for being members, and parts of Christ, we haue good right and interest in all the honour, that ariseth vnto our Head, *Ephes. 5. 30.*

*Q. What are the fruits of our Adoption?*

*Fruites of Adoption.*

*A.* We are thereby made the heires of God, and haue all his



royalties, and the right of his Crowne, and kingdome made o<sup>u</sup>er to vs, so that if God be most blessed, then wee shall bee most blessed, who must sit downe in the Throne; and in the kingdome with him, *Rom. 8. 17.*

*Qu. How stands this with the poore, and base estate of Gods children here?*

*A.* Very well; for they are yet vnder age, and their lands are not yet come into their hands, and therefore no maruell, if in this their minoritie, they differ nothing from Seruants, though they be Lords of all, *Gal. 4. 1.*

*Qu. What may wee learne of this?*

*A.* To passe our dayes with comfort, remembring, that how hard soeuer our state bee in this world: yet we are the heires of a great King, and the day will shortly come, when wee shall be fetched home with honour to endlesse happinesse in our Fathers house.

*Q. What is the second fruit of our Adoption?*

*A.* Wee are thereby put in assurance of eternall life: For the Sonne, saith Christ in *John 8. 35.* abideth in the house for euer, and therefore if wee be the sonnes of God, wee are sure that wee shall abide with him for euer. A father will not cast his children out of doores for euery fault; No more will God his children for euery sinne, *Psal. 89. 30.*

*Q. How is this further declared?*

*A.* By the care a father hath of his childrens good. For as a father will bend all his wit and wisdom to preferre his children, and will put by as much as hee can those lets and hindrances, which may stop them from it: So God bearing a fatherly affection to his children, will imploy the vtermost of his wisdom, and his skill to saue them. And therefore, vnlesse wee will say, God hath not wisdom, or skill enough to doe it, we must needs confesse, that we shall be saued, *2. Tim. 1. 12.*

*Q. What is the third fruit of our Adoption?*

*A.* Wee grow into such confidence of God, that wee dare trust him with our whole estate; and therefore laying downe our liues and our liberties, and all we possesse, at his holy feet, wee are well content, he dispose of vs, and of all we haue according to his owne will, *2. Sam. 15. 26.*

*Q. What*

*Q What is the fourth fruit of our Adoption?*

*A.* Wee are assured thereby, that God careth for vs, and watcheth ouer vs, and delighteth to doe vs good, for being our Father, we may assure our selues we shall finde him a Father euen most tenderly and most fatherly affected to doe vs good: So that as a father is carking and caring for his children when his children are fast asleepe: So God cares more for vs, then wee care for our selues, and many times thinkes of our good, when wee our selues are careless of it, *Deut. 8 5. 1. Pet. 5. 7.*

*Q How is this further declared?*

*A.* A Kings childe shall not be suffered to goe abroad without his guard: So without a Guard of heauenly Angels, we stirre not a foot: alwayes these heauenly warriors are attending and waiting on vs, *Psal. 91. 11, 12.*

*Q What is the fift fruit of our Adoption?*

*A.* We may pray with boldnesse and assurance, that we shall be heard: For as a childe will moane himselfe to his father, thinking that if any will helpe him, his owne father will doe it: So we may boldly poure forth all our complaints into the lappe of God with assurance, that if any man heare vs, hee will (being our Father) be most ready to heare, and to helpe vs, *1 John 5. 14.*

*Q What is the sixt fruit of our Adoption?*

*A.* Wee know that God will accept our poore seruice, and our weake obedience at our hands. For euen as a father had rather heare his little childe stammer, then some others speak plainly; So God is more pleased with the weake prayers, and the small obedience of his children, then with all the toyles, and labours of the wicked, *Heb. 11. 4.*

*Qu. What is the third benefite wee receiue by faith in Christ?*

*A.* Sanctification, whereby we are freed from the Bondage of sinne, and by little and little enabled through the spirit of Christ dwelling in vs, to loue that which is good, and to walke in it, *1. Cor. 6. 11.* *Sanctification.*

*Qu. How are we sanctified by Faith?*

*A.* Faith makes vs members of Christ, and Christ is the head, distills Life and Grace, and holinesse into all his parts: So that they who are Christs, must needs partake of the

Spirit and life of Christ, Ephes. 4. 16.

Qu. *How is this further declared?*

A. As a wilde Oliue being ingrafted into a naturall, and a kinde stocke, loseth his wilde nature, and partaketh of the stocke: So we being once ingrafted into Christ, feele our naturall corruption by little and little to abate, and the sanctifying grace of Christ to poure forth it selfe into vs, and partaketh of the goodnells of the stocke.

Qu. *What gather we of this?*

A. That they which liue wickedly and loosely, howsoeuer they professe; yet they haue indeed no part of, nor portion in Christ, Ephes. 5. 5.

Fruites of  
Sanctification.

Qu. *What are the fruities of Sanctification?*

A. First spirituall freedome and libertie, from the enbondagement of sinne; For whereas before, the Deuill and Sinne did so possesse vs, that for our liues, we could doe no more, but what he would haue vs. Now we haue willingnesse, and ablenesse through the spirit of Christ to liue holily and righteously in the sight of God, Luke 1. 74-75.

Qu. *What is the second fruit of Sanctification?*

A. Exceeding comfort in doing well, as Christ saith; It is meate and drinke to doe my Fathers will: So it doth vs as much good as our meate, and it makes vs euen glad in our hearts, when we can remember we haue done any thing that pleaseh God, Psal. 119. 14.

Qu. *What is the third fruit of Sanctification?*

A. Deliuerance from many euills, whereinto the wicked and vngodly fall, for whereas the wicked are shamed many times for their wickednesse: As theft, treasons, oppressions, and the like; The godly liuing well, get a good name amongst men, so that they which will not liue like them will speake well of them, Acts 5. 13.

Qu. *What is the last fruit of Sanctification?*

A. A further sealing of our election, and our adoption in Christ. For by nature, wee are wholly giuen to that which is naught: And therefore, if there be any loue of righteousness, or hate of sinne in vs, it is a token that we are regenerated, and so consequently the sonnes of God, Rom. 8. 14. 2. Pet. 1. 10.

Q. *What*



*Qu. What is the third thing required of him that will be saved?*

*A.* Hee that will be saved, must endeavour himselfe to lead a Christian and a godly life, *Heb. 12. 14.*

*Q. What gather we of this?*

*A.* That howsoever men professe; yet vnlesse they labour to refraine, and amend their liues, they shall neuer be saved.

*Qu. Seeing wee are saved by faith onely: How is good life needfull to saluation?* *Godling.*

*A.* Good life is needfull not as the cause of saluation: for wee are saved by the free fauour of God in Christ, but it is needfull as the pathway, that leadeth to saluation: Euen as a friend should giue vs a great deale of Treasure vpon the top of an hill; the treasure were ours by our friends gift, and yet wee should not enioy it, vnlesse we would climbe vp the hill: So heauen and saluation is ours by the gift of Christ, and yet we cannot enioy it, vnlesse by a godly, and a good life, we will walke vnto it, *2. Tim. 1. 9.*

*Qu. Where must wee begin the godly life?*

*A.* First a man must labour to reforme his heart, to bring it out of love with sinne, and to like well of the holy things of God, *Ier. 4. 14.*

*Qu. How is this declared?*

*A.* If a man would make a bad tree good, it is not enough to chop of the branches, and the boughs, vnlesse he change the very nature, and sappe of the tree: So vnlesse the very nature of the heart be changed, and the innermost affection bee altered in it, all our labour in the godly life is but cast away, *2. Cor. 4. 14.*

*Qu. What must a man doe first in reforming his heart?*

*A.* Hee must cleere it of those sinnes and corruptions, that naturally cleaue vnto him: For if the best seed be sown among thornes and briers, it will neuer thriue; So till sinne be weeded out, let vs neuer looke that any good will proue or prosper in the heart, *Ierem. 4. 4.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they which labour after good things, and yet take no paines to weaken their corruptions, and to shake off their sins, shall neuer attaine to a godly life.

*Q. What sinnes must we labour to shake off?*

*A.* All that cleave vnto vs, as the Apostle saith in *2. Cor. 7. 1.* Let vs cleanse our selues from all filthinesse of the flesh, and spirit, and grow vp into full holmesse in the feare of God, *Heb. 12. 1.*

*Q.* What gather we of this?

*A.* That they which haue reformed some one sinne or more, and yet suffer some other to sleepe quietly and possesse them, are short of the truth of the godly life, *1. John 1. 8.*

*Q.* No man is able to free himselfe from euery sinne.

*Sinne.*

*A.* Yet euery man must striue and labour for it, and it must be his griefe that he cannot attaine it. We must not suffer sinne to dwell peaceably, and quietly in our hearts, but wee must euer be warring, and fighting to driue it thence, *2. Cor. 12. 8.*

*Qu.* What are the helps and furtherances hereto?

*A.* First a man must labour to know his owne heart, to grow acquainted with his owne soule, to see the speciall ruines and breaches that be in it: For though we haue some spice, and some grudging of euery sinne: yet euery man hath some one speciall sinne or more, that hurts and pesters him about the rest.

*Darling sinne.*

*Qu.* How shall a man know his speciall sinne?

*A.* Because the deuill will labour mightily to hide it from vs. Therefore some diligence must bee vsed to discouer it. First, a man must marke the course of his life, and see what sinnes he is most tempted with, which sinnes he is least able to resist, what of all other he can hardliest forgoe, and that be it one, or more are master sinnes in him.

Secondly, hee must marke, what sinnes raigne most in the place and in the countrey where he dwells; what sinnes are the chiefe in his kindred, and in those that companie with him. For hardly can a man dwell in *Sodome*, but hee shall carry some smatch of the sinne of *Sodome*, *Gen. 19. 33.*

Thirldy, hee must marke the iudgements of God, that fall vpon him, for God hath engrauen vpon euery iudgement, the name of the sinne for which hee sends it: So that a man in his punishment, may plainly reade his sinne. As *David* sinning in his people, was punished in his people. And *Pharaoh* sinning in drowning the Infants, was drowned himselfe. And therefore, when wee are punished in our goods, let vs thinke wee haue sinned in our goods: When wee are punished in our children, then let

let

let vs thinke we haue sinned in our children, and so in our wiues, in our friends, and the rest.

Fourthly, lastly if these meanes will not worke; it is good to consult with some wise and some deare friend of our state, and intreat him in the loue of God, and our selues, that he will tell vs in truth, what sinnes hee sees vs most prone, and inclined vnto.

*Qu.* What must a man doe for the weakening and killing of his sinnes?

*A.* When a man hath found out his sinnes, then he must get him to the Ministry, and to the Bible, and there marke the spirituall places, that meete with such sinnes; those of all other hee must lay to heart, and be continually musing, and grating on; as if a man be giuen to swearing, let him looke *St. James 5. 12.* If a man bee giuen to lightnesse or the like, let him looke, *Ephes. 5. 5.* Where it is said, no whoremonger, neither any vncleane person, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God; and so euery speciall sinne, a speciall place, *Psal. 119. 11.*

*Killing of sinne.*

*Q.* What gather wee of this?

*A.* That they who either in hearing or reading the words slippe by those places, which make most against them, and strike deepest at their faults, shall neuer attaine to true reformation of their hearts.

*Q.* What is the second helpe to weaken sinne?

*A.* A man must marke what feedes his sinne, where it getteth strength. For as fire is nourished with fiewell: so there is euer somewhat that nourisheth our sinnes: If a man can finde that, and reforme it, hee shall soone weaken the greatest corruption that is with in him. As if companie draw thee to sinne, away with that companie: If feare of displeasure, away with that feare: If hope of commodities, away with that hope, *Math. 5. 29.*

*Q.* What gather wee of this?

*A.* That they, who say they would faine leaue sinne, and yet leaue not such companie, vse such pastimes, such meanes as they know cannot but nourish and increase it in them, doe but deceiue themselves. As if a man would clap drie faggots vpon the fire, and say he doth meane to quench it, when indeed hee kindles it the more.

*Q.* What is the third helpe to weaken sinne?

*A.* A



*A.* A man must cry to heaven, and begge the Lords ayde and his helping hand; as a little childe, if he haue a tough stick, which he cannot breake, runnes to his father with it, that hee may breake it for him: So because we cannot master our sinnes, therefore we must runne to God by prayer, that hee may master them and kill them in vs, *Psal.* 41.4.

*Q.* What gather wee of this?

*A.* That they who purpose and resolute to leaue their sinnes, and yet are not often vpon their knees crauing strength from heaven, and grace to leaue them, shall neuer shake them off.

*Q.* What if these things worke not?

*A.* If these things worke not vpon vs, wee must consider what is the reason, why they doe not worke; either wee doe not vse them so diligently, and so carefully as wee should, or else we haue vsed them but a little while: A man cannot fell a great Oake with one stroke of an Axe, it will aske him many a blowe; So our sinnes being of so great a growth, will not quickly down. It is well if after many labours, and much paines, wee may feeble them begin, *2. Cor.* 12.8. or else the heart may not yet be loosened from some darling corruption, vntill which time all meanes are vneffectuall, *Psal.*

*Q.* What gather wee of this?

*A.* That they who vse these meanes for a spirt, and practise them not continually and wholly, shall neuer get any sound comfort, or profite by them.

*Q.* What is the second thing a man must doe in the reforming of his heart?

*A.* When a man hath weeded out his sinnes, hee must not then giue ouer, but fall to worke a freeth, and labour to plant somewhat in the garden of his soule: as one vice goes out, so he must labour to plant an other vertue in the roome, *Hos.* 10.12.

*Q.* What gather wee of this?

*Q.* That a man must not thinke his conuersion to bee true, vnlesse he bee carried with as great loue to godlinesse, as euer hee was to wickednesse, and be as caretull for good things, as euer he was for euill. And therefore they that are come from Poperie, and stick there, hauing got no iudgement, nor knowledge in the Gospell, doe but deceiue themselves: As they also, who will not openly

openly breake the Sabbath, and yet are not carefull to sanctifie it in the holy duties thereof, *Psal. 27. 27.*

*Q. What are the things wee must first plant in the heart?*

*A.* A loue of God, to delight in him, as in the greatest portion we haue in this world, to rest in him with ioy and contentment, as in our chiefeft good : to set more price on him, then we doe on all the world besides. And therefore hauing such a Iewel, and such a wonderfull treasure of the Lord, wee account all our wants to be nothing, so long as wee want not him : All our losses nothing, so long as we lose not him : All displeasures light, so long as God is not displeased with vs, *Math. 21. 38.*

*Loue of God.*

*Q. Why must we begin at the loue of God?*

*A.* Because the loue of God is the fountaine of all true obedience, and it sendeth forth the carefull Christian to good workes : For louing God, hee will seeke to doe that which God may like of, and will willingly doe nothing that may displease him : Euen as if a man haue a deere friend, hee will not willingly doe any thing that may offend him : but will seeke by all duties to make his loue and his good heart knowne vnto him.

*Q. How may wee bring our hearts in loue with God?*

*A.* By considering what God hath beene to vs, and what we haue beene to him : Wee, the worst of all his creatures, worse then Toades or Snakes, for they sinne not against God, but wee sinne against him : Worse then the Iewes, for they crucified Christ but once, but wee buffet him, and pierce him with our sinnes euery day, worse then any of the damned Ghosts, that lie damned in hell, for they sinned in darknesse, but wee sinne in the light, they hauing but weake means, wee hauing many great helpes to weaken sinne, and yet (mirrour of mercy) none so spared, as we are spared ; none so blessed, as we are blessed ; none so loued, as we are loued of the Lord. And therefore how can wee, but euen burne in loue towards him againe, and make more reckoning of him, then of all the world besides, *Solomons song.*

2.5.

*Q. What is the second thing?*

*A.* The feare of God, to bee more affraid to displease him, then all the Princes and powers in the world. To be more abashed, and more ashamed, when God sees vs sinne, then if all the eyes

*Feare of God.*

eyes in the world were gazing on vs, *Gen. 28. 17.*

*Q. What will this worke in vs?*

*A.* The feare of God will be as a banke, to keepe in the raging lusts of the heart, that they breake not out; Even as the Sea banke beates backe the waues, and breakes the force of them, that they cannot ouerflow, *Ier. 32. 40.*

*Q. How may wee settle the feare of God in our hearts?*

*A.* First, by considering the great power, and the mighty arme of God, that he is more able to doe vs more harme, then all the powers in the world can doe. And therefore if wee feare to displease a Prince who can kill but our bodies; how much more should we feare to displease God, who can damne our soules, *Isay 51. 12. 13.*

Secondly, by perswading our selues, that wee are alwayes in Gods presence, that he euer looks vpon vs with a bright and a shining face; So that we doe nothing but what God sees vs doe; wee speake nothing, but what he heares vs speake. And therefore if a mans pretence would bath vs, how much more should the holy presence of God strike feare, and reuerence into our hearts.

*Q. What is the third thing?*

*A.* Knowledge of the will of God, to vnderstand what is holy, and what is vnholly: what is right, and what is wrong: what is pleasing, and what is displeasing in his sight, *Ephes. 5. 17.*

*Q. What are the parts of this Knowledge?*

*A.* Two { 1. Spirituall Wisedome, } *Coloss. 1. 9.*  
                   { 2. Spirituall vnderstanding, }

spirituall vnderstanding.

*Q. What is spirituall vnderstanding?*

*A.* A generall knowledge, what is to be done, *Prou. 9. 10.*

wis. dome.

*Q. What is spirituall Wis. dome?*

*A.* A particular waighing of the circumstance of time, place, and person, to know what is expedient, *1. Cor. 6. 12.*

*Q. What is the use of our Knowledge?*

*A.* It will bee, as a candle of the soule to light it, and shine vnto it in the wayes of God: For many times wee sinne, when we thinke we doe not sinne; and many times wee would doe well, if we had knowledge & iudgement how to do it, *Eph. 1. 18.*

*Q. What*



*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they which say, they carry as good a minde to religion as the best, and yet take no paines to grow in the knowledge of it, doe but deceiue themselues, *Hos. 4. 6.*

*Q. What is the fourth thing?*

*A.* Obedience to the will of God: to haue our hearts at commandement, so that in any dutie at any time, we can haue it preft and readie for the Lord; So that if God say but loue this, wee can loue it: If God say, beare this, we can beare it: If God say, but leaue this, wee can leaue it. And this not onely, when Gods will and our affection sute together, but euen then, when there is an vtter disagreement betweene them, *Ier. 42. 6.*

*Obedience.*

*Q. How may wee bring our hearts to obedience?*

*A.* First, to consider that God loues vs dearely: And therefore, he will neuer command any thing at our hands, but it shall be for our good, *Ier. 32. 39.*

Secondly, to consider, God is farre wiser then wee, and therefore his course is better then ours, *Psal. 119. 24.*

Thirdly, to consider, we owe our liues and our liberties, and all we haue to God, and therefore when God commands, he commands but his owne, *1. Cor. 6. 19. 20.*

Fourthly, to consider, we shall haue no good successe in our wayes, if wee leaue the Lords, *Hos. 5. 13.*

Fiftly, to consider, that the Lord will not blesse vs in his owne wayes, what vnlikelihood soeuer there be, that it shall not speed, *Psal. 37. 3.*

Sixtly, lastly to consider, that our obedience to God, is the placing of him in his seate of glorie, and as it were, the crowning of him to bee our King: So that to disobey him, is to disclaime, and renounce his dominion ouer vs, *Deut. 26. 17.*

*Q. What is the second generall thing required of vs?*

*A.* Well ordering of the life, that our whole behauiour bee seemely and seasoned with grace, as well when we are in secret, as in the sight of men, *Ephes. 2. 10.*

*Q. What must wee first doe in the well ordering of our life?*

*A.* Wee must sit downe and consider our state, of what condition, and place wee be. If a Christian, then wee stand charged with the duties of a Christian: If a master, then we performe the duties

*Ordering of  
our life.*

duties of a master: If a Father, then the duties of a Father, and so of the rest.

*Q. What are the common duties of euery Christian?*

*A.* They be of three sorts, {

1. To liue soberly in respect of himselfe.
2. To liue righteously, in respect of his neighbour.
3. To liue holily in respect of God, *Tit. 2. 12.*

*Q. Why doth the Apostle begin first with our selues?*

*A.* Because a man is giuen naturally to loue himselfe, and to seeke his owne good. And therefore if wee cannot hold within compasse of dutie towards our selues, much lesse shall we be able towards others.

*Q. What is the dutie which wee owe vnto our selues?*

*A.* To liue soberly, and temperately in this present world.

*Q. What is this sobrietie which the Apostle speakes of?*

*A.* A moderate, and sparing vse of our lawfull liberties; which moderation must be kept in all the actions that concerne our selues; in our diet, in our recreations, in our mirth, in our sorrowes, and so in the rest.

*Q. How shall wee keepe this godly moderation in our Dyet?*

*A.* If two things be cared for: First, that it bee not too costly, too sumptuous: no though our purse will beare it, and our abilitie reach vnto it. The Glutton, which wee read of in the Gospell, was able enough to maintaine his cheare, for hee dyed rich. And yet for his feasting on earth, hee was faine to fast in hell: And the Deuills made as merry with his soule, as euer hee made merry with his meat, *Luke 16. 19.*

*Q. Is it not lawfull to feast our Neighbours?*

*A.* Yes, it is lawfull to make Feasts of loue, as the old Christians did in *Iude 12. verse.* But neither must this bee common, nor vsuall euery day, nor to fare more then for honest and sober delight. *Not common, Isay 56. 12. Not excessive, Nehemiah 5. 18.*

*Q. What is the second thing?*

*A.* Wee must looke, that we vse not those meates and drinks, which we haue (how homely, and how meane soeuer they bee) intemperately, that we doe not surfer, nor feed cormorantly, to the glutting, and whole satisfying of the flesh: washing our  
braines

braines with drinke, and basting our bodyes with meate, more then needs, *Ezek. 16. 19. Fulnesse of bread*, was one of the signes of *Sodome*, *Isay 5. 22.*

*Q. How shall wee be sober and moderate in our Apparell?*

*A.* If it be not too garish, too light, too costly, or strange, but graue, vsuall, bebecoming our Calling and our Countrey, *in Apparell.* strange Attire is condemned, *Eph. 1. 18. light and wanton Attire* *1. Tim. 2. 9.*

*Q. Doe the Scriptures giue any certaine directions for Attire?*

*A.* There are two Rules to be kept in our Attire. First, that wee doe not stretch forth our selues vnto all that wee may, and goe as farre as our place and abilitie will let vs, but cut short off some part of that which is lawfull, for men of our degree, *1. Tim.*

*2. 9.*

Secondly, that we square our selues to the most sober of our age, degree, condition, and state of life, *1. Pet. 3. 5.* Also we haue an example in the *2. Sam. 13. 18.* where the holy Ghost cleareth King *Dauid*, that he gaue no occasion to the euill which came vpon his daughter, because in apparell hee kept her within the rule appointed, and let her goe no otherwise, then other maydes of her age, place, and condition went.

*Q. Is nothing but apparell to be cared for?*

*A.* Yes, regard must be had of our gate, of our hayre, of whatsoeuer we are set out, and attyred with. In this also an honest, and godly moderation must be vsed, That our gate be not stately and proud: That our hayre be not vndecently long: That no more ornaments be hanged vpon vs, then seemelinette, and that Christian sobriety, which hath beene spoken of, will permit. Of the gate, *Isay 3. 16.* Of the rest, *1. Pet. 3. 3.*

*Q. Is it not lawfull for men to haue long hayre?*

*A.* The Apostle saith *1. Corinth. 12. 14.* *It is a shame for a man if hee weare long haire.* And therefore vnlesse it be not lawfull for men to shame then selues, it is not lawfull for men to haue long hayre: And he giues vs such a reason, as being well weighed, may mooue them much; *Doth not nature it selfe teach you, saith hee;* As if he had said, Though men haue neither religion nor honesty, nor grace, nor any conscience in them: yet nature  
it



it selfe may teach them, that when they glorie in their long locks, they glory in their shame.

*Q. How may wee use our recreations moderately and lawfully?*

*A.* If wee be not excessive in them, if wee spend not too much time vpon them, but use them so sparingly, that thereby we may become the more fit, and cheerefull in our calling, *Colos. 4.5.* and redeeme the time which we doe not, when our exercises doe not make vs more fit for our duties.

Secondly, if we be not eagerly set vpon them, that we fall to swearing, chafing, fretting, quarrelling, or hurting our neighbours corne, grasse, cattell, and the like.

Thirdly, if we use them at lawfull and conuenient times, not when we haue fittesse to better things, nor vpon the Sabbath, nor in time of priuate, or publike mourning, *Ecles. 3.1.*

*Q. Why may wee not use them, when wee are fit for better things?*

*A.* Because Recreations are permitted onely to refresh vs, and therefore if we play when we are as well able to worke, or to pray, or to reade, or to doe some such better things, we abuse our libertie, because wee runne to recreations before wee need them.

*Q. Why may wee not use them on the Sabbath?*

*A.* Because the whole day is set apart for the seruice of God, *Isay 58.13.*

*Qu. Why not in the time of mourning?*

*A.* Because wee may not laugh, when God would haue vs weepe: Wee may not be sporting, when we had more need bee repenting for our sinnes, *Isay 22.12.13.14.*

*Qu. How may wee be sober and moderate in resting from our labours?*

*A.* If no more time be spent in our rest, then may well serue to refresh vs, *Marke 6.31.*

*Q. How may we alwayes keepe our selues in worke?*

*A.* If wee consider, that the Lord hath stored vs with such varietie of duties, that wee need not be idle one houre in a day. If wee cannot worke, yet wee may reade: If wee cannot reade, yet we may heare others reade: If not that, yet wee may pray or meditate, or comfort our brethren. If wee tyred in ope, yet wee may

may recreate, and refresh our selves in another, *Coloss. 4. 5.*

Qu. *How may wee be sober and moderate in our sorrows?*

A. If wee obserue three things. First, that wee grieve not our selves for euery needlesse thing; for the Lord would haue vs liue in some comfort, and in some cheere: And therefore, we must not take euery thing to heart, and make our liues wearisome and bitter to vs, *Phil. 4. 4.* *In Sorrows.*

Secondly, that wee grieve lesse for matters of lesse weight, and more for matters of greatest weight: More for our sinnes, then wee doe for our troubles, and more when we lose God, then when we part with our dearest friends, *Zachariah 12. 10.*

Thirdly, that we suffer not our selves to bee swallowed vp of sorrow, no though it be for the best things, *2. Cor. 2. 7.*

Qu. *How may we be sober and moderate in our mirth?*

A. If wee weigh the matter of our ioy, that we neuer reioyce in euill things, as in iesting, scoffing, talking wantonly, nor in those things that are transitorie, and passe away; as in riches, fauour, honour, further then they are pawnes and pledges of the loue of God (not in euill things, *1. Cor. 5. 6.* not in transitory, *Ier. 9. 23.* and the *24. Iob 31. 25.* *In our Mirth.*

Secondly, if we shew not too great lightnesse in our mirth, but alwayes it haue some seasoning of Christian grauitie in it, *Ephes. 5. 4.*

Thirdly, if we be not merry, when our owne sinnes, or our brethrens miseries, giue vs more cause to mourne, *Hos. 9. 1. Amos 6. 5. 6.*

Q. *Are there no other things, wherein sobrietie must bee shewed?*

A. Yes, many other things, as in our sleepe, in our feares, and in our cares for the world, and the like; But by these few, which haue beene handled, we may measure out all the rest.

Q. *What is the duty which wee owe to men?*

A. To liue righteously, that is to giue euery man that which is his due, *Rom. 13. 7.* *To men Righteousnesse.*

Q. *What is their due?*

A. That we loue them in their persons, both in their bodies and in their soules, in their goods, in their good names, and in euery thing that belongs vnto them, *Rom. 13. 8.*

*Q. How may wee shew loue in their persons?*

*A. Three wayes,* § 1. In our Affections, § 2. In our Words, § 3. In our Deeds, § 1. Iohn 3. 18.

*Q. How in our Affections?*

*A. Wee must not rashly be angry with them. for loue suffereth long, it will put vp many iniuries, and passe by many wrongs, and therefore they that fall out, and suffer their loue to quench for euery offence, declare euidently they haue no loue, See Solomons Song 8. 7.*

*Q. May wee not be angry?*

*A. Yes: but therein three things must be looked vnto. First, that the cause be iust and earnest, Math. 5. 22.*

Secondly, that our anger be not furious: that it breake not out into immoderate heate, into cursing, banning, reuiling and the like, *Ephes 4. 3 1.*

Thirdly, that it hold not long, for both should seeke Reconciliation: As the father ranne to meet his sonne and the sonne his father. And therefore, they that being once falne out, will neuer be reconciled againe, or straine courtesie, who shall begin, bewray notably their want of loue, *Eph. 4. 16. 1. Cor. 3. 12. 13.*

*Q. What is the second point of Inward loue?*

*A. Wee must not enuy their good: It must not grieue vs to see others wealthier, wiser, and better thought of then our selues: Wee must be as glad of their welfare, as of our owne, and reioyce as much to heare them praised, as we would doe if our selues were commended, Rom. 12. 15.*

*Q. What is the third point of Inward loue?*

*A. Wee must not take that which may be well meant in ouill part: wee must not be too ieaious, and too suspicious of our brethren, vpon euery conceite, thinking hardly of them, Rom. 1. 29.*

*Q. What is the fourth point of Inward loue?*

*A. Wee must not disdain them, nor set vp our selues against them: For though in some one gift, they came behinde vs, yet happily in some other they goe before vs; and though they doe not, yet happily, they haue not had such helps, such meanes, so many sweet motions to bring them on as we haue had, Phil. 2. 3.*

*Q. How*

*In our Affections.*

*Anger.*



*Q. How must wee shew our loue in our words?*

*A. Wee must not speake bitterly, scoffingly, nor crossely to them: if we be wronged, yet we must deale coldly, gently, and mildely with them, not bitterly, James 4. 11. not scoffingly, Gen. 31. 9. 10. not crossely, Pro. 15. 1.*

*Q. May wee not be sometimes sharpe in our speech?*

*A. Yes, but in Gods cause, rather then in our owne, and neither in both, till wee see gentle meanes will not worke: as a Physician vseth strong Medicines, when the weaker will not helpe, Nehem. 13. 25.*

Secondly, wee must not speake euill of them behinde their backs, but by loue conceale those infirmities that are in them, vntill either Gods glorie, or their good shall require an opening of their faults, 1. Pet. 4. 8. 1. Cor. 11. 11.

Thirdly, wee must not brawle, and wrangle contentiously about questions that shall arise amongst vs, 1. Pet. 3. 15. 16.

*Q. How must wee shew loue to them in our deeds?*

*A. Wee must not withdraw our selues from them in their needes, but to our power and abilitie, seeke to make their liues sweet and comfortable to them; We must not be altogether our owne men, shut vp within our owne profite, and pleasures. and wholly taken vp of them: But by loue wee must goe out of our selues to the good and profite of our Brethren, Dent. 15. 7. to the 11.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A. That they who are so farre off from helping their needy brethren; that they make euill a spoyle, and a prey of them, most vnchristianly encreasing their miseries, and by vsury and hard bargaines, putting of them further into debt and danger, they haue nodrop of humanitie, much lesse any sound ground of Christianitie in them, Leu. 35. 36.*

*Qu. What other thing is there wherein we must shew our loue?*

*A. Wee must not doe any violence to their person, wee must neither smite them, nor hurt them in life or limbe, as appeareth, Leu. 24. 19. 20. For though the Ceremony of that Law be now abrogated, yet the equitie of it stands still in strength.*

*Qu. What further thing is there to declare our loue?*

*A. We must not procure hurt to their persons by any means,*

*Loe to their Persons.*

so tenderly the Lord would haue vs regard our brethren, that we should not be any occasion, whereby hurt and dammagement may grow vnto them, *1. Chron. 11. 19.*

*Qu. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they who delay suites in law, or blowe tales into mens heads, and so giue occasion of blood, or they that rashly venter mens liues for their profite or pleasure, are highly guiltie of the want of loue.

*Qu. Shall wee thinke our selues discharged towards our Brethrens persons, when wee haue performed this?*

*A.* No, the chiefest thing is yet behind, loue to their soules, which is the very life of Christian loue, *Rom. 10. 1.*

*Qu. How must wee loue them in their soules?*

*Soules.*

*A.* Wee must mourne and be sorry for their sinnes, as Christ wept ouer *Ierusalem*; so we must weepe ouer the soules of our brethren, *Ier. 13. 17.*

*Qu. What is the second thing?*

*A.* Wee must pray for them, that the Lord would forgiue them, and fill their hearts with the riches of his grace, *James 15. 16.*

*Q. May not one mans prayer get pardon for another mans sinnes?*

*A.* It may, as it appeareth in the *1. Iohn 5. 16.* and yet not without the faith of him, whom we pray for: For without faith it is impossible to please God, *Heb. 11. 6.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they who see other men drowned in sinne, and yet are not oft vpon their knees to intreate the Lord heartily, and earnestly for them, are highly guiltie of neglect of dutie towards them.

*Q. What is the third thing?*

*In drawing*

*them to christ.*

*A.* Wee must labour to draw them to Christ; as one candle lights another: so one man must bring another to God; As *Peter* being conuerted, must conuert his brethren; so wee being turned, must turne others to the faith, *Zach. 8. 21.*

*Q. What is the fourth thing?*

*To encourage  
them.*

*A.* Wee must bring them on, being come, wee must encourage them, and lead them forward in the wayes of God. As a man  
plies

plies a lampe with oyle : so wee must nourish and feed good things in them, that they goe not out, *Heb. 10. 24. 25.*

Qu. *How is this declared?*

A. By a similitude : for as in a great Familie where are many children, the elder helpe to carry and tend the younger : So in the family and household of God, the ancienter and elder Christians must helpe and support. and bring forward those that are the weaker, and can e lately to the faith, *Acts 18. 27.*

Q. *What is the last thing?*

A. Wee must admonish them of their faults; For he that rebukes not his brother or his sinne, hates him in his heart, *Leuit.*

*Admonition.*

*19. 17.*

Qu. *How doth this appeare?*

A. Because we know the Lord will punish his sinne and bring it to light : And therefore, if wee dissemble and admonish him not to leaue it, what doe wee else but desire the Lord to blaze him, and to shame him for it?

Q. *Yea, but men will be angry with vs if wee tell them their faults.*

A. And God will be angry if we tell them not. And therefore it is better to lose mens fauours then Gods fauour, and to haue our neighbours displeasure then Gods displeasure : And yet many times that falls out that *Salomon* speakes of, *Prou. 28. 23.*

Q. *What things are to be regarded in reproofing?*

A. Three things : First, that we doe it mildely and lovingly, that we set not too eagerly and too hardly on them, *Gal. 6. 1.*

Secondly, that we doe it mightily and with power, not onely making them see their sinnes, but even all the shame of it, to bring them to a greater hatred and loathing of it, *Micah 3. 8.*

Thirdly, that we doe it discreetly, not casting of precious seed vpon euery ground ; but hauing some hope of the partie, that it shall doe good, *Prou. 9. 8. Math. 7. 6.*

Qu. *Is every prophane man so be giuen ouer in his sinnes?*

A. Surely no : Great care must be had that we iudge not men past physicke, till their disease be growne very desperate indeed. Though a man haue beene a scorner before, yet wee know not whether now he may leaue it. And though he haue beene very impatient of reproofe at other mens hands, yet wee know not



how he may take it at ours. And therefore, as long as there is any sparke of hope, we must not cease mildly to admonish them of their faults, *Marke 12.4.5.6.*

*Qu. What is the second Point to our neighbours?*

*we must loue  
them in their  
goods.*

*A.* Wee must loue them in their goods: For loue not only regards the person of our neighbour, but also dealeth tenderly and louingly with all those things that belong vnto him; So that if any thing of his shall not finde honest and trustie dealing at our hands, there shall be iust cause to arrest, and indict vs of the want of loue, *Rom. 13.9.*

*Qu. How must wee loue them in their goods?*

*A.* First, we must preferue them the best we can.

Secondly, wee must not withhold or detaine any thing from them.

Thirdly, wee must not take away, either by force or fraud, any thing that is theirs.

*Q. What doth the first point teach vs?*

*A.* That if our neighbours house, or cattell, or corne bee endangered, euery man must lend his helping hand to preserue them safe. If our neighbours house be on fire, euery man runnes with his bucket to quench it. So if our neighbour bee oppressed in law, euery man must helpe to defend his right; If by sicknesse he be cast behinde, we must further him and helpe him the best we can, *Exod. 23.4.5.*

*Q. Who be they that offend in this Dutie of loue?*

*A.* First, they that suffer their cattell through negligence to breake into other mens grounds, and when they haue trespassed him, are not willing and ready to make full recompence for their hurts, *Exod. 22.5.*

Secondly, they who hurt or luge their neighbours cattell excessively. For what conscience or equitie is this, that a man for haue a penny-worth of grasse, should doe his neighbours beast a shillings-worth of harme, *Exod. 22. and the 5.6. verse.*

Thirdly, they that turne their owne dangers vpon their neighbours necke, as they that turne the overshoot of their water vpon their neighbours land, or by many meanes draw him into perill that themselues may scape, *Luk. 6.31.*

Fourthly, they that can giue euidence in a matter, and yet by

their

their silence suffer their neighbour to bee defeated of his right, *Leuit. 5. 1.*

Fifthly, they that will runne to law for euery iniury, and for euery wrong. For though a man haue done vs some harme, yet that is no reason why we should waste him in the law, and turne him out of all he hath : But wee must seeke as neere as may bee, that his punishment may be answerable and equall to his offence, *1. Cor. 6. 7.*

*Q. What is the second thing whereby we must shew loue to our Neighbours goods ?*

*A.* Wee must not with-hold or keepe backe any thing that is his, but restore with conscience and care, whatsoeuer in any right or equity belongs vnto him, *Prou. 3. 27.*

*Q. Who be they that offend in this ?*

*A.* First, they that keepe backe the labourers hyre; not onely they that defeat him of his wages; but euen they also, that keepe it in their hands when it should doe them good, *Dent. 24. 15.*

Secondly, they that are not carefull to discharge their owne debts, *Psal. 37. 21.*

Thirdly, they that finde any thing that was lost, and are not carefull to restore it : For as a Master layes certaine loose money vp and downe his house, to try whether his seruants will steale it : So when weelicht vpon any thing that was lost, let vs remember, the Lord makes tryall of our honesty, whether we will possesse with an euill Conscience one penny-worth of our neighbours goods or no, *Dent. 21. 3.*

Fourthly, they that haue hired or borrowed, or taken any thing to keepe, and are not carefull as much as in them lyes to restore it as good as it came, *Exod. 22. 14.*

*Q. What is the third thing whereby wee must shew loue to our Neighbours goods ?*

*A.* Wee must not get away by force or fraud any thing, that is his : wee must suffer him to rest in a peaceable possession of those things which the Lord in mercy for the comfort of his life, hath cast vpon him, *1. Thess. 4. 6.*

*Q. What learne wee by this ?*

*A.* That in bargaining, we must alwayes giue him a penny-worth

worth of ware for his penny: Couetousnesse and greedinesse of gaine must not rate our Commoditie, and set price vpon our Wares, but we must looke as neere as may be, that the goodnesse of the Commoditie we sell, euen in truth and good conscience bee quall to that money the Buyer payes for it, *Leuit. 25. 14. 15. 16.*

*Q. Who be they that are condemned hereby?*

*A.* First, it condemneth all vitering of deceitfull and naughty wares, *Amos 8. 6. 7.*

Secondly, it condemneth those that ouersell their Commodities, and labour to driue the price as high as possibly they can, *Amos 8. 4. 5.*

Thirdly, it condemneth those that vse false Measures and false weights, or if they be true, yet they can so cunningly conuey the matter, and helpe it with a sleight, that the Buyer is sure to come short of his due, *Deut. 25. 15. to the 16.*

Fourthly, it condemneth those that lye in the winde to prey vpon a man ( that must needs sell his Commodities for ready money ) to get them for halfe the worth: For what is it to oppresse our brethren in bargaining, if this bee not to oppresse them.

*Q. What other Dutie are wee charged with?*

*Vsurie.*

*A.* We must not take Interest, or Vsurie of our Neighbours, for all vsurie is biting vsurie; howsoeuer some can lick themselves whole againe, yet the greatest part carry the print of the Vsurers teeth to their dying day; *Exod. 22. 25.*

*Qu. What is Vsurie?*

*A.* Vsurie is a certaine gaine exacted by Couenant about the Principall, onely in lieu and recompence of the lending of it: and it is cleerely condemned by the Lord, *Deut. 23. 19.*

*Q. Doth not the Princes law allow Vsurie 10. pounds in the 100. pounds?*

*A.* The Princes Law restraineth Vsurie, but allowes it not; The Prince had rather men would lend freely to their brethren, but if they will not for the hardnesse of mens hearts he permits 8. in the 100. lest they should take 20. in the 100.

*Q. Why is not Vsurie condemned in the New Testament?*

*A.* Because it is sufficiently condemned in the Old: For the



Morall law alwayes standeth in strength and is neuer repealed : And therefore Vsurie being a branch of the morall Law, in as much as it concernes loue, and good dealing too with our neighbour, is as strictly forbidden in the New Testament, as it was in the Old, *Math. 5. 17.*

*Q. What is the last dutie we learne from hence?*

*A.* Wee must not filch or pilfer the least pinne or point from our Neighbour: for it is not the value, but the dishonest manner of comming by a thing that makes it theft, *Ephes. 4. 28,*

*Qu. What is the roote of all hard dealing with our brethren?*

*A.* Couetousnesse and greedy desire of gaine, for why doe men racke the prizes of their Wares? Why doe they scant their measures? Why doe they sell they care not what? Why are they Vsurers, oppressours, pilferers, and the like? But because their hearts runne after couetousnesse, and they are mightily ouertaken with greedinesse of gaine, *1. Tim. 6. 10.*

*Q. What are the causes of Couetousnesse?*

*A.* There are two causes of it. First, discontentment with our present state, not resting in it, as in our portion with great thankfulness of heart to God for it. For when we are once talne into loue with a better state, and grow discontented with the present blessings of God that are vpon vs: then we fall to scraping, and fetching in we care not how, *1. Tim. 6. 9.*

Secondly, Infidelitie and distrust in God, mistrusting the Lords care, that hee will leaue vs in the dust, and not provide sufficiently for vs; wee thinke to make shift for our selues, and to be furnished for a rainie day, though the Lord should leaue vs, *Heb. 13. 5.*

*Qu. What are the remedies of it?*

*A.* The remedies are two: First to rest contented with our present estate, as in the portion which the Lord in wisdom knowes to be fittest for vs, *Phil. 4. 11.*

Secondly, to haue hearts strongly perswaded, that the Lord will not leaue vs nor forsake vs in our need, but graciously will supply vs with the riches of his power, whatsoever is wanting in vs, *1. Pet. 5. 7.*

*Qu. What is the last thing wherein we must loue our brethren?*

*A.* Wee must loue them in their names, taking care for their credit

credite and estimation, that we bring not any blot or blēnish vp-  
on them, but by loue, maintaine and vphold their good report,  
*Tit. 3. 2.*

*Qu. What is the first dutie wee are charged with in this be-  
halfe?*

*A.* Whensoever occasion serues, we must be willing to make  
report of those graces and good things that be in them, and to be-  
stow their iust and deserued commendations on them: We must  
not be giuen to smother and conceale our brethrens praise, to bu-  
ry and rake vp their commendations in the dust, but be forward  
in remembring those things, whereby credite and estimation may  
grow vnto them, *3. Iohn 12. verse.*

*Q. What is the second duty required of vs?*

*A.* If we heare them falsely charged with any crime, we must  
stand out in their defence, being content to hazard and aduen-  
ture some part of our owne credite and welfare for them, *1. Sam.*  
*20. 32.*

*Q. What is the third dutie required of vs?*

*A.* Wee must not raise vp any slander or lying tale against  
them. It is a foule sinne to gadde vp and downe from house to  
house, whispering in this bodyes eare, and that bodyes eare, this  
tale and that tale to the discrediting of our brethren, *Leu. 19. 17.*

*Q. What is the fourth dutie required of vs?*

*A.* Wee must not open our eares to giue entertainment to  
them that carry tales. For the law of God not onely condem-  
neth those that first set them on foote, but euen those also, that by  
approouing them, and lending an eare vnto them, doe as it were  
vnderproppe, and vphold the same. And therefore it shall be no  
excuse to say, that we were not the authours, and first breachers  
of them: But if we be hastic to harken to flying tales, or giue  
countenance to euery busie body that will fill our eares; there  
shall be iust cause to condemne vs in this behalfe, *Exod. 23. 1.*  
*Prou. 25. 23.*

*Q. What is the fift Dutie required of vs?*

*A.* Wee must not blaze abroad the infirmities and offences  
of our brethren; if by any priuate dealing they may bee reform-  
med, *Prou. 11. 13.*

*Q. What is the last Duty required of vs?*

*A.* Wee

*A.* Wee must not amplifie and aggrauate mens faults, though they be bad, yet we must not make them worse then they bee : For this shall euen make our enemies say, wee loue them, when they see we doe not racke and tenter their faults, but speake so sparingly and so tenderly of them, as possibly wee can, *Acts 16.22.*

*Q. What is the dutie wee owe to God?*

*A.* That wee liue godly and holily in this present world : So that it is not enough to discharge our duties towards men, vnlesse also wee walke carefully in those duties that concerne the Lord, *1. Tim. 4.7.* *Godlinesse.*

*Q. What is the first Point of godlinesse?*

*A.* We must labour to shew in our life that we loue the Lord: That we haue him in high account and in high regard : that wee reckon more of him, then we doe of all the world besides, *Deut. 10.12.*

*Q. How may wee shew that wee loue the Lord?*

*A.* If wee be more carefull to please the Lord, and to keepe his fauour, then wee be to please all the Princes and powers in the world besides, *Iohn 14.15.*

Secondly, if we loue the children of God; for louing the wisdom, the righteousness, and the holiness which is in God, wee cannot but loue euen the least sparke of these excellent things in whomsoever we finde them, *1. Iohn 5.1.*

Thirdly, if wee be zealously affected for the glorie of God, so that wee be ready to stand out in the Lords defence, and to oppose our selues against euery prophane head, that lifts vp it selfe against him, *Iohn 2.17.*

Fourthly, if wee reioyce and take sensible comfort in the fauour of God, and contrariwise grieue and mourne whensoever wee finde him displeased with vs, *Psal. 4.6.7.*

*Q. What is the second Point of godlinesse?*

*A.* Wee must shew that wee trust in God, that we are strongly perswaded in our hearts, that seeing God hath taken vpon himselfe the care, and prouision for vs ; Therefore it shall goe well with vs, and he will store vs and prouide vs of euery thing that is needfull for the comfort of our life, *1. Pet. 5.7.* *Second point  
Godlinesse.  
Trusting in  
God.*

*Q. How shall wee shew that wee trust in God?*

*A.* If



*A.* If wee be ioyfull and comfortable in our wants, not cleane out of heart, and at our wits end as the wicked are, *Mark. 8. 25. 16.*

Secondly, if we fall not to vnlawfull shifts, winding our selues out of danger we care not how, *1. Sam. 27. 1.*

*Q. What is the third point of godlinesse?*

Thirdly Hum-  
bling;

*A.* Wee must humble our selues vnder the mighty hand of God, bearing patiently and contentedly those crosse and troubles that he brings vpon vs, *1. Pet 5. 6.*

*Q. How may wee strengthen our selues to bee patient in troubles?*

Affliction.

*A.* First, to consider, that it is our owne sinne that hath pul- led these iudgements on vs, *Micah 7. 9.*

Secondly, to consider, that it is the Lord that afflicteth vs, who hauing absolute power ouer vs, may dispose of vs either by po- uertie or plentie, by sicknesse or health, by life or death, as best pleaseth him, *1. Sam. 3. 18.*

Thirdly, to consider, that they shall turne to their greatest comfort in the end. So that God may seeme to afflict his children, onely to sweeten and relish their prosperitie, *2. Sam. 16. 12.*

Fourthly, to consider, that though the Lord haue deprived vs of one blessing, yet he hath left vs many others to reioyce in: E- uen as if a man hauing forfeited an hundred pounds, and the Creditour should take but 100. shillings of him: So when we by sinne haue forfeited all our blessings, and all the comforts of our life: yet the Lord straineth but some one part and portion of them, *Lamen. 3. 22.*

Fifthly, to consider, that impatiencie doth but increase our crosse; like one in Irons, that struggling and struing to wring them off, hurts himselte more then the Irons doe, *Luke 21. 19.*

*Q. What is the fourth point of godlinesse?*

Fourthly  
Prayer.

*A.* Wee must be diligent in commending our whole estate by earnest prayer vnto God; For therein we doe the Lord this honour, that we acknowledge our whole welfare to depend on him, and it is he alone that blesteth all things that wee take in hand: And therefore we must neuer begin any thing without prayer: Wee must not eate vnlesse wee first pray God to blese that we eate: Wee must not giue, vnlesse wee pray God to blese

blesse that wee giue, *1. Thessalonians 5.17.*

*Q. What is the Reason?*

*A.* There is a double vse } *A lawfull vse, & }*  
of the good things of God, } *An holy vse. }*

*Q. What bethey?*

*A.* As when a man eateth, or refresheth himselfe, or sleeperh moderately; when he vttereth his Comodities at a reasonable rate, then he doth these things lawfully: But when he sanctifieth and performeth all these things with holy prayer vnto God: Then, he vselh them not onely lawfully but holily too. So that by this meanes our thoughts are holy, and our workes holy, our recreations holy, yea and our sleepe is holy to the Lord, *1. Sam. 3.5.*

*Q. What thinke you then of giuing thanks before meate?*

*A.* It is a holy vie sanctified by the example of Christ and much commended by the Scriptures; our Sauour *Christ* looked to heauen and blessed the loaves and fishes, *Math. 13.19.* So did *Paul*, *Acts 27.35.* And wee reade of the people in the *1. Sam. 9.13.* That they would not eate of the Sacrifice till *Samuel* had blessed it. And therefore their boldnesse is great, that dare vse the creatures of God with greater boldnesse then *Paul* or *Samuel*, yea and the Sonne of God himselfe would vie them.

*Q. Is it not good to haue certaine sette times of Prayer in our houses?*

*A.* It is very needfull, the rather thereby to draw our selues into Gods presence, and to bring our selues in remembrance of this great dutie, that lyes vpon vs, as *Daniel 6.10.*

*Q. What are the fittest times to set apart for Prayer?*

*A.* The Morning and the Euening. In the morning we must pray that the Lord will leade vs throughout the day: That hee will throwd vs and shadow vs vnder the wings of his grace, and be with vs in euery thing we take in hand. And this may be termed the morning Sacrifice of a Christian, *Psal. 5.3.* At night againe we must reckon with the Lord for the sinnes of the day, that we lye not downe in Gods displeasure: but hauing reconciled, and as it were made euen for our faults, wee may sleepe in the lappe and bosome of the loue of God. And this may be termed, The euening Sacrifice of a Christian, *Psal. 141.2.*

*Q. How is this further declared?*

*A.* As

*A.* As *Noahs* Doue, hauing wandred all day abroad, yet returned, in the Euening to the Arke: So we hauing toyled, and laboured all day in the world; yet at night we must bee carefull to returne, and take vp our rest (as it were) with God.

*Q.* Are wee to rest our selues in this thing?

*A.* Wee must not thinke our selues discharged, when these sett times of prayer be performed: but many times in the day, we must lift vp our hearts to God in the heate of all our businesse: bethinke vs of the Lord, who alone can prosper and blesse that which we haue in hand.

*Q.* What is the fift Point of godlinesse?

*Fiftly Thankes-  
giuing.*

*A.* Wee must lift vp our hearts with great thankfulnesse vnto God for all his blessings and benefites that are vpon vs. For therefore *Moses* declareth in the first of *Genesis*, how God made the Heauen and the Earth, the Sunne and the Moone, and all things here below; To shew that if we haue any comfort in any thing in this world, God the Creatour is to be blessed, and thanked for it, *1. Thess 5. 18.*

*Q.* Is it enough to thanke God for his mercies?

*A.* Surely no; but as we are thankfull for his blessings, so we must be thankfull for his iudgements too, and therefore we must blesse God, as well for our pouerty as we doe for our plenty; as well for our weakenesse, as we doe for our strength: as well when we lose our comforts, as when we haue them, *Iob 1. 21.*

*Q.* What is the Reason that so few are thankfull for their troubles?

*A.* Because men are not able to looke through the present euills that are vpon them, into the speciall fauour and loue of God, who by this meanes compasseth and procureth their greater good. And therefore men thinke it an vnreasonable thing, that they should thanke God for the losse of their wealth, of their peace, of their libertie, and the like, because they see not into that good, which the Lord by this meanes will bring vpon them, *Rom. 5. 4.*

*Q.* How may we promote our selues to thankfulnesse?

*A.* First, if we keepe a faithfull Register of the blessings of God, and engraue them (as it were) vpon the gates of the soule, that wee may behold in one sight, and in one view, all the rich blessings



blessings of God, that are vpon vs, *Psalm* 103, 1. 2. &c.

Secondly, if we consider how vnworthy we are of the least of those blessings which we inioy : For we are not worthy the earth should beare vs ; the heauens should couer vs : the Sunne should shine vpon vs. And therefore it is the Lords exceeding fauour that we are blessed in any measure, and regarded of him, *2. Sam.* 7. 18.

Thirdly, if we consider our preferment in many of our blessings about other men, and how they are thankfuller for halfe our happinesse, then we are for the whole, *Math.* 13. 17.

Fourthly, if wee consider how the number of Gods blessings groweth daily towards vs. So that if wee had cause to thanke God yesterday ; we haue greater cause to thanke him to day. And if we haue cause to thanke him this yeare, wee shall haue greater to thanke him the next yeare ; the Lords mercy still more and more increasing on vs, *Ezek.* 36. 11.

Q. *What is the last Point of Godlinesse ?*

A. The sanctifying of the Sabbath, which is one of the chiefest duties of a Christian, as being the very sinnewe, and the life of all the rest : For though a man be neuer so sicke and diseased ; yet so long as he lyes at Physicke, and vseth good meanes of health, there is some hope he may doe well ; but when he lets his disease runne, and will not come vnder the Physitians hands, then his case is desperate, wee haue little hope that hee will euermend. Euen so, though a man be neuer so sicke and diseased in his soule : yet so long as he hath care to sanctifie the Sabbath, to partake in the holy Prayers, and the Ministry of the Church, there is some hope that in time these good things may worke vpon him : But if he will not come to ioyne in these exercises of the Church : if he haue no care to heare, to pray, to meditate and the like ; then his state is wofull, we haue little hope of amendment, *Isay* 38. 13. 14.

Q. *How must wee sanctifie the Sabbath ?*

A. First, in setting our selues apart from our worldly busineses, that we may with greater libertie, bestow our selues in the seruice of God : And therefore it is not lawfull to iourney about our worldly matters vpon the Sabbath day, *Exod.* 16. 29.

Secondly, it is not lawfull to keepe Fayres or Markets on



*Q. What are the publique Exercises of the Sabbath?*

*A.* The first is hearing of the word of God with feare and reuerence, *Nehem. 8. 3. to the 9.*

*Q. What gather we of this?*

*A.* That they which either loyter at home: or when they come, either gaze, or sleepe, or reade, when they should heare, doe not indeed sanctifie a Sabbath vnto the Lord.

*Q. What if they haue no Preacher in the towne where they dwell?*

*A.* Yet they must seeke abroad, as the little bird leaueth her warme nest, and flies for her food where shee can get it: So must they by the famous example of the Noble woman in the *2. Kings 4.* And also of the Queene of the South, *Math. 12. 14.*

*Qu. What is the second Exercise of the Sabbath?*

*A.* Thankes-giuing to God for his many and great blessings bestowed vpon vs all the weeke before, together with earnest prayer for the continuance of the same all the next weeke, and euer after *Acts 16. 13.*

*Qu. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they which thinke it enough to bee at the Sermon, and withdraw themselues from the Prayers of the Church, doe not Sanctifie the Sabbath in all the duties of it.

*Q. Are none else faultie in this point?*

*A.* Yes, euen they also, which runne out before the end of the exercise, turning vp the heeles to God and departing, before the Lord giue them liberie to depart, *Ezek. 46. 10.*

*Q. What example haue wee of this?*

*A.* *Mathew 26. 30.* Wee reade that the Disciples of Christ went not out, till the Psalmes were sung, onely *Iudas* was so hotly set vpon his businesse, that wee could not tarry the Psalmes, *Iohn 13. 30. 31.*

*Q. What is the third Exercise of the Sabbath?*

*A.* Receiuing of the Lords Supper at the appointed times, and attending to Baptisme, if occasion serues, that thereby wee may be brought in better remembrance of the vow and promise, which we haue made to God, and also lend our helps too in prayer to the little Babe then presented to the Church, *Act. 20. 7.*



*Q. What are the priuate exercifes of the Sabbath?*

*A.* They are of two sorts, } 1. Such as prepare vs to the publique duties of the Sabbath.  
2. Such as must bee performed afterwards.

*Q. What are the Exercifes in the holy Preparation of the Sabbath?*

*A.* Priuate prayer, that the Lord will fit and inable vs to the sanctifying of the Sabbath, so that we may reuerently attend vnto the ministry of the word, and the prayers of the Church, and profite thereby, and that God will be the mouth of our Minister, that he may speake with grace and power to the hearts of the hearers, *Eccles. 4. 17.*

Secondly, Rising early, and making the shorter meales that we may haue the more time to bestow in priuate prayer, and bee the more cheerefull in the rest of the exercifes that are behinde, *Psal. 119. 148.*

*Q. What is the equitie of this Dutie?*

*A.* That if wee cut short our sleepe, when our owne businesse is in hand, much more should wee doe for the Lords: and if we cannot make a good meale when we haue a worldly matter in hand, much lesse should we dwell vpon our duties, when the glory and honour of God calls vs from them.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That their sinne is very great, who being content to rise early all the rest of the weeke, yet giue themselves to sloth and sluggishness exceedingly vpon the Sabbath day, bewraying thereby their prophane and worldly minde, that they carry more good will to their owne businesse, then they doe to the Lords.

*Q. What are the priuate duties of the Sabbath, after we haue bene at Church?*

*A.* A ioyfull thanksgiuing to God for the gracious and good things, that we haue heard, blessing the Lord in our soules, that it hath pleased him to poure out his whole heart vnto vs in the ministry of the Word, and to reueale those things in our dayes, which many yeares haue bene shut vp and sealed from the world, *Nehem. 8. 12.*

*Q. What*

*Qu. What learnewee by this?*

*A.* That as *John* saith *Reuel. 5.4.* That he wept much when the Booke was sealed, and no man was found to open it: So men should weepe to see the Booke of God lye clasped in their Churches, and no man (to open it and) expound it to them.

*Qu. What is the second priuate dutie of the Sabbath?*

*A.* Meditation, and bearing ouer by our selues that which we haue heard. For this is that, which mightily strengtheneth the ministrie of the Church, and without which, all the preaching in the world will doe vs little good, *Acts 17.11.12.*

*Q. What is the third priuate dutie?*

*A.* Conference with others when it may be had, at the least to talke in the way of *Iesus*, as the Disciples, *Luke 24.17. to the 20.*

*Q. What is the end of Conference?*

*A.* That others may supply that which we want, and so we may reape double fruit of that which our selues remember, and then of that which others haue learned. If euery one of vs had but one coate, or but one sticke vpon his fire, it would cast but a little heate: but if all wee should bring our fewell together, and lay it on one hearth, it would make a mightie blaze: So while euery man catcheth but a little at a Sermon, that little doth him but a little good: but if euery man would bring his little, then we might make (as it were) one common stocke, we should be better able to set vp and goe through with Christianitie, then we doe.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That their sinne is exceeding great, who so soone as their backs are turned vpon the Preacher ruine presently into the world, and fall immediately into speech of worldly matters, as if they had beene at a Market, or a Beare-bayting, vnbecoming the Gospell of *Christ*, the holinelle of the day, and the honour of the place from whence they came.

*Q. What is the fourth priuate dutie?*

*A.* Reading of the Scriptures for the further strengthening and setting of our faith. For if the godly Christian must reade somewhat in the Bible euery day, this exercise may not in any

wife belayd to sleepe on the Sabbath day, *Psal. 1. 2.*

*Q. What is the last private dutie of the Sabbath?*

*A.* Comforting of our brethren, both relieuing them when they be in need, and instructing them when they want instruction, *Math. 12. 12.*

*Q. Why hath the Lord appointed so many Exercises vpon the Sabbath?*

*A.* Not to burthen vs, and tyre vs out with the number of them, but to make the Sabbath more easie for vs; for how tedious would it be if we should doe nothing else but pray, or nothing else but reade: But now the Lord hath appointed vs varietie and change of duties, that being weary in one, wee might recreate and refresh our selues in another.

*Q. How long doth the Sabbath last?*

*A.* Not some few houres of the day, but the whole daye *Leuit. 23. 32.*

*Q. What is the reason hereof?*

*A.* Because on the Sabbath day, we are to make our prouision, and to store our selues for all the weeke, so that all the rest of the daies may feele the benefite and comfort of this one day, and therefore men must not thinke it is some few houres, a little in the morning, and a little in the afternoone, that will store vs with all that faith, loue, patience, humilitie, that is needfull for vs: The greatest part being scant able to get vp in many daies so much as will serue them for one.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they who thinke it enough to spend an houre in the forenoone, and an houre in the afternoone at Church, neglecting the rest of the day, know not what it is to sanctifie a Sabbath to the benefite of their soules.

*Q. If the whole day must be holy to the Lord? why then doe wee eate and drinke, and sleepe on the Sabbath day?*

*A.* Because these are workes of necessitie. Secondly, because they lend their helpes to the sanctifying of the Sabbath: For by sleeping in the night, and eating in the day moderately, men are the better enabled to goe through with the duties of the Sabbath, not being able to hold out in them, if these comforts



comforts and refreshings should bee taken from them.

*Q. When doth the Sabbath begin?*

*A.* Over night at the shutting in of the day, as appeareth evidently, *Leuit. 23. 32.*

*Q. What is the reason hereof?*

*A.* That the night before, might be (as it were) a preparation to the Sabbath, both to put them in minde what they are to looke for the next day, and also by priuate prayer, and repeating that they heard the weeke before, to make them the readier and the fitter for it.

*Qu. Was not this Law particular for the Iewes onely?*

*A.* No: For the Christian Churches obserued it as well as the Iewes, and therefore *St. Augustine in his 251. Sermon De tempore*, grounding his iudgement on this place of *Leuiticus*, saith, Let vs wholly imploy our selues in the seruice of God, leauing off our husbandry, and all other businesse from Saturday at night, till the Lords day at night againe. So long *Charles the great Emperour* enacted the Lords day should bee kept in *French Churches*, and the *Councell of Torragon* in the Churches of *Spaine*, which vse the Spaniards they say hold euen to this day.

*Qu. Is this all that is required in the Christian life?*

*A.* Besides these generall Duties, there are many particular duties required of vs. Hethat is a Father, must thinke that hee stands charged with the duties of a Father. He that is a Master must thinke that the duties of a Master will bee looked for at his hands, and so of a Seruant, of a Subiect, and the like.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That a man must not thinke himselfe discharged, if he haue walked with some care in the generall duties of a Christian; ynicke also he performe the same in those particular duties, which in regard of his particular state and calling, are layd vpon him.

*Q. What is the Husbands dutie to the wife?*

*A.* It is layd down in the *1. Peter 3. 7.* in three points, first, he must dwell with his wife: That is, he must liue in a sweet, and louely communion with her: Hee must not absent him-

selfe more then needs : Nor make himsele strange to her, when he is at home.

*Q. Whom doth this Doctrine meet withall ?*

*A.* It condemneth those, that vpon euery light occasion will be shifting from their wiues ; For howsoeuer shee sute not with thee, yet thou must remember, that she is the companion of thy life, whom God and thy owne choice hath ioyned to thee, *Math. 19. 16.*

Secondly, it condemneth those, who not settling their hearts at home, loue to be roving, and ranging much abroad ; for the Lord would not haue the least occasion of suspicion to bee left to the iealous wife, and therefore hath tyed the husband the more strictly to delight himsele at home, *Prou. 5. 18. 19.*

*Q. What is the second Dutie ?*

*A.* First, he must dwell with her according to knowledge, knowing that God hath made the man the head of the woman, and therefore he must not lose the honour of his place ; but by wisdome, grauitie, and all good aduise, seeke to direct her in an honest course, *Ephes. 5. 25. 26.* The husband is charged to loue his wife as Christ loued his Church : But Christ so loueth his Church, that he sanctifieth it, and makes it an holy Church ; and therefore the husband must so loue his wife, that hee suffer her not to lye in her sinnes, but by all good meanes, seeke to re-claime her, and to bring her from them.

Secondly, knowing that a woman is the weaker vessell, and therefore it is an vnreasonable thing to looke for all that faith, patience, humilitie, discreet and wise carriage, that they finde in men.

*Q. What gather wee of this ?*

*A.* That the wife must be supported, and borne withall in her rashnesse, heate, want of discretion, and the like infirmities haunting and waiting vpon the Sexe : And therefore euery aduantage must not be taken against her, but wee must breake through many discourtesies, and many wrongs to hold loue and friendship with her.

*Q. What is the third Dutie ?*

*A.* He must giue honour vnto her, as vnto the weaker vessell.

*Q. What*

*Q. What is meant by this?*

*A.* Hee must haue her in good reckoning and in good regard, not dispising her for the infirmities of her Sexe, but accounting well of her for the graces whatsoeuer that are in her, esteeming her as a vessell, as one needfull and necessarie in the house.

Secondly, he must prouide for her the best he can, hee must not set ouer her the whole care of his prouision; but as shee is the weaker vessell, so he must thinke in the maintainance of the Familie to be assisted more weakely by her.

*Q. What is the Wives dutie to her husband?*

*Wives.*

*A.* Shee must bee subiect to her husband, humbling her selfe to the yoke of gouernment, which God hath layd vpon her. For God hath made the man the head of the woman, and therefore this must abate all pride and selfe-loue, and worke true honour in her heart towards him whom God hath made the chiefe in the house, *1.Pet. 3.1.*

*Qu. How is this further declared?*

*A.* That the husband is Gods deputie, and Gods Lieutenant in the house, as Christ is in the Church, and therefore to despise the husband is to despise God; to disobey the husband in lawfull things, is to disobey God, because they lift vp themselves against the power, which God hath placed in his owne steed and roome, *Ephes. 5.22.*

*Q. Why doth the Scripture beate so much vpon this duty?*

*A.* Because there is a secret swelling in the heart which will hardly brooke the gouernment of the man, especially, if in any good qualities they goe beyond him.

*Q. How must this subiection be declared?*

*A.* Both by reuerend speech, and all humble behauiour to her husband. Some take it to be their grace to speake rudely and bluntly to him. But it was *Sarabs* honour that shee obeyed *Abraham* and called him Lord, *1.Pet. 3.5.*

*Q. What is the reason hereof?*

*A.* A man is bound to loue his wife, though there bee nothing in her that deserueth loue; But because a man is not easily brought to this loue, where there is not some cause of loue:



Therefore the Lord would haue the wife by gentle and sweet behaiour, deserue, and win loue at her husbands hands.

*Q. What is the second Duty of the wife?*

*A.* Shee must be of pure conuersation; no hauocker, no waster of her husbands goods, no inticer of him to dishonest things, like *Iobs* wife, that was *Iobs* tempter, not idle, not sluggish, no babler abroad of her husbands faults, *Prou. 31.10.11.*

*Q. What is the third duty?*

*A.* Shee must feare her husband, and she must bee loath to displease him, such a tender care she must haue of his comfort, and of his peace, that she must not do willingly the least thing, that may displease him, *Ephes. 5.23.*

*Qu. What is the fourth Duty?*

*A.* Shee must not be proud and costly in her attyre, stretching out her selfe to all that she may, but keeping vnder her husbands abilitie, rather then any whit about it, *1.Pet. 3.3.*

*Q. What is the fift Duty?*

*A.* She must entertaine no secret dislike of her husband, but rest her minde with all contentment in him, euer pleasing her selfe in her husbands face, *Cant. 5.9.10.*

*Q. What is the last Dutie?*

*A.* Shee must be of a meeke and an humble spirit, not giuen to curling, brawling, fretting and fuming with him, but by meeknesse and loue support him in his hastinesse, rashnesse, and other infirmities, which he hath, *1.Pet. 3.3.*

Parents.

*Q. What is the Parents duty to their children?*

*A.* They must bring them vp in the feare of God; they must seeke to place religion and true godlinesse in their hearts: They must not only train them vp to liue ciuilly, & honestly in the world: But their chiefest care must bee to acquaint them in their tender yeares with the wayes of God, *Eph. 6.4.*

*Qu. What is the second Duty?*

*A.* They must not be churlish and bitter to them, moping them too much, but liuing with some cheerefulness among them, *Col. 3.21.*

*Qu. What is the third Duty?*

*A.* They must not let their Children runne out, but hold them

them in and correct them moderately for their faults, for better the Parents by discreet correction make their children weepe, then their children through their vngratious behauiour, make their aged Parents weepe, and lay downe their hoarie heads with sorrow in the graue, *Prov. 19. 18.*

*Qu. What is the fourth Duty?*

*A.* They must consecrate such as bee fit vnto the Lord, as *Anna* did *Samuel*, bestowing the rest in some honest Trades, so that none be suffered to lye idle vpon their hands.

*Qu. What is the fift Duty?*

*A.* Mothers must nurse their children at their owne breasts, for euen the *Estredges* in the *Wildernesse* draw out their breasts vnto their young, and proffer food, but then there leaue their egges to be hatched by another, *Gen. 21. 7.*

*Q. What is the sixth Duty?*

*A.* When their children be ready, they must be carefull to match them with men of vnderstanding and such as feare God: They must chiefly looke not how rich they be, how personable they be, but how godly they be.

*Qu. Is it not lawfull for a Christian to match with a Iew?*

*A.* No, for this is snipping of the holy seed, and a wilfull flinging of our selues into a continuall temptation; a lugging of our selues with a continuall yoke.

*Q. What is the seuenh Duty?*

*A.* They must so labour, and care moderately for outward things, that when they depart this life, they may leaue some blessing amongst their seed.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That their sinne is great, who liue so riotously and so idly, that they bee able to leaue no meanes to their children when they dye.

*Q. What is the Childrens duty to the Parents?*

children.

*A.* They must seeke the honour of their Parents. *Math. 15. 4.* first so to behaue themselves, as that their Parents may haue credite by them: For a good childe is an honour to the parent: but hee that is euill is the shame of them that hath brought them vp.

*Q. How*

*Q. How must wee honour our Parents?*

*A.* By making good account of them, and vsing them reuerently with all humblenesse and feare, *Leu. 19. 3.*

*Q. What if the Parent be a meaner man?*

*A.* Yet the childe must performe him that reuerence and honour that is his due; Though a King should not bee the wisest, nor the grauest, nor the learnedst man in the kingdome; yet because the Lord hath staid him in his royall Throne, therefore they that are grauer and wiser, and learnede then he must bow before him. So though the Parents in many things come short of their children: yet in that they are their Parents, they haue their honour and their excellencie aboue them, *Gen. 48. 12.*

*Qu. What learne we from hence?*

*A.* That Parents must keepe the dignitie of their place, and looke for due reuerence at their childrens hands, as *Iacob* though but a shepheard, yet was well content that *Ioseph* his sonne should bow before him.

*Q. In what else must wee honour our Parents?*

*A.* In being obedient to them and performing their wills, both when they be aliue and when they be dead, so farre forth as lawfully we may, especially in the waightie matter of Marriage, which may not be dealt in without their consent, *Prou. 23. 22.*

*Q. Who are they that are condemned hereby?*

*A.* Such as make light of their Parents, doing all vpon braine, neuer caring for their counsell or consent, *Prou. 30. 17.*

*Q. What is the best thing wherein wee must honour our Parents?*

*A.* In maintaining and relieuing them in comfortable sort according to our abilitie, when they be in need, *1. Tim. 5. 8.*

*Q. What is the reason hereof?*

*A.* Wee haue receiued much more at our Parents hands, and they did but trust vs with their wealth till themselues were old, and therefore we cannot in any equity, but render and repay them their owne when they be in need, *1. Tim. 5. 4.*

*Qu. Are these duties to be performed to our own Parents only?*

*A.* They



*A.* They belong also to our Parents in law. Christ was obedient to his stepfather *Ioseph*, *Luk. 2. 5.* And *Micah* notes it, as one of the sinnes of the *People ca. 7. 6.* That the daughter in law set vp her selfe against her Mother in law; a sinne too common in these wofull dayes.

*Q. What is the Masters duty to their seruants?*

*Masters.*

*A.* They must teach them religion, and the feare of God, that their seruants may continue the Lords worship when our selues are in the graue. For why is the *Centurion* said to feare the Lord with all his house, *Acts 10. 2.* but to teach vs, that it is not enough to be godly our selues, or to haue one good Seruant like a *Ioseph* in the house: but it must be our care that all within our gates, and vnder our power and authoritie may feare the Lord, *Gen. 18. 19.*

*Q. How may masters be stirred vp to some care of this duty?*

*A.* If they consider, That their owne good, and their owne welfare is procured thereby; for many a master is blessed for his godly seruant, as *Potipher* was for *Ioseph*; and he fares euery day in the weeke the better for him. But where bad seruants be, there falls the curse of God for the seruants sake, *Gen. 39. 5.*

*Q. But what if the Master teach, and the Seruants will not learne?*

*A.* If the Master do his faithfull endeauour, his conscience is discharged: Man can but perswade, it is God onely that must change the heart. *Noah* preached to his owne familie, as well as to the old world, 120 yeares, and yet when the godly man entered into the Arke, hee had not one godly seruant after all his paines that would enter with him. So *Lot* was a iust & a righteous man, and that had care of his house; yet when he was called out of Sodom, he had not one seruant in all his house, that would go out of Sodom with him.

*Q. What is their second dutie to their seruants?*

*A.* They must cause them to liue peaceably and honestly towards men, not bearing them out in their wrongs, but bridling and restraining them the best they can, *1. Sam. 22. 2.* with *1. Sam. 25. 7.*

*Q. What gather we of this?*

*A. That*

*A.* That as *Dauids* seruants were the better for his seruice, so we should seeke to make our seruants not the worse, but the better for our houses. For what a fearefull saying will it be at the iudgment day, *In such a mans seruice I tooke my bane, I may curse the houre that euer I came into his house, there were my righteousness wounded, and all my graces taken from me.*

*Q.* What is their third dutie to their seruants?

*A.* They must not ouer-labour their seruants, laying more vpon them than their strength will beare. A man would be loath to ouer-worke his beast; how much more his seruant, in whose face hee may see the image of God shining, as well as in his owne, *Iob 31.13.*

*Q.* What is their fourth dutie?

*A.* They must pay them truly for their pains, for the labourer is worthe of his hire, *1. Tim. 5. 10.*

*Q.* What gather we of this?

*A.* That their sinne is great, who send away their seruants emptie after all their toyle. *Laban* is the pattern that such men may be painted by: they can well be content, that their seruants should labour and toyle, and spend out their hearts and strength in their seruice; but care not though they go away without one halfe penie for their paines, *Deut. 11. 13. 14.*

*Q.* What is their fift dutie?

*A.* They must chasten them with discretion and moderation for their faults: for the Lord would not haue the seruants life by any hard dealing of ours to be made wearisome and bitter to them. We read of furious *Saul*, That his spirit was mastring at any little word: and of *Nabal*, so fierce that a man could not speake to him. To the like reproch of those that will heare nothing when they be in heat, but let euery thing flie that first comes to their hands, *Leu. 25. 49.* How many blessings did *Laban* lose, onely by entreating a good seruant ill? This makes our seruants, euen the Iewels of our house, wearie of our seruice.

*Q.* How may they keepe a moderation in their punishments?

*A.* If they looke that the cause be iust. Secondly, That the punishment be equall as may be to the offence, keeping vnder it rather

rather then any whit about it, *Deut. 25. 2. 3.*

*Q. What is their first Dutie to them?*

*A.* They must winke at many slippes, and passe by many faults through loue. For if the Master should take the forfeit of euery offence; he shall neuer liue in any peace, but vex himselfe more then his seruants that offend him, *Eccles. 7. 23.*

*Q. What reason is there to moue vs to this?*

*A.* As they are seruants vnder vs; so we are seruants to a greater Lord. Wherefore, if wee would not haue God take vs at aduantage for euery sinne, wee must not take our seruants short for euery fault, *Ephes. 6. 9.*

*Q. What is their last Duty to their seruants?*

*A.* They must esteeme best of their best seruants, accounting of euery one according to that trust and faithfulness, that they finde in them, as *Cornelius* cast speciall fauour on that souldier that feared God, making him his Iewell and treasure about the rest, *Acts 10. 7.*

*Qu. What is the seruants duty to their Masters?*

*Seruants.*

*A.* Seruants must be obedient to their Masters not their owne men, but liuing wholly at their becke and at their command, as the *Centurion* saith to his seruant, come, and he comes; So when wee say to our seruants, come, they must come, &c. *Ephes. 6. 9.*

*Qu. What is their second Duty?*

*A.* Seruants must be diligent to please their Masters, hauing a tender care, that nothing may slippe through their fingers, which may offend them: They must seeke euen to fit themselves to them (so farre forth) as they may with an vnstained Conscience to the honour, and not whole dishonour of their Masters with whom they dwell, *Tit. 2. 9.*

*Qu. What reason is there to stirre them up to this?*

*A.* In seruing their Masters they serue the Lord Christ. And therefore if a man would bee ashamed to serue Christ slothfully, or idly, or grudgingly, he must be ashamed to serue his Master so, his Master being but Christs deputie, and Lieutenant in the house, *Col. 3. 24.*

*Qu. What is their third Duty?*

*A. They*



*A.* They must not murmur, nor answer againe, when they be reprov'd, but in silence and patience commend their cause to God, *Ti. 2. 9.*

*Q. What is their fourth Duty?*

*A.* They must not filch or purloyn the least point or pinne, nor make haucke, and spoile of their meate, or of any thing else that comes into their hands, *Iob. 6. 12.*

*Q. What is the fift Duty?*

*A.* Seruants must shew all good faithfulness to their Masters, discharging their places with all trust in the places committed to them; not beseeming themselves, whiles their Masters are in sight, and proclayming looseness and libertie when they are gone, but carrying themselves with as great trustiness in their absence, as if they were present with them, *Ephes. 6. 5. 6.*

*Q. What reason is there to bring them to this?*

*A.* To consider, that that which they hide from their Masters they cannot hide from God; for though their Masters see them not, yet God lookes vpon them from heauen with a bright and shining eye, and he sees them maintaining and gaming, and trifling out their time: and therefore when their Masters backe is turned, they must still thinke the Lords backe is not turned vpon them, *Heb. 4. 13.*

*Q. What is their sixth Duty?*

*A.* Seruants must tender the credite of their Masters, burying their private faults within the private walls, by no meanes publishing the secreties of the house, no not then, when they are departed from them, *1. Prov. 11. 13.*

*Q. What is their last Duty?*

*A.* They must settle themselves in their seruice, and not vpon euery light displeasure be sitting to a new. A good seruant is not then going euery day; but is sometimes 20. yeares in a place together, as *Iacob* was: But now in 20. yeares, the greatest part will haue 20. seruices by their Wills, *Gen. 16. 8. 9.*

*Q. What generall reasons are there to edge them on to these Duties?*

*A.* Christian seruants must so behaue themselves, that they may

may be an honour to the Gospell, that as *Potipher* was glad of *Ioseph* : So men may say, there are no such seruants as the seruants of Christ for faithfulness, care, and diligence, and honesty, they may carry the torch vnto all the rest, *1.Tim.6.7.*

*Q. What is the Duty of those that be in office?*

*A.* They must be men of courage, they must not let every officers, bold-face dash them, and beare them downe, but stoutly oppose themselves to the discontinuancing of euery disorder that raignes, *Deut.1.17.*

*Q. What gathere wee of this?*

*A.* That as men with all things were well, so they must haue courage for the truth to oppose themselves against all those that be hinderers of their goods, *Ier.9.3.*

*Q. What is their second Duty?*

*A.* They must bee men fearing God, and therefore they must make a conscience of their Calling, and bee content rather to displease their dearest friend then to displease the Lord; rather to lose mens fauours then Gods: rather the whole world should frowne, then God should frowne vpon them, *2.Chron.*

*89.9.*

*Q. What is the reason hereof?*

*A.* Because this is a great damping, and a great cooling to them that are in place, they dare not execute their office lest men should be angry with them, and therefore Gods feare must be opposed, as a brazen buckler to the feare of men: to thinke that as men will be angry if we doe it; so God will be angry if wee doe it not: as men will vex vs, if wee presse it; so God will vex vs and be terrible and fearefull to our soules if wee presse it not. And who art thou that fearest the face of men, and fearest not the face of the mighty God, who is able with one blast of his mouth to blowe thee into heil, and with the least touch of his finger to fling downe the pillars of heauen and earth about thine eares, *Iob 32.22.*

*Qu. What is their third Duty?*

*A.* They must be men hating couetousnesse, they must not bee so greedily set vpon their gaine, that they will spare neither time nor money to discharge their duties. But they must  
bee

be content many times to passe ouer all regard of themselves, and euen to let their owne businesse sleepe, that the causes of God and the people may be set on foot, *Exod. 18. 21.*

*Qu. What is their fourth Duty?*

*A.* They must not be ready to doe all vpon a braine, but in matters of moment, and beyond their reach bee glad to aduise with those that be wiser and skilfuller then themselves, *Exod. 18. 22.*

*Q. What is their last Duty?*

*A.* They must apply themselves to their office, that is, euer set, and buckle themselves to performe the duties of it, *Heb. 12. 2.*

*Qu. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That they haue much to answer for, who being chosen to the offices of a Towne, sleepe in them, and slubber them ouer they care not how, as if Magistracie were a chaire of ease.

*Q. What is the duty of Primate men?*

*Subiects.*

*A.* They must make choyce of fit and able men to rule among them, *Deut. 1. 13.*

*Qu. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That it is a great sinne to cast our offices wee care not where, neuer regarding the fitnesse and abilitie of the parties that wee name. So we set vp officers in the Church like scarre-crowes in a field, Idoll officers like Idoll shepheards; That haue eyes and see not, eares and heare not, mouthes and speake not against any thing that is amisse.

*Qu. What is their second Duty?*

*A.* They must not shift out themselves from the offices of the Common-weale, or of the Church, finding some reasonable fitnesse in themselves to discharge them: For what is this, but to bury our Talent in a napkin, and deprive our being of all the benefite and comfort of our graces, *Phil. 2. 14.*

*Q. What is their last Duty?*

*A.* They must reuerence and regard those, whom God hath placed in office and authoritie, though otherwise in many respects inferiour to them, *Acts 24. 5.*

*Q. What is the duty of the Pastour of the Church?*

*A. Hee*



*A.* Heemust approue himselfe both to his owne conscience, and to the iudgement of others to bee the Minister of God, 2. *Cor.* 6.8. *Pastors,*

*Q.* What is the Duty of the People to their Pastours?

*A.* They must seeke to haue a godly and a good Minister placed amongst them. *People.*

*Q.* How must wee seeke it?

*A.* By prayer vnto God, that he will raise vp faithfull and good Pastours to his people, *Math.* 9.38.

*Q.* What gather wee by this?

*A.* That their fault is exceeding great, who content themselves with that weake ministrie which they haue, are not oft vpon their knees, and doe not labour carefull in their places to set vp a sufficient and an able man amongst them.

*Q.* What is their second Duty?

*A.* They must pray for their good Ministers, that God would poure grace into their lips, and wisdom into their hearts, that they may speake the word faithfully and feelingly to the people. For as when *Moses* hands fell downe, *Aaron* and *Hur* helpt to beare them vp: So when the good *Moses* of our land waxe weary in their labours, and are out of heart; by the Prayers of Gods people, they must be strengthened in their Ministry and cheared vp againe, *Col.* 5.3.4.

*Q.* What is their third Duty?

*A.* They must loue the Ministers of the Word, and that not with ordinarie and common loue, such as they bestowe vpon euery one; But with singular loue about the rest, 1. *Thess.* 5.13.

*Q.* What is the reason hereof?

*A.* Men loue them best, which wish them best: But none wish vs more good then the good Ministers; For they would haue vs to be all saued; to be Kings in the new Ierusalem, and to sit crowned in glorie with Christ vpon his throne, for this they labour, and watch and spend their strength, caring more for vs then we care for our selues, and therefore they deserue to be loued in an high degree, *Gal.* 4.15.

*Q.* What is their fourth Duty?

*E*

*A.* They

*A.* They must reuerence the Ministers of the Gospell, hauing them in good reckoning, and in good regard, not accounting of them, as the prophane sort doe, as of the basest and meanest in the world, *Leu. 21.8. 2. Cor. 3.9.*

*Q. What Ministers are most to be esteemed?*

*A.* Ministers are more or lesse to be accounted of according to the benefite, which the Church receiuerh by them. And likewise, they are to bee had in greatest regard, who haue laboured most for the profiting of the people, *2. Cor. 11.23.*

*Q. What are the helpes and meanes to continue vs in this good course?*

*Helpe to a Holy life.*

*1  
Diligence.*

*A.* The first helpe, is diligence, when a man bestirs himselfe in goodnesse, and pursueth religion euen at the heeles, labouring in it notably, and sweating about his soule. And therefore Christianity is commonly compared to an Occupation or a Trade, because there is no good to be done in it, vnlesse it bee thoroughly applied, *2. Pet. 1.10.*

*Q. What is the reason hereof?*

*A.* Because a man goes no further in Christianity, then hee driues forward his soule, and luggs it on. And therefore if hee once slacke his paines; let him looke also that his loue, and his zeale will quickly slake.

*Q. What learne we by this?*

*A.* That they who content themselues with a cold profession of the Gospell, and to goe along in Religion for company sake, and doe not gird their loynes, and set themselues vnto it seriously, shall neuer attaine to any soundnesse in it, *Thou.*

*13.4.*

*Q. What is the second Helpe?*

*2  
Graces nourished.*

*A.* To nourish our graces, and to plie the fire of the Spirit, that it goe not out so soone as we feelee any declyning of our state, as coldnesse in prayer, deadnesse of heart, wearinesse in good duties; not to let the disease to grow, but immediately to labour thereforming of it, *Heb. 12.13.*

*Q. Declare this more fully?*

*A.* As a man feeling the grudging of an Ague, seekes to meete with it, and to preuent it before it come: So when wee feelee

feele any declýning of our state, a fit and a pang of sinne, wee must gather vp our selues from that wearinesse and deadnesse, and coldnesse that is growne vpon vs.

*Q. What is the third Helpe?*

*A.* To set a watch ouer all our life: to looke that we speak nothing, but what God would haue vs speake, and that wee thinke nothing, but that which God would haue vs thinke and doe. And that we haue the Lords word, and the Lords Warrant for euery thing that we take in hand, *Psal. 39. 1.*

<sup>3</sup>  
To watch our  
Life.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they who let their liues runne at randome, they care not how, and doe not first consider before they doe any thing, what God would haue them doe; and before they deale in any businesse, how God would haue them deale; and before they say any thing, what God would haue them say, must needs offend exceedingly.

*Q. What is the fourth Helpe?*

*A.* To trie our state daily; how we come forward, what gaine we make, and whether our profite be answerable to our time, and to our Ministers paines, how sinne dyeth in vs, what corruptions are yet strong, and what paines wee take for the weakening of them; This will comfort vs and encourage vs forward, if we haue done well, and make vs ashamed of our sloth, if we be not the better by our meanes, *2. Cor. 13. 5.*

<sup>4</sup>  
Daily Trial.

*Q. What is the fift Helpe?*

*A.* Reading of the Scriptures priuately as often as we can, though it be the lesse, and that which we want at one time to supply it another, so that wee bee constant in our course, *Ioh. 1. 8.*

<sup>5</sup>  
Scriptures reading.

*Q. How may wee read the Scriptures with profite?*

*A.* First, if wee remember it is God that speakes in the Scripture, and therefore when we open the Bible, we doe open the mouth of the blessed God to speake vnto vs; So that when we come to reade, we may say as *Samuel* saith, *Speake Lord for thy seruant heareth*, *2. Pet. 1. 21.*

How to reade  
with profite.

Secondly, if we thinke that God comes not to talke with vs of trifles, for this becometh not the Maiestie of God; but hee



comes to speake with vs of matters of great moment, & of great weight, of such as concerne the euerlasting welfare of our soules, and therefore we are to quicken vp our selues in the hearing of him, *Dent. 32.47.*

Thirdly, if we thinke that there is neuer a word that God speakes in vaine, but it hath something for our instruction and good, if we could take it; And therefore when we reade without profite, we may say; *Lord, that God should talke so long with my soule, and I neuer the better for it, Rom. 15.4.*

Fourthly, if we apply the Scriptures to our selues, not reading them as strange stories that concerne vs not: But to think that we shall finde him the same God to vs in our troubles, prayers, sinnes, and repentance, which *Abraham*, and *David* and *Iob*, and *Iacob* haue found him before vs, *Iam. 5. 11.*

Fifthly; if wee insist, and dwell longest vpon those places which meet most with our corruptions.

Sixtly, if wee meditate of it afterwards, and lay vp that which wee vnderstand, and aske of that which wee doe not, *Acts 8.34.* Praying to make it profitable.

Qu. *What is the sixt Helpe?*

6  
Marking Particulars.

A. To reade twice or thrice in a weeke, as our leisure will afford those places of Scripture, which concerne our particular calling; to consider with what faithfulness we haue walked in the duties that are there commanded. As he that is a seruant to peruse those Scriptures, that lay downe the duty of a Seruant: and he that is a Master those places that describe the duties of a Master. This will bee a great aduantage to godlinesse, to haue the Lord so often calling vs, and ringing dutie continually in our eares, *Dent. 17.18.19.*

Qu. *What is the seventh Helpe?*

7  
Meditation on good things.

A. To be alwayes meditating on good things, and set the minde on worke in holy thoughts, especially to consider the cursed estate of the wicked to auoide it, and the happie estate of the godly, and to be heartened to the like, *Psal. 119.97.*

Q. *What difference is there betweene the state of the godly, and of the wicked.*

A. Great difference while they liue, but greater when they die:

die: For the godly die like lambes, they make a sweet close: they fall asleepe in the armes of Christ; Whereas the wicked die like hogges, that goe grunting and whyning to their death: so they struggle for lie, and sticke to the world, and are loth to die, *Numb. 23. 10.*

*Q. What is the eighth Helpe?*

*A.* To make an holy vse of our Troubles, to remember they are as whippes in the hand of God to scourge vs home to him, *Psal. 119. 67.* 8  
*Affliction  
Sanctified.*

*Qu. How is this declared?*

*A.* By a Similitude: For if a sheepe runne from his fellows, the sheeheard sets forth his dogge after him, yet not meaning to weary the sheepe but to hunt him home to the flocke againe. So when we wander astray away from God, the great sheeheard of our soules sets out his dogge after vs, sometimes po- uerty, sometimes sicknesse, sometimes dearth of corne to chase vs from our sinnes, and to driue vs to God againe.

*Qu. What is the ninth Helpe?*

*A.* To bring our selues oft in remembrance of the vowes and couenants which we haue made with God, and to call vp- on our selues for the performing of them: For if it be dishonest to breake with men, how much more if wee shall not keepe touch with God, *Psal. 66. 13. 14.* 9  
*Remembrance  
of vowes and  
Covenants.*

*Q. What is the tenth Helpe?*

*A.* To vse the company of the godly, that we may bee the better by it, *Psal. 119. 63.* 10  
*Communion of  
Saints.*

*Q. What good is gotten by it?*

*A.* First, Wee are thereby prouoked to bee like them: As *Saul* a wicked man falling into the company of the Prophets, and seeing how godly they spent their time, was made ashamed of his owne life, and began to prophesie with them, *1. Sam.*

*19. 24.*

Secondly, we haue our benefite in all their gifts; wee are the wiser for their wisdom, and their zeale kindles ours, as one candle lights another, *Prov. 13. 20.*

Thurldy, we are therby kept in some compasse, and our cor- ruptions nipt in the head, that they dare not stirre, *Iosh. 24. 31.*

Fourthly, we fare the better many times for their sakes; God revealing that to them, which he would not haue done to vs,  
2. Kings 3. 14.

*Q. What is the eleuenth Helpe?*

11  
withstanding  
Lettes.

*A.* To withstand and auoyd all the lettes which may stop and hinder vs in our Christian courses, be it pleasure or proficte, or company or friend, away with euery thing that may hinder vs from Christ, *Math. 5. 29.*

*Q. What is the last Helpe?*

12  
Daily Practise.

*A.* To bring this to euery dayes practise, that our whole life may be nothing else, but a walking with God, and a continuall iourneying towards our heavenly home, *1. Tim. 4. 7.*

*Q. What is required in the daily Practise?*

*A.* First a certaine Preparation to the day, and then the holy spending of the day it selfe.

*Q. Why is the Preparation needfull?*

*A.* Because as a man in time of a common plague taketh somewhat in the morning next his heart to keepe out the infection; So the world being mightily poysoned with sinne, the Christian must lay some good thing next his heart, else euery thing that he deales in will infect him, *Psal. 119. 148.*

*Q. What is the first thing wherewith wee must begin the day?*

Daily Practise  
how?

*A.* Wee must seek to awake with God, to haue our mindes running on him, as soone as we looke vp; For wee cannot awake so soone, but with Gods Blessing, and Gods Mercyes be vp afore vs: And therefore let God be in the beginning of our thoughts, and let him haue the first place in the day, *Marke 1. 35.*

*Q. What are wee then to consider of?*

*A.* That wee haue slept more sweetly vnder the Lords defence, then if we had had Iron walls, and Brazen doores to defend vs: When we were fast asleepe and could not watch our selues; then the Lord watched ouer vs, and he set a guard of Angels to keepe vs. And therefore seeing we haue rested with such safetie vnder Gods defence, let vs thanke him for his mercy, and seek to diue vnder the wing of the Almighty, and



to goe shadowed with the hand of his protection all the day,  
*Psal. 17. 8.*

*Qu. What are wee to consider else?*

*A.* That we rise the seruants of God, as wee went to bed ; and therefore, that wee must spend the day in his seruice, not in doing what we list, but in performing those duties that hee requireth. For seeing this is the cause why we were borne, and why God lets vs liue here in this world, that wee may serue him : Wee are to thinke euery morning when we rise, that God lets vs liue one day more, but to haue one dayes seruice more at our hands : and if he let vs liue another day, it is but to haue another dayes seruice at our hands. Therefore, as our seruants get vp to doe our businelle, so must we rise to doe the Lords,  
*1. Cor. 15. 34.*

*Qu. What are wee to doe then?*

*A.* Then we are to take a view of our worke, to cast in our heads, what are the dayes wherein we must spend the day; The consideration of our owne state and calling will soone lead vs to this ; For many times we are to thinke, I am a Christian, and therefore I must spend this day like a Christian ; I am a Father, and therefore I must performe the duties of a Father : I am a Preacher or a Master or a Seruant, &c. *Luke 14. 28.*

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That it is not possible for those simple soules to liue well, which know not what are the particular duties which their owne place and calling require at their hands. For how can they spend the day Christian-like, that know not what Christianitie meanes? And how can they liue like Fathers, that know not what belongs to the duty of a father? And therefore euery one that will liue well, must haue at his fingers ends the draught of duties mentioned before, *Ephes. 4. 18.*

*Qu. And may wee then safely enter vpon the day?*

*A.* No in no wise, till our spirituall furniture be on, and we haue taken vnto vs the whole armour of God, without the which wee enter into the world like a naked man into the field: And therefore when our cloathes goe on, then let vs remember to put on our vertues to, *Eph. 6. 13.*

*Q. What are the parts of this Armour?*

*A. The Parts are 6.*

*Daily Armour.*

First, *Sinceritie*, and a faithfull and a true heart to God; that we make not shew of more then wee haue, but seeke that our inward care, zeale, loue of God, may be answerable to that which we outwardly professe.

Secondly, *Righteousnesse*, and an vpright and honest minde to our brethren, that whatsoeuer of theirs shall come into our hands, shall passe in peace and safetie as good as it came.

Thirdly, *Preparation for afflictions*, to be readie to lay down our liues and all we haue at the feet of Christ, and to vndergoe patiently those troubles which the euill of these euill dayes shall cast vpon vs.

Fourthly, *Faith*, to perswade our selues, that God is at peace with vs in Christ, and therefore that he will bleise vs, and bee with vs in all our paines.

Fifthly, *Knowledge of Gods will*, to direct vs what wee haue to doe, and to beate backe the sundrie temptations that shall see vpon vs.

Sixthly, *Prayer in the spirit*, and seruent and earnest prayer vnto God, that he will be with vs, and leade vs throughout the day, and enable vs by his power to discharge in some measure, the duties that are layd vpon vs.

*Q. Yea, but poore men will say they haue no time no pray?*

*A. They might rather say, they haue no will to pray; For they that can finde alwaies time to eate in their greatest businesse, would sure finde a time to pray, if they minded God, as they minde their meate. Againe, when they haue most businesse, it is but rising a quarter of an houre sooner. Little doe they care for Gods blessing, that will not take so little paines to haue it.*

*Q. How is the Christian to spend the day?*

*Day spending.  
Lords day.*

*A. If the day bee a Sabbath day, wee must set our selues wholly apart for the Lord, we must not let any worldly businesse take vs up, but resort diligently to the Ministry of the word, *Isay 58.13.**

*Q. What are wee to doe as we come?*

*A. Wee*

*A.* Wee are to thinke with our selues whether wee are going: we are going into Gods presence; into the presence of that Maiestie that is greater then all the Kings and Princes of the world; and therefore with what feare and reuerence should we come into his sight, at whose feet all the Kings in the world must cast downe their Crownes, and the Angels stand with couered faces, as not being able to behold the excellent glorie that shineth in him, *Eccles. 4. 17.*

*Q.* What are we to doe when we are come?

*A.* Then we must attend with care and conscience to the Ministry of the word of God, remembring, that though the voyce be the voyce of a man: yet the word is the word of God, and therefore we may not let it fall to the ground, but set open all the doores of our hearts, that it may haue free accesse, and entrance to worke vpon vs, *1. Thess. 2. 13.*

*Q.* What are we to doe after?

*A.* Wee are to lift vp our hearts with great thankfulnesse to God for the good things that we haue heard; and then wee are to examine our selues what we haue profited, what wee know now which we knew not before: what vertue is strengthened; what vice is weakened in vs, and when we goe home, then we must remember, that we talke (as the two Disciples did of Iesus Christ.) We must not runne out into the world, and speech of worldly matters, so soone as we be come out of the Church; but then meditate with our selues, or conferre with others of that which we haue heard, *Acts 8. 39.*

*Q.* What are we to doe when we are come home?

*A.* To call our Children and our seruants to account, to see what profite they haue made of the day, and to spend the rest of the day in reading and in praying, in comforting the sicke. This is to sanctifie a Sabbath to the Lord.

*Q.* What if the day be a working day, how are we to spend it then?

*A.* If the day be a working day, then after prayer is performed, we are to set vpon the duties of our Calling cheerefully, and to walke in them with such faithfullnesse and trust, that wee may approue of our care and good conscience, not onely



onely to men, but to the Lord himselfe.

*Q. What is the second thing?*

*A.* Wee must looke that our godly care in the meane while be not layd asleep, but euen in the midst of our businesse, lift vp our mindes to God, and craue his blessing vpon euery thing, that we take in hand, and many times in the day thanke him for his goodnesse reioycing in him, as in the greatest portion and treasure that we haue, *Prou. 3. 6.*

*Qu. What is the third thing?*

*A.* Our next care must be, that we vse well our lawfull liberties, which God hath giuen vs for the comfort of our life, that we exceed not in our apparell, going beyond our abilitie, or those bounds which modestie hath set vs; Then that we exceed not in our meates and drinckes, feeding either too daintily, or too cormorantly on those meane dishes which wee haue. Thirdly, that we exceed not in our mirth, either in immoderate lightnesse, or babishly reioycing in things which we ought not. And lastly, that we spend no more time idle, then may serue to refresh vs.

*Q. What is the fourth thing?*

*A.* Care must be had, that we hurt not our brethren in their bodyes, goods, or names, or any thing belonging to them, but that we be helpfull and comfortable to them all the wayes wee may; That we commend their estate by earnest prayer vnto God, that we labour for the recouering of them in their falls: that we stirre them vp as we are able, to good things: that wee oppress them not, deceiue them not, &c.

*Q. What is the last thing?*

*A.* For the better performing of all these duties, we are to vse the meanes that God hath giuen vs, as daily prayer, reading of the Scriptures: trying of our estate, &c. And though wee cannot vse all these euery day: yet to vse so many of them, as conueniently we may, and to adde the rest as our leisure and opportunitie will afford: This is an holy and a Christian-like spending of the day, wherein a man may rest with peace, assuring himselfe, that he leades a life in some measure pleasing to God.

*Q. What*

*Q. What are wee to doe at night?*

*A.* When the night is come, then we are to looke backe, and to marke how we haue spent the day: then wee must call our selues to a reckoning, and an account, how wee walked in the duties of our Calling: then how wee haue behaued our selues towards God: towards our brethren: towards our selues. If we finde that we haue spent it well, then to blesse God, and to thanke him for it; if not, then to be humbled by it, and to seeke to God for comfort and grace, that we may lie downe in his fauour, and make an end of all after-reckonings.

*Qu. For further practise of Religion; What is to bee done?*

*A.* Wee must see what is to be believed, and practise the *The Creede.* same: The somme whereof is contained in the *Apostles Creede.*

*Q. Why is it called the Apostles Creede?*

*A.* Nor, that the *Apostles* made it; for then it should bee Canonically Scripture, as well as the rest of their Writings: But because it contains the summe of the *Apostles* doctrine.

*Q. How many parts hath the Creede?*

*A.* Two,  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{The first treateth of God.} \\ \text{The second of the Church.} \end{array} \right\}$

*Qu. What is the somme of the Crede?*

*A.* Wee professe therein, that we beleue in God, distinct in three Persons, The Father, the Sonne, and the Holy Ghost. And that this God hath gathered to himselfe a Church; that is, A company of faithfull people, vpon whom hee will bestowe his graces in this world, and the glory of his Kingdome in the world to come.

*Q. What is it to beleue in God?*

*A.* Not barely to beleue that there is a God, ( for the Deuils doe so, and tremble, ) and if this were our faith, our faith were no better then the deuills faith, and therefore to beleue in God, is to put our whole trust in God, and rest our selues vpon him in all estates, to bee assured in our hearts, wee shall finde him a God, that is mercifull and good to vs in all our needs, *2. Tim. 1. 12.*

*Q. What gather we of this?*

*A. That*

*A.* That they who are cleane out of heart in their troubles, be they neuer so great, or seeke to winde out of themselves by vnlawfull meanes, they care not how, doe not beleue in God. And therefore so oft as they say the Creed they lye; because they say they Trust in him; when indeed they are not inwardly perswaded that he will helpe them.

*Qu.* How many kindes of faith bee there?

*An Historicall faith,* which the deuills may haue, *Iam. 2. 19.*

*A.* Two, } Secondly, *Iustifying or sauing faith*, which none but the true Christians, and Gods elect may haue, *Ti. 1. 1.*

*Q.* What difference is there betweene these two?

*A.* The deuills beleue that there is a God; that there is a Christ; But they doe not beleue that they shall fare the better for him. Nay, they know that he shall one day condemne them, and therefore their faith doth not comfort them, but make them the more affraid. But the Christian beleeueth that there is a God, that there is a Christ; beleueth also that he shall fare the better by them: that God will be his God, and Christ the Sauiour, will be a Sauiour as his Sauiour. And therefore this faith is so farre from affrighting him, that it comforts him exceedingly, *Gal. 2. 20.*

*Q.* Why doe wee say, *I beleene*, not *wee beleene*, as *wee say*, *our Father*?

*A.* Because our prayers may be profitable vnto others. But our faith shall not saue any but our selues, *Abac. 2. 4.*

*Q.* May a man know that he hath faith?

*Faith.*

*A.* Hee may; for hee that beleueth in God hath faith: But euery man, if hee would search himselfe and his owne heart, can tell whether he repose trust and confidence in God or no: And therefore euery man if hee would search himselfe can tell, whether he haue faith or no, *2. Cor. 13. 1.*

*Q.* If a Christian may bee sure that he hath Faith: then he may be sure of his saluation?

*A.* It is true; For hee that beleueth in the Sonne of God, he shall be saued, *Iohn 3. 36.* But I know that I beleue in God, and



and therefore warranted by Gods promise, I know that I shall be saved, *1. Iohn 5. 13.*

*Q. Doe not many deceive themselves in their assurance?*

*A.* Surely many doe; because they think they haue faith, but when it comes to scanning it is not faith, but a vizard, and a shadow of it: like one that keepes an old Euidence by him, and thinks his land is sure: But when it comes to tryall, his deed is naught, and will not carry it.

*Q. How may a man know that he hath true faith?*

*A.* Two wayes,  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{By the Nature of Faith.} \\ \text{And by the effects and frutes of it.} \end{array} \right.$

*Q. How may a man know it by the nature of Faith?*

*A.* If a man feele himselfe inwardly perswaded in his heart, that God loues him in Christ, and because he loues him, will provide him of all things needfull both for this life, and for the life to come, so that wee run not out to any wicked and vnlawfull meanes, but rest our selues on God with contentment in all estates. This is a sure note, that his faith is true, *Iob*

*23. 15.*

*Q. How may a man know it by the effects of Faith?*

*A.* If a man haue an earnest loue to God, so that he be glad to doe any thing that may please him, and loath to doe the least thing that may displease him. Secondly, if he loue them that loue the Lord, so much the more they shew the more affection to him; This scaleth to his soule that his faith is true, *1. Iohn*

*3. 14.*

*Q. Why doe wee say, I beleue in God, not I beleue in the Catholike Church?*

*A.* Because we must beleue in God, and in none but God, not in Saints, not in Angels, nor in any other power, *Ierem.*

*17. 5.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That as we beleue in God, and in none but God: so we must pray to God and to none but God. For prayer and faith be linked together: So that we may not pray to any, in whom we may not beleue, *Rom. 10. 14.* And therefore seeing we may not beleue in the Saints, but in God alone, it is euident,

dent, that wee may not pray to any but to God alone.

*Q. Who is this God in whom wee beleene?*

*A.* The three Diuine Persons, the *Father*, the *Sonne*, and the *Holy Ghost*.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That the Turkes and Iewes, though they confesse that there is a God: yet because they doe not confesse the three diuine Persons, acknowledge not the true God: the true God being hee, whom the Scriptures describe the *Father*, the *Sonne*, and the *Holy Ghost*, *1. Iohn 2. 23.*

*Q. Whose Father is God?*

*A.* He is the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ: And then by meanes of Christ, he is our Father, *Ioh. 20. 17.*

*Q. What is the meaning, when wee say, we beleene in God the Father?*

God the Father.

*A.* Wee professe thereby, that whereas God the Father was displeased with vs for our sinnes, now he is reconciled to vs in the blood of Christ, so that we dare boldly trust him with our whole state, and perswade our selues, that as wee call him Father, so we shall finde him a Father, euen most tender, and fatherly affections in him.

*Q. Wherein are wee to perswade our selues wee shall finde him a father?*

*A.* First, as a Father feeds his children, and clowthes them, and prouides things needfull for them, though happily they deserue it not. So we are to perswade our selues that God being become our gracious, and good Father in Christ, will feed vs, cloathe vs, and prouide for vs, though wee deserue it not, *Math. 6. 31.*

Secondly, as a father turnes not his children out of doores for euery fault. So wee must not thinke God will cast vs off for euery sinne, if there bee any hope of amendment in vs, *Iohn 8. 31.*

Thirdly, as a father makes his sonne his heire, and leaues him his lands and his liuing: though hee keepe him short and vnder for a time. So howsoeuer our portion bee but small in this world: yet we are to beleue, God will make vs his heires, and

and one day bestow his Crowne and Kingdome on vs, Luke

12.32.

*Q. What are wee to beleue concerning God the Father?*

*A.* First, that he is *Almighty*.

*A.* Two things, *Secondly*, that hee *Created Heauen and Earth*.

*Q. How is God said to be Almighty?*

*A.* Two wayes: first because hee hath all might, and all *Almighty*. power in his hand, and is able to doe whatsoeuer hee will in Heauen and in Earth, no power being able to hinder his work, and to hold out against him, *Psal. 114.3.*

*Q. God cannot doe all things, for hee cannot sinne?*

*A.* It is true, that God cannot doe any thing that is contrary to his Nature to doe, *Heb. 6.18.* hee cannot lye, *2.Tim. 2.13.* hee cannot denie his word, and yet he is Almighty: Because these things imply not power, but want of power.

*Q. What meane wee when wee say: Wee beleue in God Almighty?*

*A.* We beleue not onely that God is Almighty in himselfe, but that he is Almighty for our good, and wee shall feelee the benefite of that Almightye, and infinite power that is in him.

*Q. What vse may wee make of this?*

*A.* It serueth to strengthen our faith, not only concerning the things of this life, but also of the life to come.

*Q. How for the things of this life?*

*A.* Seeing God is Almighty; that is, able to do all things: Wee know we are neuer so poore, but God is able to enrich vs, neuer so lowe, but God is able to exalt vs; neuer so heavy, but God is able to reioyce vs; neuer so entangled, but God is able to loose vs, *Rom. 4.21.*

*Q. How for the things of the life to come?*

*A.* Seeing God is Almighty, wee know, that though our weakenesse be great, and our corruptions many: yet God is able to carrie vs comfortably through the vast and warring Wildernesse of this world into the land of happinesse, and eternall rest, *Ioh. 10.29.*

*Q. How*



*Qu. How is God secondly said to be Almighty?*

*A.* Because all the might and power that is in any of the creatures is from God, the least thing in the world being not able to moue it selfe, but by the strength and power which it hath from God.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That the Sparrow lights not on the ground: that a hayre falls not from the head: that a leafe dropps not from the tree, but it is ordered and disposed by the mighty hand of God, *Math. 20. 29. 30.*

*Q. Doth nothing then happen by fortune and chance?*

*A.* Surely no: these are tearmes brought in to robbe God of his glorie in the government of the world. For euer, that which seemes to be most casuall, is caried wholly by a secret hand of God, *Prou. 16. 33.*

*Q. What vse may we make of this?*

*A.* First, it will teach vs patience: For seeing all things are wrought by the hand of God; we make our account that sicknesse, losses, miseries, they are all from God, and therefore must be borne contentedly, vnlesse in the pride of our hearts, we will lift vp our selues against the Lord, *2. Sam. 16. 10.*

*Qu. What is the second vse?*

*A.* It will teach vs comfort; for seeing nothing is able to lift vp it selfe without the Lord, wee are to make our account, that a dogge cannot wagge his tongue, a wicked man cannot mooue his hand against vs without his leaue and licence, who is our Father, *Ioh. 19. 11.*

*Q. What is the third vse?*

*A.* It will teach vs thankfulnesse: For seeing it is God that worketh all in all; it is God alone, who is to bee blessed for all the comforts that we haue, because it is he that inclineth mens hearts to vs, and causeth this or that thing to doe vs good, *1. Sam. 25. 32.*

*Q. Why is God called the Creatour of Heauen and Earth?*

*A.* Because he made Heauen and Earth of nothing, all the power in this world, being not able to worke, vnlesse it haue some matter to worke vpon, *Heb. 11. 31.*

*Creators of  
Heauen and  
Earth.*

*Q. How*

*Q. How did God Create the world?*

*A.* Wee must not thinke that the Lord lay labouring and toying at it, as wee see men doe, when they build an house, but as *Psalm* 35.6. by the word of God were the Heavens made,&c.

*Q. What is meant by Heauen and Earth?*

*A.* By heauen is meant Heauen, and euery Creature in Heauen, and by Earth is meant the Earth, and all things in it: so that the meaning inoceed is, that God created all.

*Q. What learne we by this?*

*A.* That if wee haue any comfort in any thing in this world; in the earth that beares vs, in the heauens that couer vs: in the fire that warmes vs, in the water that cooles vs: in our eyes that wee see with, in our eares that wee heare with, in our legges that wee goe with; God alone is to be thanked and blessed for it.

*Q. Why is Heauen set before Earth?*

*A.* Heauen is mentioned first, to teach man to seeke it first, and to begin our worke at heauen, as God begun.

*Q. What use may wee make of this?*

*A.* Hee that made all, is able to destroy all. And therefore in a moment God is able to strip and turne the wealthiest of vs out of all wee haue.

*Q. What is the next Person we must beleue in?*

*A.* In Iesus CHRIST.

*Q. What doth he Creed teach vs concerning Christ?*

*And in Iesus Christ.*

*A.* Two things,  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \text{What his Person is.} \\ 2. \text{What his Office is.} \end{array} \right\}$

His office is set  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \text{By the Titles.} \\ 2. \text{By the actions of it.} \end{array} \right\}$   
our two wayes,

*Qu. What is the first Title?*

*A.* Iesus, which signifieth a Sauour, according to *Matth.* 1. 21. Thou shalt call his name Iesus.

*Qu. What doth hee saue vs from?*

*A.* From sinne and the punishments thereof.

*Q. How doth hee saue vs from sinne?*

*A.* By deliuering vs from the guiltinelle of sinne, *1. Iohn*

1.7. And secondly by freeing vs from the power of sinne, that it raigne not in vs, *Ioh. 8. 24.*

*Q. How doth Christ saue vs from the punishment of sinne?*

*A.* First, by deliuering vs from the wrath of God, that was kindled against vs, *1. Theff. 1. 10.*

Secondly, by deliuering vs from the clamours and cryes of our owne guiltie conscience, which continually accuseth vs, *Rom. 5. 1.*

Thirdly, by deliuering vs from the paines of Hell, *Rom. 8. 1.*

Fourthly, by deliuering vs from the power of the Deuill, who before ruled vs as a Lord, *Heb. 2. 14.*

*Q. What is the meaning then of these words; I beleue in Iesus?*

*A.* The meaning is, that I beleue, there is a life and Salvation in Iesus Christ for all that come vnto him: And that as he is *Iesus*; so I shall finde him a *Iesus*, that is, a Sauour to saue me from sinne, and all the punishments due to it: So that though I be a sinner; yet through the Spirit of Christ working in me, I shall sinne euery day lesse then other; and through the Lords mercy, I shall not come into condemnation for any of those sinnes, which through frailty and weakenesse I commit.

*Q. What is the second title of our Saviour?*

*A.* Hee is called Christ, who was annoynted, and it is the same that *Messias* is in Hebrew, *Ioh. 4. 25.*

*Q. How was Christ annoynted?*

*A.* Not with bodily oyle, as the Kings and Priests, and Prophets were in the old Law, but with the holy Ghost, the Spirit of God without measure being poured on him, *Acts 10. 38.*

*Q. Whereunto was Christ annoynted with the holy Ghost.*

*A.* To bee the King, the Priest, and Prophet to his Church.

*Q. Why is Christ said to bee the King of the Church?*

*A.* Because it is gouerned by the Law of Christ, and secondly, because it is defended by his power against the rage of the deuill, of sinne, and of all the enemies that oppose it, *Luk. 11. 22. 33.*

*Q. Why*



*Q. Why is Christ said to be the Priest of the Church?*

*A.* First, because he hath made an attonement for it, offering vp his owne Body vpon the Altar of the Crosse. And secondly, because he maketh intercession in Heauen, continually intreating God for the peace and safetie of it, *Heb. 24. 25.*

*Q. Why is Christ said to be the Prophet of the Church?*

*A.* Because hee hath reuealed the royall will of God vnto his people. Sometimes by his owne mouth, and sometime by the ministry of the Prophets and the Apostles, fitted and enabled by his Spirit thereunto, *Acts 3. 22.*

*Q. What is the meaning then of these words, I beleue in Christ?*

*A.* The meaning is, I beleue that our Sauiour Christ is the true *Messias*, the Lords annoynted, hee that was ordained of God to bee the *King*, *Priest*, and *Prophet* of our Church, the King to rule it, the Priest to purge it, and the Prophet to teach it.

*Q. Why are wee called Christians?*

*A.* Wee are called Christians of Christ, because all true Christians are members of Christ, and in some measure partakers of his annoynting, so that wee are Kings and Priests, and Prophets too, *Acts 11. 26.*

*Q. How are all true Christians Kings?*

*A.* They are Kings ouer their owne hearts to command them of God, and ouer their owne corrupt affections to subdue them, and keepe them vnder that they raigne not in them, *Rom. 1. 6.* Secondly, because all the comforts of this life, and the life to come belong vnto them.

*Qu. How are they Priests?*

*A.* They are Priests to offer vp their owne bodyes and soules by holy seruice vnto God. And secondly to intreate God for themselves and their brethren, *1. Pet. 2. 5.*

*Q. How are they Prophets?*

*A.* They are prophets both to stand out vnto the death for the maintainance of the truth, and also to teach that which they know to others that knew it not, *Acts 2. 17.*

*Qu. What thinke you of those who doe not so?*

*A.* Howsoever they carry the name of Christians, yet indeed they be none, but meeke hypocrites and dissemblers; whatsoever they pretend.

*Q.* What are wee to beleene concerning the Person of Christ?

*A.* Wee are to beleene } 1. That hee is very God.  
two things, } 2. That hee is very man.

*Q.* How doth the Creed shew him to be God?

*A.* First, because he is the Sonne of God. For as hee that is the Sonne of naturall man, must needs be a man: So he that is the naturall Sonne of God, must needs be God. And therefore he is called *the mighty God, Isay 9.6. the blessed God, Rom. 9.6. and the true God, 1 Ioh. 5.20.*

*Q.* Why was it needfull that Christ should be God?

*A.* Hee that must redeeme vs, must beare the infinite wrath of God. But no creature in Heauen or Earth, was able to beare the infinite wrath of God, and to rise vnder it. And therefore none but God was able to redeeme vs, *Iob 9.13.*

*Qu.* What is the second Reason?

*A.* That the death of Christ might be of infinite value, and of infinite price to redeeme vs. For it was more that God was scourged: that God was nayled to the Crosse: that God was killed for vs, then if all the Angels and men in the world had suffered, *Act. 20.28.*

*Qu.* What gather wee of this, that Christ is God?

*A.* That if Adam being but a man was able to condemne vs; much more Christ being God, is able to saue vs, *Rom. 5.17.*

*Qu.* How is Christ said to be the onely Sonne of God, seeing all the faithfull are so also?

*Onely Sonne.*

*A.* Christ is the onely Sonne of God by Nature, and wee are the sonnes of God by Adoption and Grace: Christ is the Sonne of God; because he was borne of God: And we be the sonnes of God, because it pleaseth God in fauour to accept vs for his sonnes, *Psal. 81.5.*

*Qu.* What is the second Title, whereby it is shewed that Christ is God?

*A.* In

*A.* In that hee is called our Lord. For God is our onely Lord, *Deut. 8. 14.* and therefore seeing he must bee acknowledged to be our Lord: he must also bee acknowledged to bee our God, *Ioh. 20. 28.* *Our Lord.*

*Q. Why is Christ called our Lord?*

*A.* Because the godly ones are ruled by him, the wicked euer labouring to shake off their yoke, *Luk. 19. 14.*

Secondly, because he ruleth for our good, wee hauing the whole fruite and benefite of his gouernment in the world, *Deut. 33. 26.*

*Q. What is the meaning then of these words; I beleue in Iesus Christ our Lord?*

*A.* I beleue that he was but a bare man: but the Sonne of God, that came to redeeme the world, euen he that rulerh with all power, both in Heauen and in Earth; and therefore is most mighty to saue all those, who by true faith flie vnto him.

*Qu. Why was it needfull that Christ should bee man?*

*A.* Because he could not suffer in his diuine Nature. First, and therefore vntill he had taken vpon him the weak nature of man; he could not haue suffered for vs, *1. Tim. 1. 17.*

Secondly, because man had sinned; and therefore it was needfull that man should suffer for sinne, *Heb. 2. 16.*

Thirdly, that he might be the more pittitull and tender to vs, hauing felt in himselfe the many weakneses and infirmities, that our nature is subiect to, *Heb. 2. 17.*

*Q. How did Christ become man?*

*A.* He was conceived by the Holy Ghost, borne of the Virgin Mary.

*Q. How was he conceived by the Holy Ghost?*

*A.* The holy Ghost sanctified the flesh of the Virgin, and therefore created the Body of Christ without mans helpe, *Luk. 1. 35.*

*Conceined by  
the Holy Ghost.*

*Q. Why was he so conceived?*

*A.* That he might be pure from originall sinne in his conception, *Heb. 7. 26.*

*Q. Why was he borne of a Virgin?*

*A.* That his strange birth might moue men to looke for some

*Borne of the  
Virgin Mary.*



Some strange worke at his hands, *Isa. 7. 14.*

*Q. What Heretiques are rebuked by this Article?*

*A. Simon Magus Schollers, who denied that Christ was come in the flesh, and therefore are called Antichrists, 1. John 4. 3.*

Secondly, the *Valentinian heretiques* of old, and the *Ana-baptists* of late, who affirme, that Christ brought his body from heauen with him, and so passed through the wombe of the Virgin, as water through a Conduit Pipe, contrarie to the Scripture, *Gal. 4. 4.*

*Q. What doe the rest of the Articles concerne?*

*A. The execution of Christs } { 1. His Humiliation.  
office, whereof there are 2. parts, } { 2. His Glorification.*

*Q. What is the first degree of his Humiliation?*

*A. Hee suffered vnder Pontius Pilate.*

*Q. Why is no mention made of his life, but of his sufferings?*

*Hee suffered*

*A. Because his whole life was nothing but a suffering: his Passion began at his birth, and from his cradle he was weeping towards his crosse.*

*Qu. Why is no mention made of his miracles?*

*A. Because we haue more benefit by his suffering, than by all his miracles; his miracles benefited onely to those that liued in that present age with him: but the vertue of his suffering reacheth downe to vs, 1. Pet. 2. 24.*

*Q. Of whom did Christ suffer?*

*A. Of all sorts of men: hee that came to saue all, had all against him: the Iewes against him, and the Gentiles against him: the Priests against him, and the People against him: the Souldiers against him, and the Thieves against him, yea and his owne Disciple too.*

*Q. What did Christ suffer?*

*A. All the punishments that were due to our sinnes, Pauer-tie, Hunger, Contempt, Shame, Whipping, and buffeting, and the Wrath of God, which was greater than them all.*

*Q. Why do the Martyrs suffer so cheerfully, and Christ so heauily?*

*A. The*

*A.* The Martyrs though they felt paines in their bodies, yet they were infinitely comforted in their soules: but Christs inward sorrowes were more than his outward paines, *Mat. 26. 38.*

*Qu.* For what cause did Christ suffer?

*A.* He suffered for our sinnes; we are they that caused the death of the Sonne of God; as we increased sinne, so the torments were increased vpon him, *Isay 53. 5.*

*Qu.* What was this Pontius Pilat?

*A.* He was the gouernor of Iewrie, Deputie to Tiberius Caesar Emperor of Rome, *Luke 3. 1.*

*Vnder Pontius Pilate.*

*Qu.* Why is he here mentioned?

*A.* To shew, That the Scepter was now taken from Iudah, and therefore this was the time wherein Christ should come, *Gen. 47. 10.*

*Q.* Why was Christ condemned of Pilat?

*A.* That we might be acquitted at the iudgement seat of God, Christ hauing borne the whole penaltie of our sinne.

*Q.* What was the second degree of Christs humiliation?

*A.* He was crucified.

*was Crucified*

*Qu.* What kind of death was that?

*A.* It was a most painful death, and a most infamous death.

*Q.* How was it infamous?

*A.* It was infamous two wayes: first, By Gods Law, *Gal. 3. 13.* Secondly, By Mans Law, because none but base and vile persons were adiudged to the Crosse.

*Q.* Why did Christ suffer such an infamous death?

*A.* That we might see what an hatefull thing sinne is in Gods sight; which could no otherwise be expiated but by such a fearefull and infamous death of the Sonne of God. There is not the least sinne that we commit, but it cost our Sauior Christ the dearest blood in his bodie.

*Qu.* What learne wee by this?

*A.* To account no sinne little, seeing the least we haue cost our Sauior Christ not a little paine.

*Qu.* What other reason is there?

*A.* It meruailously commends our Sauours loue, That Christ performed not some sleight matter for vs, but vnder-

went a most vile death, the death of the Crosse in our behalfe,  
*Phil. 2. 8.*

*Q. When was Christ crucified?*

*A.* At noone day, that all men might see cleerely life & saluation lifted vp vpon the Crosse, *Ioh. 3. 14.*

*Q. Where was Christ crucified?*

*A.* Without the Citie, to shew that wee must goe out from this world, if we will be partakers of the Crosse of Christ, *Heb. 13. 13.*

*Q. Who did crucifie Christ?*

*A.* The *Iewes*, who longed for Christs comming, yet killed him when they had him, *1. Theff. 2. 14.*

*Q. What miracles were done at it?*

*A.* There was darkenellie from high noone till three of the clocke. God put out the candle of heauen, that man might leaue worke: When Man would not blush, the Sun was ashamed and hid his face: When mens hearts would not quake, the earth quaked for feare: and when mens hearts would not rent, the vaile of the Temple rent in twaine, *Mat. 27.*

*Q. What was the third degree of Christs humiliation?*

Dead.

*A.* His death.

*Q. Why did not Christ come downe from the Crosse, as the *Iewes* would haue had him?*

*A.* If Christ had come downe from the Crosse, the *Iewes* would haue haled him to it againe, and so the condemnation would haue been the greater.

If Christ had come downe, he had left the worke of our redemption vnperfect: and therefore howsoeuer it might haue beene much for Christs honour to haue come downe, yet tending our good more than his owne honour, hee was content with shame and reproch to stay still vpon this Crosse.

Christ shewed then a greater miracle than that, if they would beleue. For it was more to rise from death after they had killed him, than to come downe from the Crosse when hee was aliue.

*Q. How did Christ die?*

*A.* He died a voluntarie death, and a holy death.

*Q. How*



*Q. How did Christ die a voluntarie death?*

*A.* He died not with extremitie of paine, as others doe, but he willingly yeelded vp his life, when he could haue liued longer if he would, *Ioh. 10. 18.*

*Q. How did Christ die an holy death?*

*A.* Though hee had many sharpe conflicts before his end, yet he made a sweet close, in so much that the Centurion was more moued with his sweet death, than with all the miracles which he had seene, *Mark 15. 39.*

*Q. Why did Christ die?*

*A.* To free vs from eternall death; for vnlesse Christ had died on earth, we had died euerlastingly in Hell.

*Q. Yea, but the Godlie die dayly.*

*A.* But their death is not a punishment for sinne, but a passage to Heauen and Eternall life. And theretore it is one of the greatest blessings that God can bestow vpon a godly man, *Phil.*

*4. 23.*

*Q. What Fruit haue we by Christs Death?*

*A.* Remission for our sinnes; for Iustice will not suffer that one offence be twice punished. And therefore seeing God hath punished all our sinnes in Christ, (vnlesse we renounce the benefit we haue by Christ) hee cannot now punish them in our selues againe, *Psal. 53. 5.*

Mortification of sinne; Christs death obtaining not onely pardon for sinnes past, but also strength and grace, to weaken and bring vnder those corruptions that are yet behinde, *1. Cor.*

*1. 30.*

*Q. What is the fourth degree of Christs humiliation?*

*And Buried.*

*A.* He was buried.

*Q. Why was Christ buried?*

*A.* For two causes: First, the more to assure vs of his death; for dead men, and not liue men be put into the graue.

To continue vs the more, That Gods wrath is appeased thorough Christ, as the Sea was calme when *Ionas* was cast out of the Ship.

*Q. What Fruit haue we by Christs buriall.*

*A.* By Christs buriall sinne is buried in vs, so that we haue strong

strong hope, that it neuer shall arise, *Rom. 4. 6.*

*Q. What is the last degree of Christs Humiliation?*

*A. Hee descended into hell?*

*Q. What is the first Degree of Christs Exaltation?*

*A. The third day hee arose againe from the dead.*

Third day Hee  
rose againe  
from the Dead.

*Q. What is the meaning hereof?*

*A. That as a man that chops vp a morsell that is too hot for his mouth, cannot hold it, but is glad to giue it vp againe: So death hauing swallowed vp our Saniour Christ, and finding him too hot for him could not hold him, but was glad to render him vp againe, Acts 2. 24.*

*Q. When did Christ rise?*

*A. The third day, not the first day, lest the Iewes should thinke he had not beene dead indeed, but had been in a trance, Not the fourth day, lest his Disciples should haue despaired if Christ had beene longer absent from them, Luke 24. 21.*

*Q. What difference is there betweene Christs rising, and ours?*

*A. Christ rose by his owne power, but wee shall rise by the power of Christ, as in a shipwracke, one swimmes to the bank, and a many hang at his heeles, and hee drawes them all out to the shore, 1. Cor. 15. 22. 23.*

*Q. What are the fruits of Christs rising?*

*A. Wee are assured hereby, that Christ hath discharged for all our sinnes: For if Christ had not payd our whole debt, if but one sinne had beene left behinde, Christ could not haue risen from death, the guiltinelle of that one sinne would haue kept him downe. And therefore God in raising Christ, hath declared himselfe to be fully satisfied, and contented for all our sinnes, Rom. 4. 25.*

Secondly, by Christs rising, we are raised vp to newnesse of life. As it is a shame for the Seruants to lye in bed when the Master of the house is vp: So seeing Christ is risen, it shall bee our shame, if wee lye still found a sleepe in sinne, *Rom. 6. 4.*

Thirdly, wee are assured thereby, that our bodies shall rise againe, being parts and members of Christ, and liuing by the same Spirit, which raised Christ out of the graue, *1. Thess 4. 4.*

*Q. What*

*Q. What is the second degree of Christs Exaltation?*

*A. Hee ascended into heauen.*

*Q. What is the meaning hereof?*

*A. That Christ left the Earth, and went vp to Heauen, so* *Hee ascended*  
that he is no longer in Earth according to his bodily presence, *into Heauen.*  
either visibly or inuisibly, *Ioh. 16. 7.*

*Qu. What thinke you then of the Reall Presence of Christs  
body in the Sacrament?*

*A. It is directly contrary to the Articles of our Faith, as  
Christ himselfe shewes, Ioh. 6. 62. For aske them of our faith,  
where Christs body is; They will answer, it is ascended and  
gone into Heauen, aske the Aduersaries, they will say, it is still  
on Earth in this Sacrament on the Altar, &c. So that if the Arti-  
cles of our faith be true: their doctrine of the Reall Presence  
cannot be true, Math. 24. 23.*

*Q. How doth Christ say then, hee will bee with vs to the end  
of the world, Math. 28. 20.*

*A. Christ will be with vs alwayes according to his God-  
head, according to his grace, according to the effectuall wor-  
king of his Spirit, as St. Marke expounds it, Cap. 16. 20. but  
according to his bodily presence he is not alwayes with vs, as  
himselfe saith, Math. 26. 11.*

*Q. Whither did Christ ascend?*

*A. Into heauen, as all the Scriptures shew, Marke 16. 19.  
Luke 24. 51. Act. 1. 11.*

*Q. What fruite haue we by Christs ascension?*

*A. First, Christ ascended into Heauen, hath carryed the  
hearts of the Godly into Heauen with him: So that though  
they lue here belowe; yet they haue their mindes continually  
raised and lifted vp to Christ that is aboue, Phil. 3. 20.*

Secondly, wee (by Christs ascending into heauen) are al-  
ready possessed of Heauen: For as one friend takes possession  
in an others name, and it is as good in Lawe, as if he had done  
it himselfe; So Christ in our name and in our right, hath en-  
tered into heauen, and made it as sure, as if wee our selues were  
already seised of it, *Ephes. 2. 6.*

Thurdly, Christ ascended into Heauen, that hee might ap-  
peare



peare in the sight of God to make intercession for vs. So that now wee haue a friend in the Court of heauen, who keepes vs in fauour with God, and obtaines many blessings for vs, *Hebr.*

*Q. What is the third Degree of Christs Exaltion?*

*A. Hee sitteth at the right hand of God.*

*Q. What is meant by the right hand of God?*

*A.* To speake properly, God hath neither a right hand nor a left: For God is a Spirit, and therefore hath no bodily parts, as wee haue, but the right hand of God, is the power of God, and the Maiestic of God, as the Scriptures expound it, *Luke 22.69. Heb. 1.3.*

*Q. What is it then to sit at the right hand of God?*

*And sits at the  
right hand of  
God*

*A.* To be next to him in Maiestic and in Power: for as Kings and great personages, cause them to sit downe on their right hand, whom they will haue honoured, as second to them in the kingdome, and next to themselues: So Christ is set downe at the right hand of God. Because God hath lift him vp euen in his humane Nature farre aboue men and Angels, and made him in glory and honour next vnto himselfe.

*Q. Why is Christ said to sit?*

*A.* First, to shew that he is the Iudge of the world, and all causes must be brought before him.

Secondly, to shew that he hath finished the worke of our Redemption, as a man that sits downe when his worke is done, *Heb. 10. 12. In the Sanctuary there was no steele for the Priests to sit downe, &c.*

*Q. Shew yet more fully the meaning of the Creed in this sitting?*

*A.* The sitting downe of Christ, at the right hand of God, is the installing of him in his Kingdome, and in his Throne, the aduancing and lifting of him vp to bee the head of the Church, and that person by whom God will rule all things both in Heauen and in Earth, *Phil. 2.9.*

*Q. What learne we of this?*

*A.* That Christ is now exalted in his kingdome, and in his Priesthood: So that now he administred both his kingly & his  
Prictly

Priestly office, with greater might and Maiestie then euer hee did before.

*Q. What fruit haue wee by the lifting vp of Christ in his Priesthood?*

*A.* Wee know thereby that Christs Intercession shall bee more profitable for vs. For if Christs prayer on Earth was alwayes heard; wee may well thinke that being Sutour for vs in so great Maiestie and glory, hee shall not bee denied, *Rom. 8.34.*

*Q. What fruit haue we by the lifting vp of Christ in his kingdome?*

*A.* First, wee know that now he is more able to blesse the Church, and euerie member of it; And therefore if hee then healed the sicke, fed his followers with small prouision, made the ministry of the Word effectuell; much more is hee able to doe it now, *2. Cor. 9.8.*

Secondly, wee know that Christ is more able to defend the Church, and subdue all the enemies of it, and stampe them vnder foote; And therefore if hee then cast out deuills, he is now much more able to cast out sinne: and if then hee were able with one word to calme the Sea: hee is now much more able to scatter all our troubles, and to disperse them, *Rom. 16.20.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they who doubt of Gods fauour, or feare they shall not be able to liue this hard yeare; or thinke they shall neuer get Religion, or ouercome the lets, howsoeuer they say they belecue; yet doe not indeed beleue that Christ sits at the Right hand of God; that is, that hee more mightily administred his Kingdome and Priesthood now, then euer hee did before.

*Q. What is the last degree of Christs Exaltation?*

*A.* From thence hee shall come to iudge quick and dead. *The Iudgement day.*

*Q. What is the meaning hereof?*

*A.* That Christ in the end of the world, when the sinnes of men be ripe, shall descend in a Cloude and sit downe vpon his throne, and all both great and small shall stand before him, and the Bookes shall bee opened, and they shall bee iudged according

according to the things that they haue done, be they good, or bee they euill.

*Qu. What note wee hence?*

- A.* 1. That there shall be a Iudgement.  
 2. The generalitie of the Iudgement.  
 3. The Person of the Iudge.  
 4. The Time of it.

*Qu. How know wee that there shall be a Iudgement?*

*A.* First, by the Scriptures.

Secondly, by the light of Reason.

*Q. What Scriptures proue it?*

*A.* Iude 14. 15. 2. Cor. 5. 10. Act. 17. 31.

*Q. What is the Reason?*

*A.* We know that God is a iust and righteous God, and therefore hee cannot but make the state of the godly better then the state of the wicked. But in this world it is not so: For godly *Lazarus* lyes pyning at the doore, while the wicked *Glutton* sits surfetting at the Board. And therefore there must bee a Iudgement, that the godly may bee blessed, and the wicked punished.

*Q. What fruit haue we by this?*

*A.* Wee know that Christs comming, is for the further glorifying of his Church, and the punishing of the enemies of it. And therefore, howsoeuer we are here pressed and afflicted for a while, and crowned with contempt (as our Master was with thornes) yet a day will come, when all our infirmities and miseries shall haue an end, and the faces of our enemies shall be filled with shame, 2. *Thess.* 1. 6. 7. 8.

*Q. What are wee taught concerning the generality of the Iudgement?*

*A.* That all shall be iudged, both quicke and dead.

*Q. Who are meant thereby?*

*A.* By the quicke are meant they, whom Christ shall finde aliue at his comming; And by the dead, they are meant, that shall bee dead before: so that all shall be iudged, *Rom.* 14. 10.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That a day will come, when euery one of vs shall giue



an account to God for his whole life, for every oath that he hath sworn; for every lie that he hath told; for every penny that he hath deceived; for every Sabbath that he hath profaned. And therefore, that we must be careful to flee these sinnes, and the like, as we will answer to God for the contrarie at the Iudgement-seate.

*Q. Who shall be the Iudge?*

*A.* Christ in his humane Nature, *Iohn 5.22.27.*

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That Christs comming shall be comfortable to the godly, and fearefull to the wicked; Comfortable to the godly, because he shall be their Iudge, who is their Saviour, *Luke 21.28.* Fearefull to the wicked, because he shall be their Iudge, whose blood they have despised, whose Ministers they have disgraced, whose name they have blasphemed, whose Sacraments they have contemned, whose Sabbaths they have profaned, *Rev. 6.15.16.*

*Q. When shall the Iudgement bee?*

*A.* In the end of the world: what yeare, or what day, or what houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels but God alone, *Math. 24.36.*

*Q. Why would the Lord haue it secret?*

*A.* That men might be alwayes vpon their watch, and preparing for it: For the count day will come suddenly, and therefore we must euer keepe our reckonings streight, lest it come like a thiefe in the night to steale away all our peace and prosperitie, and pleasures for euer, *Mark. 30.35.*

*Q. What is the third Person in whom wee must beleene?*

*A.* The Person of the Holy Ghost.

*I beleene in the Holy Ghost.*

*Q. What are wee to beleene concerning the Holy Ghost?*

*A.* Two things; First, that he is the essentiall Power of the Father and of the Sonne; the same God in nature, but distinct in Person: That hee proceedeth from the Father, the Scripture is plaine, *Iohn 15.26.* That hee proceedeth from the Sonne, is as plaine, *Gal. 4.6.* That he is a distinct person from them both is cleare, *Iohn 14.16.*

Secondly, that he is the Sanctifier of Gods elect, and therefore

fore hee is called the Holy Ghost, not onely because he is holy in himselfe, but also because he makes vs holy, sanctifying both our bodies and our soules vnto God.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That by nature wee are more barren then the barrenest ground in the world; hauing no sparke of grace or goodnelle in vs; And therefore, if there be any loue of vertue, any hatred of sinne, we may well know it is not of our selues; but the Spirit of God which wrought it in our hearts, *Phil. 2. 13.*

*Q. What doth the Spirit of God worke in vs?*

*A.* First, knowledge of the will of God: For whereas by nature a man hath no more true Religion, then a very beast: The Spirit of God opening and enlightening the eyes of his minde, makes him able to conceiue the secret things of God, *1. Cor. 3. 14.*

*Q. What is the second thing?*

*A.* Regeneration; For by nature a man is giuen to like best of the worst things, and worst of the best things, and therefore the Spirit of God is faine to cast him new, and to change euery affection in him, *Iohn 3. 5.*

*Q. What is the third thing?*

*A.* Communion with Christ: For by Faith the Spirit of God implanteth vs into Christ, as the Branches are knit into the stocke; so that as the Branches liue and are nourished from the stocke: So wee partake of all the rich graces that bee in Christ, *1. Cor. 6. 11.*

*Q. What is the fourth thing?*

*A.* Spirituall Government; For by nature wee are so babish, that wee know not when to speake, nor when to hold our peace; how to pray, nor how to vse our Christian liberties, &c. And therefore the Spirit of God is giuen vs as a guide to direct vs in euery thing that we take in hand, *Rom. 8. 14.*

*Q. What is the fift thing?*

*A.* Comfort in Troubles; For the Spirit of God (assuring our hearts, that God loues vs in Christ) makes vs to contemne the vanities of the world, and (setting vs in hope of the life to come) makes vs set the selfe by the things of this life, *Ioh. 14. 16.*

*Q. What*

*Q. What is the first thing?*

*A.* Strengthening vs. For whereas naturally wee are quickly weary of good things ( the Spirit of God so vpholding vs in grace ) that euery day wee feele our selues brought into greater loue and liking of the same, *Eph. 3. 16.*

*Q. In whom doth the Spirit of God worke these things?*

*A.* In none but the Elect. A Reprobate may haue the Spirit of God, according to some effects of it, as to make him see his sinnes, to be ashamed of them; and to reſtraine him from the outward acts of them, to liue ciuilly in the world: But the Spirit of God inwardly killing ſin, and ſanctifying the Soule in all his gracious effects, is neuer giuen but to Gods Elect, *Iohn 14. 17.*

*Q. May a man loſe the Spirit of God?*

*A.* The wicked ( becauſe they neuer had it ſoundly ) may wholly loſe it. The godly cannot loſe it wholly, but onely according to ſome graces of it, and that not finally but for a time: Becauſe the Spirit like *Sampſons* hayre, will reuiue againe, *Iohn 7. 38.*

*Q. May wee therefore liue ſecure, becauſe wee cannot loſe the Spirit?*

*A.* Nay, but wee muſt uſe the meanes which God hath appointed for the nourishing of the Spirit; as hearing of the Word, Prayer, Meditation, &c. otherwiſe the beſt of vs ſhall finde the Graces of Gods Spirit, wonderfull dead and damped in vs, *1. Theſſ. 5. 18.*

*Q. How may a man know that hee hath the Spirit of God?*

*A.* Hee may know that hee hath the Spirit of God by the working of the Spirit; For, as a man knowes there is life in himſelfe, as long as he breathes and moues, and doth the reſt of the actions of a liuing man: So when a man liues the life of the Spirit, and doth the things which without Gods Spirit hee could not doe; hee may well know that hee hath the Spirit in him.

*Q. Doe not many deceive themſelues in this point?*

*A.* Many doe for want of iudgement, for there is a certaine working like the Spirit, but it is not the Spirit: A certain



boldnesse in the heart like Faith, but it is not Faith : A certaine kinde affection like Loue, but it is not loue: A certaine hot humour like Zeale, but it is not Zeale; They bee but vizards, and counterfeits, which the deuill makes to deceiue poore people with, To make them belecue they haue Faith and Loue, and other vertues, when indeed they haue not; but certaine emptie shewes and shadowes of them.

*Q. What is the first marke whereby a man may know that he hath the Spirit of God?*

*A.* If a man feele himselfe better able to conceiue the Mysteries of Faith, and to take profite by the Ministry of the Word, either to the begetting or strengthening of Faith in him: This is a sure token, that he hath the Spirit, *Act. 16. 14.*

*Q. What is the second Marke;*

*A.* If a man feele a sensible change in himselfe; so that hee loues that good which hee thought hee should neuer loue, and hates that euill which hee thought hee should neuer hate; and sets himselfe with diligence to the weakening and killing, not of somefew, but of all his sinnes: This is a true Testimony, that hee hath Gods Spirit working in his heart, *1. Cor. 6. 11.*

*Q. What is the third Marke?*

*A.* If a man feele himselfe checkt inwardly for sinne, so that hee cannot tread or looke awry, but by and by hee is closely touched and rebuked for it. This is a sure token that he hath the Spirit, *Isay 30. 21.*

*Q. What is the fourth Marke?*

*A.* If a man haue an earnest desire to please God; to wish from his very heart, that he could walke with greater care and obedience in all the wayes of God. This shall scale vnto his soule, that he belongs to God, *1. Iohn 2. 5.*

*Qu. What is the fift Marke?*

*A.* If a man feele himselfe much giuen to Prayer, not onely in company, and at ordinary times, but also priuately by himselfe alone, with assured perswasion that hee shall fare the better for it: This is a certaine signe of the Spirit of God, *Gal.*

*4. 6.*

*Q. What is the sixt Marke?*

*A. If*

*A.* If a man dare trust the Lord with his whole state, and say vnto God in sinceritie of heart, Lord, I desire not health nor peace nor plenty, but according to thy will. I lay downe my selfe, my life, and my comforts, and all that I haue at thy feet, dispose of mee as best pleaseth thee; this is a seale, that the Spirit of God workes in his heart, *2. Sam. 15. 26.*

*Qu.* What if a man feeles not all these in himselfe?

*A.* Yet hee is not to despaire if there be any one of them truly in him. For as there may be life in man, though hee can neither see nor heare, nor speake nor mooue: So though the Spirit work not so strongly in one, yet as long as he desires to please God; so long as hee is sorry for his sinnes; or at leastwise sorry, that hee cannot be sorry for them; hee is not vtterly to discomfort himselfe in his estate, *Rom. 7. 22. 23.*

*Qu.* What doth the second part of the Creed entreate of?

*A.* Of two things,  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \text{The Church.} \\ 2. \text{The Benefites bestowed vpon it.} \end{array} \right.$

*Q.* Why is the Church mentioned immediately after the Doctrine of the Trinitie?

*A.* Because, whatsoeuer the holy Trinitie hath wrought, they haue wrought it for the good of the Church. And therefore the benefite of the Father in Creating: of the Son in Redeeming: of the holy Ghost in Sanctifying wholly and entirely belongeth to the Church: It is the Churches dowrie.

*Q.* What learne wee by this?

*A.* That if a man can approue himselfe to bee a true member of the Church: Then hee may assure himselfe that hee hath his part in Christ: But if hee bee not a true member of the Church; then neither God nor Christ, nor life, nor saluation belongs vnto him, *Acts 2. 48.*

*Q.* What is the Church?

*A.* The Church is the whole company of Gods Elect in all places, and in all Ages, knit by true Faith vnto Iesus Christ their head, *Ephes. 1. 10.*

*Q.* Are none but the Elect true members of the Church?

*A.* Hypocrites and wicked men may bee in the Church, but they are not of the Church; They may be in the outward

societie, and fellowship of the Church mingled for a time; but they are not true members of it, because they are not knit by true faith vnto Christ their head, 1. *John* 2. 19.

*Q. Why are the visible Assemblies called the Church?*

*A.* Because in charitie wee are to thinke they belong to Gods Election, till by Apostasie, or notorious euill life they giue prooffe to the contrarie.

*Q. What are wee to beleue concerning the Church?*

*A.* Two things, { 1. That it is holy.  
2. That it is Catholique.

*Q. Why is the Church said to be Holy?*

*A.* Because all the true members of the Church are washed from their sinnes by the blood of Christ, and haue holinesse in some measure begun in them, *Ephes.* 5. 28.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That they who are not holy, that is sanctified in some measure by the Spirit of Christ, belong not indeed to the Body of the Church, and therefore are quite cast off from all benefite by the death of Christ.

*Q. Why is the Church called Catholike?*

*A.* Catholike, is as much to say, as *Uniuersall*, or *generall*. So that when wee say, Wee beleue the *Catholike Church*: The meaning is, that wee beleue the Church is not now tyed to any one Countrie, as it was before Christs comming, to the Iewes onely, but in euery Nation, whosoever feareth God and worketh righteounesse, is accepted of him, *Ephes.* 2. 14.

*Q. Is not the Church of Rome the Catholike Church?*

*A.* No: For the Catholike Church cannot fall away from the faith, *Math.* 16. 18. But the Church of *Rome*, hath no more priuiledge in this point, then any other Church; for it both may and hath departed from the faith, *Rom.* 1. 22. And therefore it is not the true Catholike Church.

*Q. What bee the markes of the true Church?*

*A.* 1. Sincere preaching of the Word.

2. A right vse of the Sacraments.

*Q. Is not the Popes doctrine sound?*

*A.* No; for whereas the Scriptures teach, that God alone



is to be worshipped, *Math. 4.* The *Pope* teacheth that wee may worship Saints, the Wood, the Crucifix with the same diuine worship that belongs to God. Where the Scriptures teach, that there is one Mediatour betweene God and Man, the Man Iesus Christ: The *Pope* teacheth, that euery Saine and Angell may be a mediatour for vs.

Qu. *Haue they not a right vse of the Sacraments?*

A. No: For whereas Christ and his Apostles ministred in both kindes: they giue nothing but Bread vnto the people: Where Christ and his Apostles celebrated it in a knowne tongue; they mumble vp all in a strange tongue, which the people doe not vnderstand.

Q. *What doth the Pope make the chiefe markes of the Church?*

A. First, Antiquitie. Secondly, Vniuersalitie. Thirdly, Succession of Bishops and consent.

Q. *Doth not the Antiquitie of the Church of Rome prooue it to be the true Church?*

A. No, for as old as it is, it is not so old as the Deuill. Again, there is as great difference betweene old Rome and Rome now, as is betweene a chaste Virgin and a common Harlot.

Qu. *Doth not Vniuersalitie prooue it. For before Luthers time, all were of the Romish faith?*

A. That is not so; For before *Luther*, the *Valdenses*, and the Christian Churches in *Greece*, in *Armenia*, in *Syria*, in *Aethiopia*, and other places, as much abhorred fellowship with the Pope as wee doe. Secondly, if it had beene so, yet who knowes not, that *St. Iohn* hath foretold, *Rev. 13. 3. cap. 8.* that all the world should worship the Beast.

Q. *Doth not succession of Bishops from Peter prooue it?*

A. No: For *Caiphas* had succession from *Aaron*, and yet condemned Christ, and their owne stories tell, that there haue beene Monisters rather then Bishops that haue sate at Rome, *Tiberius*, who subscribed to the *Arian* heresie, *Honorius* condemned by two Generall Councils, and *Iohn 23.* who held a damnable heresie concerning the state of the Soule.

Q. *Doth not their unity and agreement prooue it?*

*A.* No: For howsoever they agree as *Herod* and *Pilate* did in condemning Christ: yet they haue infinite iarres and contentions among themselves, Pope against Pope, and Cardinall against Cardinall, Doctor against Doctor, and that in matters of faith, concerning the efficacie of the Sacraments, The Virgin *Mary*, matter of Orders, Iustification, &c. So that their vnitie is no other, then such as is spoaken of, *Acts* 4:27.

*Q.* What bee the Benefites which God bestowes upon his Church?

*A.* They are } The two first concerne this life.  
four in number, } The two later the life to come.

*Q.* What is the first of them that concerne this life?

*A.* The Communion of Saints.

*Q.* What is meant thereby?

Communion  
of Saints.

*A.* That all the holy people of God, haue fellowship one with another, and with Christ their Head, *1. Ioh.* 1:3.

*Q.* What is the fellowship which wee haue with Christ?

*A.* By faith wee become one with Christ, of his flesh, and of his Bones, by meanes whereof wee haue a communitie in all his Merits, and in all his riches: So that his sufferings for sinne stand vs in as good stead, as if wee our selues had suffered for them: And his fulfilling of the Law benefites vs as much, as if wee in our owne person had fulfilled it. And his ascending into heauen puts vs in as good assurance, as if our selues already were ascended thither, *Eph.* 2:6.

*Q.* What is the fellowship which wee haue one with another?

*A.* It stands in foure things. First, in ioyning together in the outward worship of God, whereby wee bring mutuall comfort, and encouragement one to another, *Acts* 2:46.

*Q.* What learne wee by this?

*A.* That they who lue idly at home on the Sabbath day, or content themselves with some priuate duties of their owne, and doe not resort to the publike places, and publike assemblies, which God hath sanctified and set apart for his owne worship, are found to despise the Communion of Saints.

*Q.* What is the second thing wherein our Christian fellowship consists?

*A.* In

*A.* In praying one for another, and that not sleightly and coldly, but pressing and importuning the Lord, as if our owne state, and our owne danger were in hand.

*Q.* What learne wee by this?

*A.* That hee that is a true member of the Church hath all Gods people in all places praying for him, yea many times, when he is not able to pray for himselfe, a thousand hands are lifted vp to Heauen in his behalfe.

*Qu.* What is the third thing wherein this fellowship consists?

*A.* In communicating our gifts and Graces to the good and benefite one of another. For as the eye sees not for the good of it selfe alone, but for the comfort and benefite of the whole body: Euen so we haue our part and profite in the gifts and graces bestowed vpon others, 1. Cor. 12. 6. 7.

*Q.* What learne wee by this?

*A.* That as one candle lights another; So one man must bring on an other vnto God.

*Qu.* What is the last thing wherein the Communion of Saints consists?

*A.* It consists in the communicating of the good things of this life to the mutuall helpe and comfort one of another, accordingly as God hath enabled vs, Acts 4. 32.

*Qu.* What gather wee of this?

*A.* That they who are wholly taken vp with the care of their owne good, and doe not by loue goe out of themselves to the comfort of their brethren, whatsoever they pretend, yet they belong not to the Communion of Saints indeed, 1. Cor. 12. 26.

*Qu.* What is the second Benefite?

*A.* Forgiuenesse of Sinnes.

*Qu.* What are wee to beleoue concerning this?

*A.* Foure things. First, that the Church hath her Sinnes, Euen the godliest in this world: Not onely they who walke with no care: But euen they who set a most narrow watch ouer their waies, and that not tunc veniall and petty sinnes, but euen deadly wounds, wherof without the fauour of God, they might surely die. *The forgiue-  
nesse of sinnes.*





*Qu. What Scriptures proue it?*

*A. Dan 12. and Ioh. 5. 28. 29.*

*Q. How is it proued by the power of God?*

*A.* Because it is as easie for God to raise man out of the dust, as it was at first to make him of the dust: It is easier to raise man, then to make him. For as when a house falls, the stones remaine, and the timber remaines, onely it wants the forme and fashion of an house: So when a man dyes, the soule remaines, and the body remaines, at leastwise the bones, the spar and chiefe rafters of the house, and therefore they may the more easily be knit together and fashioned againe.

*Q. Why shall the same body rise?*

*A.* Because it were iniustice to punish that body for sinne, that had neuer committed sinne, and to crowne another body with Christ, and not the same that had suffered for him.

*Q. How shall it rise a glorious body?*

*A.* First, it shall rise immortall; hunger and thirst and cold, and sicknesse, and death shall no more preuaile against it.

Secondly, it shall rise in perfect state; The Power of God supplying all those members that now bee wanting: hee that lacked an eye, shall then receiue an eye; and hee that lacked an arme, shall then haue both armes restored.

Thirdly, it shall rise more beautifull then it was at first: For hee that is now crooked, he shall be streightened; and hee that is now weake shall be strengthened; and hee that is too bigge shall bee lessened: And hee that is foule shall shine like the Sun in his strength.

Fourthly, it shall rise a spirituall body, readie and willing to doe any duty that the Spirit shall enioyne.

*Q. Shall not the wicked rise too?*

*A.* Yesthey shall rise; but it were better for them if they might neuer rise: if they might dye as a dogge or a roade dyes. They shall rise, but it is, that their torments may be the greater, their bodyes also then feeling as much, as now their soules feelee.

*Q. What is the last benefit?*

*A.* Euerlasting life.

*Q. What*

*Life Everla-  
sing.*

*Qu. What are wee to beleene concerning it?*

*A.* That the state of gods people shall bee infinitely more happy in Heauen, when God shall bee all in all, raining immediately in his Saints?

*Q. What learnewee by this?*

*A.* That wee are set in a better state by Christ, then we lost by *Adam*: For by *Adam* wee lost but an earthly Paradise, but by Christ wee haue recouered an heauenly for it.

*Q. What else doe wee beleene of this point?*

*A.* That this happie estate of Gods People shall bee for euer, the comfort of it increasing, rather then abating any whit.

*Q. Declare this.*

*A.* In the delights of this world, the greatest ioy is at first (as when a man comes out of the cold to a good fire, after his ioy abates by little and little, vntill at length hee bee weary of it.) But when a man hath beene in heauen a 1000 yeares, hee shall finde as much ioy and contentment, as the first houre that hee came thither.

*Q. Shall not the wicked rise to everlasting life?*

*A.* No: For theirs is an eueralsting death; they are euer dying, and yet can neuer dye: euer consuming, and yet can neuer consume: euer burning, and yet can neuer burne: like the *Salamander* that liues in the fire.

*Q. How may a man attaine to Eternall life?*

*A.* Onely by a lively faith in the Sonne of God: when a man stands perswaded in his heart through the holy Ghost, that this is a chiefe part of Christs purchase, which without the high price of his blood wee could neuer attaine.

*Q. What are the meanes to strengthen Faith?*

1. The Word.

*A.* Three, 2. The Sacraments.

3. And Prayer.

*Q. What is Prayer?*

*A.* Prayer is a pouring forth of the Soule before God in the feeling of our wants, together with an earnest desire of remedy for the same.

*Prayer.*

*Q. How*



Qu. *How many things are required in Prayer?*

A. Three { 1. That a man knowe his wants.  
2. That hee earnestly desire to haue them supplied,  
3. That for this end hee put vp his sure to God.

Q. *Why did the Lord teach vs a set forme of prayer?*

A. Because wee are not able to looke into the bottome of our owne hearts, nor to carry our selues in such a wise course, as becommeth speakers to so great a King: Therefore the Lord vouchsafed to direct vs with his owne mouth, that keeping our selues to the rule that hee hath set vs, wee might be assured that our prayers should be to his good liking and well accepted.

Q. *How many parts be there of the Lords Prayer?*

A. Three, { 1. The Preface. }  
2. The Petitions, and }  
3. The Conclusion. }

Q. *Why doth the Lord vse a Preface to the Prayer?*

A. To teach vs that wee may not pray without reuerence, till wee haue in some holy and heavenly sort fitted and prepared our selues for it. *My heart is fixed, &c. my heart is fixed, Ps. l.*

Qu. *What learne wee by this?*

A. That their sinne is great, who rush bluntly and boldly vpon the Lord without due consideration, and most holy regard of the excellent, and high Maiestie before whom they stand, *Eccles. x. 1.*

Q. *What osher reason is there?*

A. To teach vs, that wee may not pray without zeale till wee haue quickened and wakened vp our hearts to it.

Q. *What learne we by this?*

A. That they sinne in prayer, who let their prayers fall from them without zeale, and without lite. For why should God care for those prayers which wee our selues care not for.

Q. *How must wee prepare our selues to Prayer?*

A. By a serious meditation of the great mercy and power of God: his mercy will teach vs how willing and ready hee is: his Power how able and mightie he is to helpe vs in our needs.

Q. *How*

*Q. How is the mercy of God set forth?*

*A.* In tearming himselfe our Father. For in calling God Father wee bring our selues in minde, that wee shall finde him a Father, euen fatherly affections in him, ready to heare vs and endline to our demands.

*Q. What will this worke in vs?*

*A.* An vndoubted assurance that wee shall bee heard. For where shall a man speed himselfe, if hee speed not with his Father: And therefore seeing wee come to God in prayer, not as to a stranger that knowes vs not, not as to a stately person that regards vs not, but as to a most louing and tender Father; whose care hearkeneth, whose eye pittiethe, whose hand is helpfull to our needs, wee may assure our selues, that wee shall not come emptie handed, and with faces cast downe from his presence.

*Q. How is God our Father?*

*Our Father.*

*A.* By nature wee are become the children of the Deuill: But through Christ God hath adopted vs, and taken vs for his owne sonnes, intending to bestowe his crowne and kingdome on vs.

*Q. Why doth Christ direct this prayer to God alone?*

*A.* To shew that none but God is to be prayed vnto, neither Saint nor Angell, nor any other.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That the Papists in praying to Saints and Angels pray amisse, because their prayers be contrary to the rule of prayer. Indeed they knocke oft and lay loades vpon the doore, but they knocke at a wrong gate, and they mistake the doore. Two little rappes at Gods gate would doe more good, then all their crying like Baals Priests to them that heare them not, &c.

*Q. Why are wee taught to say our Father?*

*A.* First, to teach vs that wee must pray for our brethren as well as for our selues, and that their miseries must bring vs many times vpon our knees.

Secondly, to shew that if wee bee true members in the body of Christ, wee haue a part in euery mans prayer; so that when wee are heauy and troubled, and cannot pray for our selues, we  
may

may then remember that a 1000. hands are lifted to heauen, and a 1000. mouthes are speaking to God in our behalfe.

*Q. How is the Power of God set forth?*

*A.* In saying that hee is heauen, for thereby we are brought in minde of the heauenly Maieftie and power that is in him, whereby hee is able to goe through with his owne worke, and to accompliſh whatſoeuer ſhall be for our good, *Deut. 33, 26.* *which art in Heauen.*

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That God is able to ſpeed vs, and wee need goe no further for any thing we want.

*Q. What elſe doe theſe words teach vs?*

*A.* Firſt, to liſt vp our hearts to Heauen when wee pray. Secondly, to thinke that God ſits in the Watch-Tower of the world, and therefore hee ſees vs and markes how and in what ſort, and how oft wee pray vnto him.

*Q. How many Petitions are there?*

*A.* 6. Whereof } The three firſt concerne the glory of God.  
The three other our owne good.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That nothing muſt bee more pretious and deare vnto vs then the Name and Glory of our God, and therefore that we muſt alwayes begin our ſuite in the earneſt deſire that the Lord may haue a wonderfull name among vs, that wee may ſet forth his glory whatſoeuer become of vs.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That the prayers of ſuch ſhall neuer bee heard to any benefit or comfort of themſelues, who are wholly taken vp with a care of their owne good, and neuer thinke what honour and glory may come vnto the Lord thereby.

*Q. What thinke you then of the Prayers of the Common ſort?*

*A.* That for the moſt part they pleaſe not God, for it is not the care of Gods glory, but the onely feeling of their owne wants, that makes them pray: For if it were not more for their owne good, and for their owne comfort, then for any care they haue of Gods glorie, they would neuer pray.

*Q. What doe wee pray for in the firſt Petition?*

*A.* Wee



Hallowed be  
thy Name.

*A.* We pray for the hallowing, or sanctifying of the Name of God.

*Q.* What is the Name of God?

*A.* It is the report of him, his remembrance and his memoriall amongst men: so that when wee pray, (*Hallowed bee thy name*) wee pray that the Lord may haue a glorious and a great Name among vs, that wee may neither thinke nor speake of him, but with high reuerence and feare, with holy admiration of the excellent and great things that be in Him.

*Q.* What are the speciall good things wee pray for?

*A.* First, we pray that God would make his Mercy, Iustice, Loue, &c. so knowne vnto the world, that euery one may bee forced to admire it, and wonder at it: That the Lord would shew forth such euident, and cleere tokens of the great might and wisdom, and Iustice, and power that bee in him, that all men might be conuincd in their consciences, to confesse that the whole Soueraigntie of glorie and renowne is due vnto him.

*Q.* Declare this more fully?

*A.* Wee pray, that the Lord would stand vp for his owne glorie: that the Lord would get himselfe glory and praise by blessing and defending the godly, and by punishing and afflicting the wicked.

*Q.* Doe not many herein pray against themselves?

*A.* Wee all pray, that if wee bee any lett or hinderance to Gods glory, so that the Lord be the worse thought of for our sakes, that hee will recouer his glory at our hands, yea though it be with the destruction of vs.

*Q.* What is the second thing wee pray for?

*A.* That wee may acknowledge with inward feeling of our hearts the excellent, and holy things that bee in God, that wee may doe the Lord this honour to thinke that he is most Mightie, and therefore will defend vs when the whole world is set against vs: that hee is most Wise, and therefore will doe nothing but it shall be for our good: That hee is most pittifull, and therefore will pittie vs, when no eye else will looke vpon vs; that hee is most Iust, and therefore will stand vp in our iust defence.

*Q.* What

*Q. What is the third thing wee pray for?*

*A.* That wee so liue, and so carry our selues in the whole course of our wayes, as God may haue glory by vs: That as a good seruant doth his Master credite, so the Lord may heare well for our honest life.

*Q. What is the fourth thing that wee pray for?*

*A.* That wee may bee so wholly possessed, and taken vp with the care of the Lords praise, that wee may neuer speake or doe any thing, but with this minde, and to this intent to get some honour, and some glory to the Lord thereby.

*Q. What are the euills that wee pray against?*

*A.* First, that wee may not bee so blinde, but that wee may see the great glorie of God, that shineth in the world, his Providence, wise gouernment, care for his people, and the Iudgements that hee brings vpon wicked men.

Secondly, that wee may not doubt of any of the excellent things that bee in God; That hee hath not power enough to protect vs; Mercy enough to forgieue vs, Wisedome enough to direct vs in the safest course.

Thirdly, that wee may not dishonour the Lord by our vngodly and wicked life: That wee may not bee a shame to the Gospell, men thinking the worse of it, for the loosenesse of our liues that professe it.

Fourthly, that wee may not seeke our owne praise more then the praise of the Lord; and so greedily hunt after our owne credite, that wee care not in the meane time, though the Lords honour lye in the dust.

*Qu. What doe wee pray for in the second Petition.*

*A.* For the meanes of Gods glory, that his kingdome may come among vs. *Thy kingdome come.*

*Q. How doth this Petition depend vpon the former?*

*A.* In the first Petition, wee prayed, that wee might glorifie God: and now we pray that God would rule in our hearts, that wee may glorifie him the better: For vnlesse God rule vs by his Spirit, wee are so set to pursue our owne praise, and peace and pleasure, that wee shall neuer glorifie him sincerely while wee liue.

*Q. What*

*Q. What is the meaning of this Petition?*

*A.* Whereas the Deuills kingdome is come already, and Sinne holds vp the Scepter in a number of our hearts, wee here pray as men weary of it, that Gods kingdome may here come into our hearts, and the Deuill and sinne may no longer rule among vs.

*Q. What is the kingdome of God?*

*A.* Gods king- } The kingdome of *Grace.* }  
dome is twofold, } The kingdome of *Glorie.* }

*Q. What is the kingdome of Grace?*

*A.* The kingdome of Grace is that whereby God gouerneth the hearts of the faithfull in this world.

*Q. How doth God gouerne vs in this world?*

*A.* Two wayes, } Inwardly *By his Spirit.* }  
                          } Outwardly *By his Word.* }

*Q. How by his Spirit?*

*A.* When by his Spirit and grace conueyed into our hearts, hee not onely shews vs the good way wherein we should walk, but also leades vs in the way, and giues vs strength to continue in it, and checks our hearts when we goe amisse.

*Q. How by his Word?*

*A.* As Princes rule their Subiects by those Lawes and statutes which they make: So God rules vs by his Word, hauing there taught vs what is right, and what is wrong, or what is lawfull and vnlawfull for vs.

*Q. What are the speciall good things that wee pray for?*

*A.* Wee pray, that God would giue his gracious and good spirit into our hearts, to the gouerning and guiding of vs in our wayes, that wee may so liue, as the good Spirit of God would haue vs liue, &c. and further increase this good worke when it is begun.

*Q. Doe all pray thus with desire to haue it so?*

*A.* No; many say, *Thy kingdome come*, that would not for any good, Gods kingdome should come vpon vs: Many would bee sorry in their hearts to doe no more, then God would haue them doe to part with so many sinnes, and leaue so many vanities as God would haue them leaue.

*Q. What*



*Qu. What is the second good thing that wee pray for?*

*A.* That God would rule vs by his Word, that wee may not be left to wander after our owne hearts, but that wee may haue the word of God to a continuall directing of vs in an honest course.

*Qu. What is the third thing?*

*A.* Wee pray for all the good helpes, and meanes, that may further Gods kingdome, and namely for good Ministers, and good Magistrates.

*Q. What doe wee pray for good Ministers?*

*A.* That God would giue good Ministers to all places, faithfull and able men, full of Spirit and power, who may build vp the decays and the ruines of the Church, and seeke vp the lost soules of their brethren, and bring them home to the Fold of Christ.

Secondly, Wee pray that God would bleſſe and continue ſuch as wee haue already, that they may not be discouraged in their labours, nor hindered in the Lords workes, but may miniſter with great grace and cheerefulneſſe amongſt vs.

Thirdly, wee pray that God would make their Miniſtry effectuell to vs for our good, that it may worke vpon our hearts to the killing of ſinne, and the ſtrengthening of Gods graces in vs.

*Q. What doe wee pray for Magiſtrates?*

*A.* Firſt, that God would raiſe vp ſuch, as may bee Fathers of the Church: ſuch as may tender Religion, and wound with the ſword of Juſtice, the head of all yngodlineſſe in the land.

Secondly, that God would bleſſe and continue thoſe that be ſuch, eſpecially our gracious King, that his dayes may be as the dayes of Heauen, and his Throne may be eſtabliſhed in proſperitie and peace, as long as the Sunne and Moone endure.

*Q. What is the Kingdome of Glory?*

*A.* It is that whereby God ſhall more fully raigne in vs in the world to come, when all ſinne and wickedneſſe ſhall be taken from vs.

*Q. What doe wee here pray for?*

*A.* That God would make an end of this wicked world,  
I and

and hasten to Iudgement, to the vtter confounding of the wicked, and the more full and perfect Saluation of those that belong vnto him.

*Qu. Why are wee to pray for the day of Iudgement?*

*A.* Chiefely for this end, that the name of God may be no more dishonoured in the world, but the kingdome of sinne and Sathan may haue an end.

*Q. Doe all wish for the day of Iudgement?*

*A.* No, many had rather it would neuer come. For O! if God should come to Iudgement, what should become of a number in the world? they should cry to the hills couer vs, and to the mountaines fall vpon vs. And therefore, though they say, *Thy kingdome come*, yet they would be glad in their hearts that Gods kingdome might neuer come.

*Q. What is the second thing wee pray for?*

*A.* Secondly, wee pray for the day of our owne death, for no other end, but that wee may make an end of sinning, and displeasing of God. For seeing how prone wee are to euill, and how the number of our sinnes increaseth euery day like old trees that gather mosse; This must make vs weary of the world, and so to sigh and groane in our selues, desiring to bee dissolved, and to be with Christ.

*Q. May a man then pray for his owne death?*

*A.* A man may not pray for it of impatience as a number doe, who bee running out of the world, so soone as they feeble the crosse: But onely in the desire to be disburdened of the body of sinne, and to serue God in the holy heauens, with greater freedome and libertie of spirit then here they can doe.

*Q. What are the Euills that wee pray against?*

*A.* First, wee pray, that whereas wee haue kept open house for sinne and Satan these many yeares, they may no longer ouercome vs, and preuaile against vs.

Secondly, wee pray against all the letts and hinderances of Gods kingdome both at home and abroad, as the Turkes and the Pope.

Thirdly, wee pray against the loue of this world, that wee may not dore vpon it, desiring to prolong our dayes in it, but  
that

that wee may be alwayes ready to depart in peace, and to haste hence to our heavenly home.

*Q. What doe wee pray for in the third Petition?*

*A.* That wee may doe Gods will in Earth readily and willingly, as the Angels doe in Heauen. *Thy will be done, &c.*

*Q. How doth this Petition depend vpon the other?*

*A.* Before wee prayed that God would rule vs, and now wee pray that God would giue vs soft and plyable hearts that wee may yeeld our selues to be ruled by him.

*Q. What is the will of God?*

*A.* The will of God is that which is reuealed in his Word, and may bee considered in three things. First, it is Gods will wee should leaue our sinnes, before they leaue vs. Secondly, it is Gods will wee should lead a Christian and a godly life, 1. *Theff.* 4. 3. Thirdly, it is Gods will wee should beare quietly and contentedly whatsoever it shall please him in his wisdom to lay vpon vs. So that wee pray, that Gods will may be done.

{ *A nobis*, both of vs, &

{ *De nobis & nostris*, and of vs and ours.

*Qu. What are the good things wee pray for?*

*A.* Wee pray that wee may leaue our sinnes; that wee may leaue our swearing, because it is Gods will wee should not swear: our coueting, because it is Gods will wee should not couet.

*Qu. What is the second thing?*

*A.* Wee pray that wee may liue righteously, and holily in the world, that wee may loue our brethren, because it is Gods will wee should loue them; that wee may make conscience of all our wayes; because it is Gods will wee should make conscience of them.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That they which pray, that they may doe Gods will, and yet haue no care to doe it: They that pray against sinne, and yet hugge it, and keepe it warme in their bosomes, doe but mocke God in their prayers.

*Q. What is the third thing wee pray for?*

*A.* That wee may humble our selues with patience, and



contentment to those severall troubles and tryalls which the Lord shall bring vpon vs.

*Q. What learne we by this?*

*A.* That their sinne is great, who pray every day that Gods will may be done on them; And yet when it is done, fret and fume, and rage against it; and had rather a great deale their owne wills were done then the Lords.

*Q. How must wee doe the will of God?*

*A.* As the blessed Saints and Angells in Heauen doe it, though not in the same measure, yet in the same manner.

*Q. How doe the Angells doe it?*

*A.* First, they doe it willingly and chearefully, and therefore they are described to bee winged, to shew that they flie about it.

Secondly, they doe it faithfully and not by halfes.

Thirdly, they doe it constantly, as well at one time as at another.

*Qu. What then doe wee pray for in this later part of the Petition?*

*A.* First, wee pray that wee may cheerefully obey God like Christ, that said it was meate and drinke to him to doe his Fathers will.

Secondly, Wee pray that wee may not doe Gods will by halfes, but faithfully obey God in euery dutie required of vs.

Thirdly, wee pray that wee may be constant in this course not to serue God by moodes and fits, but at all times, and in all companies, as well in one state as in another.

*Q. Wee cannot possibly doe the will of God so perfectly as the Angells doe it.*

*A.* Indeed we cannot, so long as wee dwell in these weake houses of clay: Yet wee must still aspire to a better life, desiring in a greater measure to serue God.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* A cleere difference between the godly and the wicked; For the wicked euer thinke they haue religion and good liues enough, though they haue neuer so little. But the godly neuer satisfie themselves in it, but still desire to walke more obediently,

ently, faithfully and vprightly with God.

Qu. *What doe wee aske in the fourth Petition?*

A. All things needfull for this life.

Q. *Why doe wee pray for the things of this life first?*

A. First, to the end, that being dispatched of our worldly cares, and having things necessarie aforehand, wee might with more libertie seeke after those things which concerne the soule. *Give vs this day our daily bread.*

Secondly, that finding the Lord easie to yeeld in these things of lesse good, wee might bee the more imboldened to sollicite him for the greater. For hee that will not trust the Lord for his meat and drinke, will not trust him for the saving of his soule: And hee that thinkes the Lord will stand with him for a peece of bread, will easily thinke that God will stand with him for eternall life.

Q. *What is meant by Bread in this place?*

A. Not onely bread, but whatsoever is as needfull, and as comfortable as bread, as health and strength to worke in our Callings, houses to dwell in, peace and friends, and good servants, &c.

Qu. *Why doth the Lord name nothing but Bread?*

A. To teach vs to bee content, if wee haue no more but bread, seeing wee aske no more: if God giue more, wee are to take it thankfully, and to vse it well: But if God shall cut short our fare, and bring it to bread onely, yet wee are to rest with contentment in it, *Phil. 4. 11. 12.*

Qu. *What gather wee of this?*

A. That they who pray for heapes of gold and siluer, for stately and gay houses, for sumptuous fare, for great livings, and the like, sinne in praying, because not Christ, but Conscionnelle taught them to pray so.

Q. *Why doe wee aske our Bread of God, seeing many of vs haue meanes enen to get it?*

A. Because all our paines is not able to procure vs one morsell of bread, without the Lords blessing bee vpon it, and therefore wee pray God enen to glue vs that Bread that wee labour for, knowing that without his blessing wee may as soone

perish, when we haue the greatest meanes to feed vs, as when wee haue no meanes at all, *Psal. 127. 1. 2.*

*Qu. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That wee must as hardly begge bread of God, that is, good succession in our affaires, when wee haue the greatest meanes in the world, as when wee haue no meanes at all, neither money nor friend, nor counsell to compasse it.

*Q. What need they aske bread, who haue bread enough?*

*A.* First, though wee haue bread: yet the bread that wee haue is none of ours: For by sinne wee forfeit euery day all wee haue into the hands of God, and wee dispossesse our selues of all right, and title to it. And therefore vntill the Lord restore vs and giue it vs againe, wee doe but vsurpe vpon any thing that wee haue.

Secondly, though wee haue the substance of bread, yet wee haue not the staffe of bread, that is, the nourishing and feeding of it, but from God alone. Vntill God blesse it, as good take a mouthfull of grauell, as a mouth-full of meate. And therefore euen then, when wee haue our Tables full of bread; yet we had need pray still for our daily Bread, because our bread without his blessing shall no more nourish vs then a stone.

*Q. Why doe wee say; giue vs our bread, and not giue mee my Bread?*

*A.* To shew that wee must not regard our selues alone, but in a fellow feeling pray for other mens wants as well as for our owne.

*Q. Whom doth this condemne?*

*A.* First, it condemneth the couetous man who had rather say, Giue mee my Bread, then giue vs our bread, wishing well indeed to no body but himselfe?

Secondly, it condemneth those, who bee spoylers of their brethren. For it is as much as if hee should say to God; Lord doe thou giue him bread, and I will take it from him: Doe thou make him rich, and I will make him poore: Doe thou make him merry, and I will make him sad.

*Q. Why doe wee pray but for the Bread of one day?*

*A.* Christ teacheth vs thereby to restraime and cur short our cares



cates for the time to come, and not to bee tormented with the feare of any hard estate afore hand, but to resort to the Lord for the necessitie of the day in the day thereof, *Math. 6. 34.*

*Q. What encouragement haue wee to doe so?*

*A.* Gods care for the little Birds. For when they haue dyed, they know not where to suppe, and when they haue supd, they know not where to dyne, and yet God feedeth them from day to day; how much more safely may we rest vpon the prouidence of our God, assuring our selues, that he that feeds vs this day, will feed vs the next day, & the next, & so to our liues end.

*Q. What other reason is there?*

*A.* The Lord would bring vs euery day in prayer to him: For seeing wee aske but the bread of one day, when that day is past, our patent and our grace is out. And therefore wee must come to the Lord the next day to renew it againe.

*Q. What else doe wee learne by this?*

*A.* Wee aske our bread euery day of God, as being not able to liue any one day without him, and therefore it must bee our chiefest care to stand fast by God, to keepe him our friend, who-soeuer bee our foe, and that hee may bee pleased whosoever is displeased with vs.

*Q. Why doe wee say our Bread?*

*A.* Wee are hereby taught to aske our owne Bread, that which wee haue laboured for in some honest calling or other, for that onely is ours, which is gotten by lawfull and by honest meanes: That which is vnlawtully gotten is none of ours, it is not our bread which wee haue of God, but the diuill and sin is the purueyer and prouider of it.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* First, that a man cannot eate his Bread with a good conscience, that hath not done something according to his abilitie, strength and place, to make himselfe in some sort fit and worthy of it.

Secondly, that their sinne is great, who desire other mens bread, and are not contented with their owne. And therefore breake in vpon their brethren, seeking to defeat either their neighbours of their houses, or their seruants of their wa-

ges, or their labourers of their hyre, or the poore of their reliefe, which in right and conscience is due vnto them.

*Q. What is meant by daily Bread?*

*A.* That which is meete, and conuenient for the day. The Nobelman hath need of more then the meane man: hee that hath a greater charge, hath need of more, then hee that hath a lesse charge; And therefore in asking our daily bread, wee aske so much as may bee fit and conuenient for our state, *Prout. 30.*

*Q. And how much is conuenient for vs?*

*A.* The Lord bids vs not aske any set and certaine thing, but to leaue that to him, and to his most wise disposition, who knowes better, then wee what will serue our turnes.

*Q. What learne wee hence?*

*A.* That it can bee no small comfort to vs, that the Lord is most priuie to our estate, and knowes what children, what seruants, what charge wee haue, what earnings, what commings in, and what goings out, and accordingly will fit vs with that, which hee shall iudge to bee meetest for vs, *1. Pet. 5. 7.*

*Q. Doe wee aske these things absolutely of God?*

*A.* No, wee aske them no further then they may stand with Gods glorie, and therefore if they may bee any meanes whereby wee may glorifie God the better, wee pray that wee may haue them: if they may not, wee pray that both bread and friends, and strength, and health, and all may bee taken from vs.

*Q. What doe wee aske in the first Petition?*

*Forgiue vs our  
sinnes.*

*A.* Wee pray for the forgiuenesse of the sinnes that bee past.

*Q. Why is this Petition knit to the former?*

*A.* For two causes: First, because without the forgiuenesse of our sinnes, all the bread in the world will not doe vs any good: For what shall it profite a man to haue a mountaine of gold, and yet to carry a fire-marke in his soule, the brand and marke of a condemned man, and to know that whensoever he goes hence, hee goes damned to the deuill, *Math. 16. 16.*

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That

*A.* That euery Christian man and woman must make it their chiefeſt ſtudy, and their chiefeſt care to finde Mercy and fauour with God in the forgiuenelle of their finnes, rather then to inioy ten thouſand worlds without it.

*Q.* What is the ſecond reaſon?

*A.* Our finnes are ſo many and ſo grieuous againſt the Lord, that wee are not worthy of one morſell of meate to put into our mouthes: yea, wee deſerue euen to bee ſtarued, and famiſhed vpon the face of the earth. And therefore, becauſe our finnes are the barre and ſtop, that let and hinder Gods bleſſings from vs; therefore wee pray God to forgiue our finnes, that the true hindrance of our comforts being taken away, all his bleſſings in moſt rich and plentifull ſort may flowe vnto vs; *Ier. 5. 25.*

*Q.* Why are our finnes called debts?

*A.* Becauſe, as a debt bindes a man either to ſatiſfie the partie, or to goe to priſon: So our finnes binde vs, either to ſatiſfie Gods luſtice, or to goe to hell.

*Q.* What learne wee from hence?

*A.* Firſt, that wee are all in the Lords debt, and it is not ſome dribbling ſomme that wee owe him; but a thouſand Talents at the leaſt, more then wee and all the friends wee haue be able to diſcharge.

Secondly, that vnleſſe God be contented for them, wee are ſure to goe to hell, where wee ſhall endure, not a moneths or a yeares imprifonment; But wee ſhall lye bound in the chaynes of horror and darkneſſe, as long as there is a God in heauen to reuenge our finnes, and the Deuill in hell to torment vs for them.

Thirdly, that there is no way to deale with God, but onely by intreaty and by request: Wee cannot choppe and change with him as the Pope thinks; Lord I haue ſo many finnes, and here are ſo many good deeds for them: But wee muſt begge our pardon, and become humble ſuitours to the Throne of grace, that God for Chriſts ſake would ſhew Mercy vpon vs.

Fourthly, that ye ſhall finde the Lord ready for to yeeld vnto our ſute, eſpecially ſeeing the Lord Ieſus, who ſitteth at the right



right hand of God, is an Intercessour for vs ?

*Q. Must wee pray thus euery day ?*

*A.* As wee pray euery day for our daily Bread, so we must also pray daily for the pardon of our sinnes : The pardon of our sinnes being as needfull euery day as the bread that wee liue by.

*Qu. What may this teach vs ?*

*A.* That wee sinne euery day, howsoever God shall blesse vs or punish vs, or reach or touch vs with his Spirit, yet wee know aforehand, that wee shall sinne to morrow, and the next day, and so euery day to our dying day.

Secondly, that wee sinne often euery day, and therefore wee speake in the plurall number, *Forgiue vs our sinnes* : as hauing many sinnes to be forgiuen ; And though wee bee able to discern but a few of our sinnes : yet our ignorance is the greater, who sin many times, when wee thinke we doe not sinne.

Thirdly, that as wee sinne daily, so it must be our care euery day to make euen with the Lord, that wee come not with after reckonings, with sinnes of 10. 20. or 30. yeares old not repented of, but that euery day wee reconcile our selues to God, for the sinnes of that day, that whensoever wee shall die, wee may haue but the sinnes of one day.

*Q. What is meant by these words : For euen wee forgiue them.*

*A.* They containe, } 1. A Comfort.  
                          } 2. An Instruction.

*Qu. What is the comfort ?*

*A.* That if wee who are full of hatred and reuenge can forgiue our brethren : much more wil the Lord who is full of Mercy and compassion bee ready to forgiue vs. For wee are not to thinke, that wee can goe beyond the Lord in any grace, and therefore if wee can loue him that loues not vs, and passe by many wrongs wee may well thinke, wee shall finde the Lord much more fauourably inclined to vs.

*Q. Is our forgiuenesse a cause why God forgiues vs ?*

*A.* No : For if wee forgiue our brethren some liule fault, that is no reason why God should forgiue vs our huge and mighty

mightie finnes: But the Lord addes this as a sure testimonie of our soules, that if we who haue but a drop of Mercy can forgieue our Brethren, much more will the Lord, who is euen full of goodnesse forgieue vs.

*Q. What is the Instruction?*

*A.* That wee shall neuer finde fauour at Gods hands, till such time as our brethren finde loue and mercy, and good dealing at our hands. For looke what wee bee to others when they offend vs: the same wee shall finde God to vs, when wee offend him.

*Q. Whom doth this Doctrine condemne?*

*A.* First, it condemneth those who wil vse extremity to their brethren, that will not by any meanes bate of their right, but eagerly pursue euery aduantage they can get against them.

Secondly, it condemneth those that will say they forgieue and forger, and yet notwithstanding the memorie of it is most quicke in their hearts, and vpon euery little occasion they breake out againe. Alas, doe wee looke for such forgiuenesse at Gods hands? how is it then that our Brethren can finde no better at our hands.

Thirdly, it condemneth those that can bee content to forgieue some small offences of their brethren: but if it touch them somewhat neere in their goods or names, oh then the matter is heynous and so prejudiciall, it toucheth vs so deeply, that it may not in any wise finde fauour at our hands? Why alas our brethren cannot commit any so grieuous offence against vs, but wee commit farre greater against the Lord, and therefore as wee except against them: so wee may well looke, the Lord will except against vs.

*Q. What doe wee pray for in the first Petition?*

*A.* Wee pray for strength and grace against sinne.

*Q. Why are there two Petitions for the Soule, and but one for the Body?*

*A.* The Lord would teach vs thereby, that our care for heavenly things should be twice so much as our care for earthly; and therefore, where wee are once vpon our knees for the blessings of the body, wee should bee twice vpon our knees for

*And lead vs  
not into temp-  
tation.*

for the blessings of our Soules.

*Qu. How doth this Petition depend upon the former?*

*A.* In the former Petition we prayed for the pardon of our sinnes that be past, and now wee pray for grace and strength against those euills that be to come.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* First, that none are more subiect to Tentations then the godly; For of all men they are most layd vnto, sinne will bee euer nibbling, and the diuell will labour mightily to regaine his hold.

Secondly, that it is not enough to haue our sinnes pardoned in Christ, vnlesse wee haue also grace to lead a better life, and to abstaine from the same, or like sinnes in time to come.

*Qu. Doe not the Papists say well? Les vs not bee led?*

*A.* No, for they would seeme to bee wiser then Christ, and therefore they haue delayed his words, as being too harsh.

*Q. God tempts no man, James 1.13.*

*A.* It is one thing to tempt a man to sinne, another thing to lead a man to bee tempted of it. It was the deuill that tempted Christ in the desert, but it was the holy Ghost, that lead him forth as the Lords Champion into the field, *Math. 4.1.*

*Q. How may God worke in tentation, and yett bee free from sinne?*

*A.* First, by withdrawing his grace, and leauing vs to our selues, as if a man should lend another his staffe to goe by, when his legges be lame, and thereupon hee begins to despise him and to let him light, the other takes away his staffe, and the lame man fall: So God hauing lent vs his grace to walke by, when wee begin to thinke wee stand not any way beholden to him for it, but that wee could shifte as well without it, the Lord withdrawes his grace, and wee runne into sinne, and yett God is not the cause of our sinne, but our owne weaknesse not able to beare vp, and to sustaine it selfe.

Secondly, by offering occasion to trie, whether hee will sinne or no: As a man leaues a little loose money about the house to try whether his seruants, or his sonne will steale it: So God sends feare to tempt vs to see if wee will yeeld to feare,

Pride



Pride to tempt vs, &c. if wee doe yeeld, it is our fault not Gods, who did but vent vs and set vs a broach, and discouer the bad liquor that was in vs.

Thirdly, by causing the motion, but not the euill of the motion, as when the Sunne shineth vpon a dead carcasle there ariseth a stinking and a loathsome smell, and yet the Sun is not the cause of it, but the corruption of the carcasle: So in euery action God is the cause of the motion which is good: But if wee sinne in moouing, that comes of the Deuill or of our selues.

Fourthly, by ordering the euill of the Action to some good end. As a Father seeing his childe to bee busie about the fire, catcheth his finger and thrusts it to a coale, to make him the more affraid of it after: So God sometimes lets vs taste of sinne, that wee may the more detest it, and hate it while wee liue.

*Q. How many parts are there of this Petition?*

*A.* Two: First, wee pray that wee may not bee tempted to sinne. And secondly, though that wee bee tempted; yet that wee may not be overcome of sinne.

*Q. Why doe wee pray that wee may not bee tempted to sinne?*

*A.* Wee know our owne weaknesse to bee so great and vn-able to resist temptations, that wee pray that wee may not bee tempted: So readie wee are to yeeld to sinne, that wee pray we may not bee protoked to it. Often wee sinne, and oftner wee should sinne, if wee were oftner tempted to it; Many times we are angrie, and yet if wee had oftner occasions, wee would oftner be angrie.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That their sinne is great who sling themselves into temptation, that will take vp their dwellings in those Townes, and venture themselves into those companies, where they know are many and strong entisements vnto sinne. What doe they else but offer the deuill Blockes of aduantage against themselves, and hold him the stirrop, that his Tentations may the more easily mount vpon them.

*Qu. What are the Euills that wee pray against?*

*A.* They

*A.* They are of two sorts,   
 1. *Sinne without vs*, as the Deuill and the world.   
 2. *Sinne within vs*, as the corruptions and lusts of our owne hearts.

*Q. What doe wee pray for against the Deuill?*

*A.* That whereas the deuill is woont to pull a vizard vpon vpon his face, and to translate himselfe into an Angell of light, that wee may haue wisdom to discerie him, and strength from heauen to stand against him.

*Q. Doth not euery one hate the Deuill?*

*A.* Indeed many will say, he vpon the Deuill, and say they detest him with all their hearts; and yet in leading a prophane and a wicked life, they beare him about in their bodyes with them.

*Q. What doe wee pray for against the World?*

*A.* First, that wee may not bee poysoned, and corrupted with the bad examples that bee abroad: That wee may not catch the infection, but keepe our selues vnspotted to the world.

Secondly, that neither our friends by flatterie, nor our foes by feare, may quench vs in good things, and drawe our hearts from God.

Thirdly, that our worldly cares may not ouergrow our godly cares, so that wee haue more loue to the frothy things of this life, then to those that concerne the life to come.

*Q. What doe wee pray for against our owne lusts?*

*A.* That God will weaken the strength and power of sinne in vs euery day, that wee may feele it either cleane killed or so mightily weakened that as a man that hath receiued his deaths wound; though hee liues and breathes, yet languisheth and fainteth, and droopeth euery day more and more vntill he dye: So sinne may haue lesse and lesse strength, till at length it haue no strength at all.

*Q. Why doe wee aske all these things of God?*

*A.* Because wee are not able of our selues to stand; the least enemy being stronger then wee, and therefore wee pray to bee girded with the strength of God, that through his might wee

may doe that which of our selues wee should neuer doe.

*Qu. What other thing doe wee pray for?*

*A.* That if wee fall into sinne, that wee may not lye in it, but that the Lord will finde vs out in our falls, and seeke vp our lost soules, and bring vs vpon the shoulders of his mercy to his fold againe.

*Q. Doe the godly sinne then as well as the wicked?*

*A.* Yea, but the godly are euer desirous to bee deliuered from sinne, and therefore doe both pray and watch against it, whereas the wicked hugge it and keepe it warme in their bosomes, and are well content to continue in it, vsing no meanes to get out of it.

*Q. What meanes doth God use in deliuering vs from sinne?*

*A.* The chiefeft meanes, is the Ministry of the word, it being the hand of God, whereby hee pulleth vs out of sinne, as a beast is lugg'd out of the mire: And therefore wee pray, that wee may bee obedient to it, and profite by it, that it may make vs wise vnto Saluation, and mighty through God to withstand all assaults that rise against vs.

*Q. What is the last part of the Prayer?*

*A.* The Conclusion or shutting vp of the Prayer.

*Q. What is the vse of the Conclusion?*

*A.* It containeth certaine Reasons to strengthen our faith, *For thine is the* that wee shall be heard. For this is a great cause why our pray- *kingdome, &c.* ers come so coldly from vs without heart or life, because wee stand not strongly perswaded in our hearts, that wee shall fare the better for our prayers, and shall neuer returne emptie handed from the Lord.

*Q. What are the Reasons?*

*A.* The first is taken from the kingdome or gouernment of God q.d. Lord thou art our king. And therefore as it is for the glory of a King, that his Subiects bee in good state, safe from their enemies, and abounding with all good things: So thou Lord shalt much commend thy selfe, and thy gouernment to the world, if thou prouidest well and sufficiently for vs, who bee the worshippers and seruers of thee.

*Q. Is this consideration so full of comfort?*

*A.* It.



*A.* It must needs yeeld all the children of God great comfort, that the kingdome is come into their Fathers hand, and hee hath taken vpon him the care and the prouision for them, who sitteth at the sterne of the world, and doth whatsoever he will both in heauen and earth, *Psal. 97. 1.*

*Q. What is the second Reason?*

*A.* The second is taken from the power of God q.d. Lord I haue asked nothing, but thou art able to giue it : My wants bee not so many, but thou art able to supply them : My sinnes bee not so great, but thou canst forgieue them : My enemies bee not so strong, but thou canst subdue them : I therefore cannot but haue great hope, seeing it is in thy power and hand to doe mee good.

*Q. What is the third Reason?*

*A.* The third is taken from the glory of God. Indeed if wee pray not, then it is our fault if wee speed not well : But if wee pray in Faith and reuerence, and make our requests known vnto the Lord ; then it shall bee for the Lords honour to be as good as his word, and hee shall get himselfe great praise in the world by hearing the poore and weake prayers that bee made vnto him.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That the Lord hath ioyned his owne glory with our good, and therefore will heare vs and blesse vs, if it bee but to hold vp his owne estimation and honour in the world, *Ezek. 36. 22.*

*Q. What other sense doe these words yeeld vs (Thine is the Glorie.)*

*A.* Whatsoeuer gift or Gracethou shalt bestow vpon vs, wee will wholly imploy it to thy honour : wee will rather seeke thy glory, then our owne praise, or peace, or pleasure in the good vse of it, *Psal. 81. 8.*

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That seeing wee aske health, and peace and plenty to this end, that wee may glorifie God the better, that when wee haue these things wee bee not found to bee farre lesse carefull of it, then before we had them, *Deut. 32. 15.*

*Q. What*

*Q. What else doe you note in these Reasons?*

*A.* That all the Reasons bee from without vs, and none from within vs, there being nothing in the best of vs, in the merit and worthinesse whereof, wee may thinke to bee heard; whatsoeuer enclines the Lord to heare vs, it is chiefly and wholly in himselfe and not in vs, *Dan. 19. 18. 19.*

*Q. What is that other meanes of Strengthening Faith?*

*A.* The Sacraments?

*Q. Whence haue the Sacraments their name?*

*A.* Of the Latine word *Sacramentum*, which signifies an *sacrament*. oath, whereby Souldiers were wont to binde themselves to be true to their Captaines: So in the Sacraments, wee sweare and binde our selues to bee true and faithfull seruants vnto Iesus Christ.

*Q. What is a Sacrament?*

*A.* It is a visible signe of inuisible Grace: So that in euery Sacrament there are two things. The visible signe that we may see: And the inuisible Grace that wee cannot see. As in *Baptisme*, there is a washing of the body, and there is washing of the soule: The washing of the body with water, a man may see: But the washing of the Soule with the Blood of Christ, he cannot see: So in the Lords Supper, there is a feeding of the body, and there is a feeding of the soule? The feeding of the body with Bread and Wine, hee may see: But the soule with the Body and the Blood of Christ, hee cannot see, but by faith.

*Q. What is the vse of a Sacrament?*

*A.* To confirme our faith by that which wee see, in the truth of that which wee doe not see. As in *Baptisme*, the washing of the Body with water, assureth our hearts, that our soules are likewise washed with the blood of Christ. And the receiuing of Bread and Wine in the Supper is an euidence that the Body and Blood of Christ is as truly receiued by faith, *Rom. 4. 8.*

*Q. What is the visible signe in a Sacrament?*

*A.* It is the outward Element, together with those Ceremonies that are vsed about it. As in *Baptisme*, water, and the pouring on of water: In the Lords Supper, Bread, and the  
K breaking

breaking, and taking and eating of it.

*Q. What is the Inuisible Grace?*

*A.* Christ with all his benefites, as truly offered to our hearts and soules, as the outward Elements are to the body, *Galat.*

3.27.

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* Two things. First, that wee receiue no more in the Sacraments, then wee doe in the bare preaching of the word. For the same Christ and the same Benefites are rendered to our faith in both, onely the signification is more liuely in the Sacraments, and the promises of Grace more particularly applied, *Iohn 1.12.*

Secondly, that the old Fathers receiued the same Grace by their Sacraments, that wee doe by ours, for they receiued Christ.

*Q. How many Sacraments are there?*

*A.* Two, { Baptisme &  
The Lords Supper. }

*Q. What is the outward signe in Baptisme?*

*Baptisme.*

*A.* Water, and the pouring on of Water.

*Q. What is the signification of it.*

*A.* As the Water poured on the body washeth away the filthinesse of the flesh: So the blood of Christ being poured vpon the soule, washeth away the filthinesse of sinne.

*Q. What sinne haue children of a day old?*

*A.* They haue Originall sinne, which is a secret naughtinesse of nature, whereby they are wholly giuen and inclined to that which is euill, *Isay 48.8.*

*Q. How is this taken away in Baptisme?*

*A.* In Baptisme wee receiue the Spirit of Christ, and this Spirit workes vpon our hearts renewing them, and enclining them to better things, and euery day by little and little preuailing and getting strength and ground of those corruptions that are in vs, *Tir. 3.5.*

*Q. May Children bee saved that dye without Baptisme?*

*A.* Vndoubtedly they may; For God hath not tyed his Grace to the Sacraments, but that many times hee workes without



without them : And therefore it is not the want of Baptisme, but the contempt of Baptisme, that bringeth danger, *Act. 10.*

44. & 47.

*Q. What proofe is there of it?*

*A.* Circumcision was as straightly required in the old Law, as Baptisme is in the New Testament, *Gen. 17. 14.* But children that dyed without Circumcision might bee saued ; As namely those that dyed before the 8. day ; And therefore Children may be saued without Baptisme.

*Q. What other proofe is there?*

*A.* Children that are elected to Saluation, are holy before Baptisme, *1. Cor. 7. 14.* they are within the Couenant, *Gen. 17. 7.* the kingdome of heauen belongs vnto them, *Mark. 10. 14.* And therefore vndoubtedly they may be saued.

*Qu. How then doth our Sauiour say, Iohn 3. 5. Except a man bee borne of Water and the Spirit hee cannot enter into the kingdome of God?*

*A.* Wee are to marke the person to whom hee speaks it, to *Nicodemus*, who might haue beene baptised if hee would : So that our Sauiours speech reacheth no further, but to those who may haue Baptisme and will not: For if none absolutely might bee saued without Baptisme, how could the Theefe bee saued who was conuerted vpon the Crosse, *Luk. 2. 3.*

*Q. Is it lawfull for a priuate person to Baptise?*

*A.* No: For this is to corrupt the holy Seales : For none may meddle in the holy things, but they that are warrantred thereunto by the Lord: But priuate persons men or women, haue no warrant from the Lord to Baptise, and therefore they may not presume to intermeddle in it, *Heb. 5. 4.*

*Q. What other Reason is there?*

*A.* Baptisme is a part of the publike Ministry of the Church, *Mark. 28. 19.* But priuate persons, and chiefly women may not intermeddle in the Churches Ministry. And therefore they may not take vpon them to Baptise, *1. Tim. 2. 11. 12.*

*Q. Yea, but there is a case of necessitie in it?*

*A.* There is no necessitie to breake the Law of God, if we may haue the Sacraments according to the Lords institution,

we are to accept them with Thankfulness, if wee cannot, wee must not thinke it lawfull to come by them wee care not how.

*Q. Zipporah in case of necessitie did Circumcise her child.*

*A.* The reason doth not hold ; For the Sacraments of the New Testament are tyed to the Ministry ; And therefore none but the Ministers may intermeddle in them : But the Sacraments of the Old Testament were nottyed to the Priesthood (as appeareth) for that Christ and his Apostles caused kill the Passeouer, who were not of the Tribe of *Leui*, *Luk. 22. 19*: Also in that *Ioshua* did circumcise, *Iosh. 5. 3*.

*Q. What is the other Sacrament ?*

*A.* The Sacrament of the Lords Supper.

*Q. Why is the Lords Supper needfull after wee be Baptised ?*

*A.* Because by Baptisme wee doe enter into the household of God, and by the Lords Supper wee are fed, and nourished in the same : So that Baptisme is the Seale of our entrance into Christ : and the Lords Supper giues vs our further growth and continuance in him, *1. Cor. 12. 13*.

*Q. How is this further declared ?*

*A.* By a similitude. For as a Master makes provision for his Family, that they may be the more able to goe through with their worke : So the Lord hath appointed this Sacrament, for the strengthening of his people, that they may bee the better able to hold out in the holy labours and duties required at their hands.

*Q. What learne wee by this ?*

*A.* That they who come seldome to the Sacrament must needs bee very faint, and weake in the spirit ; As a man feesles his strength through long fasting to abate, so that he is not able to walke with any cheerefulness and comfort in his calling.

*Q. What is the outward signe in the Lords Supper ?*

*A.* Bread and Wine, and the Sacramentall Rites that bee vsed about them.

*Q. What doth the Bread signifie ?*

*A.* It signifies the Body of Christ.

*Q. What*

The Lords  
Supper.

*Q. What resemblance is there betweene the Bread and Christs Body?*

*A.* First, as the body cannot liue without bread, no more can our soules liue without Christ. And therefore wee must labour for Christ, as wee doe for bread, *Iohn 6. 51.*

Secondly, as bread strengthens the body, & makes it the more able and fit to worke: so that the eye sees the cleerer, the hand mooues the quicker, the foot sets the faster for it: So Christ receiued by faith strengtheneth the Soule, and makes it mighty through God, to performe the duties of obedience required of it, *Phil. 4. 13.*

*Q. What Bread did Christ vse in the Sacrament?*

*A.* Ordinarie and common Bread, such as was vsually at that time eaten with their meates.

*Qu. Why did Christ vse common Bread?*

*A.* First, lest men (if the food had beene finer) should haue left the care of feeding their soules, and fallen to filling their bellies.

Secondly, that as *Naman* learned, because the Waters of *Jordan* were not better then the Waters of *Damascus*: Therefore, it was not the water of *Jordan*, but the God of *Israell*, that cleansed his leprosie: So because this Bread is but ordinarie and common bread; wee may therefore know, that it is not the bread, but Christ signified by the bread, that sanctifieth the receiuer.

*Q. Why did Christ take the Bread?*

*A.* Christ by taking the Bread from the Table, shewed that hee would separate it to another vse: So that where before it serued but to strengthen the body, now it should serue to the strengthening of our Faith.

*Q. How did Christ blesse the Bread?*

*A.* As the Lord blessed the Seuenth day, by appointing that day to an holy vse: So Christ blessed the Bread by making it an holy Signe, and a Sacrament of himselfe.

*Qu. What doth the breaking of the Bread signifie?*

*A.* The breaking, and tearing of Christs body vpon the Crosse. For as it is not the whole loafe, but the bread broken



that feeds vs: So it is not the life of Christ, but the death of Christ; not Christ walking and working Miracles; but Christ Crucified, Rent and torne with the Nayles and Speare, that brings sound peace and comfort to the heart.

*Q. What are wee bidden to take in this Sacrament?*

*A.* Two things; Bread to the feeding of our bodies, and Christ himselfe to the feeding of our soules: For as the Bread is offered to our bodies: So Christ himselfe is offered to our faith.

*Qu. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That hee which comes to this Sacrament, must bring two hands with him: An hand of the body to receiue the Bread, and an hand of Faith to receiue Christ, *Iohn 1. 12.*

*Qu. Doe not all receiue Christ that come to the Sacraments?*

*A.* No: For then euery one should bee the better for it, whereas now many through their owne default are not the better, but the worse after, God iustly reuenging their irreuerence and contempt, *1. Cor. 11. 17.*

*Qu. Who bee they that take no good by this Sacrament?*

*A.* First, they that want Faith, which is declared by their euill life: For they wanting the hand of Faith, must needs defeatethemselues of the whole fruite of the Sacrament which is receiued by Faith.

Secondly, such of the godly, as doe not quicken and stirre vp their Faith, by priuate prayer and meditation when they come to receiue: For as a man that hath his arme benumbed, or asleepe, is not able to reach out his hand to receiue the Bagge of gold that is offered him: So if our faith bee dead and cold, and not quickened vp, wee shall goe from the Sacrament as emptie as wee came.

*Q. How can wee receiue Christs Body that is absent in heauen?*

*A.* By Faith wee may make it present, setting Christ as liuely before the inward eyes of our Soules, as if wee saw him hanged, nayled, crowned, bleeding vpon the Crosse: So *Abraham* by faith had as liuely a sight of Christ, as if with his bodily

illy eyes, hee had looked vpon him, *Iohn 8.56.* So the Israelites did eate and drinke Christ in the Desart, *1. Cor. 10. 3. 4.* and yet Christ was not borne till 1500. yeares after.

*Q. How are the godly said to eate Christ?*

*A.* As a man is said to eate the meate that hee liues by, which hee doth apply, and appropriate to his body to the nourishing and feeding of the same; euen so when by speciall faith wee doe apply Christ vnto our selues, and make him ours, so that wee liue by Christ as a man liues by meate: then wee are said to eate Christ.

*Qu. How is the Bread the body of Christ?*

*A.* It is not verily and indeed his body: (For Christs body is in Heauen onely, *Act. 3. 21.*) but it is his body Sacramentally, that is, a certaine pledge and token of his body. For as the Rocke is called Christ, because it signifies Christ, *1. Cor. 10. 4.* So here the bread is called Christs Body, because it signifies his body.

*Q. Doe wee then receiue nothing but a Signe of his Body?*

*A.* Yes, wee receiue the very body of Christ by Faith: for the bread which wee receiue with our mouthes, is a true token that Christs body is receiued by faith: For as a man that takes a key in signe of possession takes not the bare signe, but the very possession together with the signe: So they that worthily Communicate, receiue not a bare signe of the Body, but the very body it selfe spiritually and by faith.

*Q. What difference is there then betweene the Popsish opinion and ours?*

*A.* They thinke that they eate Christ corporally, and carnally with their teeth, and therefore they cage him vp in the consecrated Host, and hold that a cat or a mouse may deuour him. But we (knowing that Christ is not food for the belly, but food for the soule) affirme that Christ is not eaten carnally with the teeth, but spiritually by faith, *Iohn 6. 63. 1. Cor. 10.*

34.

*Q. Why doth Christ adde, My body which is giuen for you?*

*A.* To shew that it is not Christs body glorious in Heauen set downe in great Maiestie vpon the Throne of God, but it is

his wounded body, his bleeding body, his dead body, that our faith must feed vpon: So that here we are led backe to the crosse of Christ, that wee may lay to our mouthes, and euer sucke life and Saluation out of his bleeding sides.

*Q. How may wee feed vpon the dead body of Christ?*

*A.* By faith wee must set our selues vpon Mount *Caluery*, and there behold our Lord vpon the Crosse with his shoulders trickling, with his head spinning, with his hands streaming, with his sides gushing, all his body running downe with blood, and then say, Behold, this is the Body that is giuen for mee: These sides were whipped, that mine might bee spared: These hands were nayled that mine might bee freed: These cheekes were buffeted, that mine might be kissed: This head was crowned with Thornes, that mine might be crowned with glorie: These torments Christ suffered on Earth, that I might not suffer greater things in Hell, *Zach. 12. 10.*

*Q. What is the second Reason?*

*A.* To shew that wee were the Authours, and causes of the death of Christ. It was our sinne that brought all these punishments and these paines vpon him: As an vnthrif that comes behinde hand, and his suretie is made to pay for all: So all our sinnes were charged vpon Christs head, and hee was faine to suffer whatsoeuer wee should haue suffered for them, *Psalmes 53. 5.*

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That if wee detest *Judas*, that betrayed Christ, and *Pilate* that condemned him, and the *Jewes* that killed him; Much more should wee hate our sinnes, that were the chiefe causes of his death.

*Q. To what end must wee celebrate the Lords Supper?*

*A.* To stirre vp our faith to a more liuely consideration of the death of Christ.

*Q. Is there any that forget the Death of Christ?*

*A.* Too many forget it, or very coldly consider it. First, they that will doe nothing for their brethren, little considering how much Christ hath done for them. Secondly, they that live in sinne, little consider, what Christ suffered for it. Thirdly,



Thirdly, they that will beare no disgrace for Christ, little remember how hee was disgraced for them. Lastly, they that will sell themselues for a trifle to the Deuill, little consider how dearly they were bought.

*Q. Why are there two signes in the Lords Supper, and but one in Baptisme?*

*A.* Christ is set forth in Baptisme, as washing the soule from sinne: And therefore, because water of it selfe is enough to wash the body, therefore there needed nothing else to signifie the washing of the soule. But in the Sacrament of the Supper, Christ is proposed, as a nourishment feeding vs and vpholding vs in the life of Grace: And therefore, because bread is not sufficient to sustaine the bodily life without wine, nor wine without bread. Therefore two Signes were appointed, to shew that wee haue our whole nourishment by Christ.

*Qu. What resemblance is there betwene the Wine and Christs blood?*

*A.* As Wine maketh glad the heart of men, and a man hauing tasted of it, forgetteth the trouble and the miserie that lies vpon him: So the blood of Christ (which speaketh better things then the blood of *Abel*, euen peace and saluation to those that killed him) bringeth vnspeakable ioy and comfort to the heart, *Eph. 2. 13.*

Secondly, as wine breeds good blood, & good spirits in a man, and a man hauing tasted of it, the very colour and the strength of it will appeare in his face; yea, it will make his very breath smell the sweeter for it: So the blood of Christ breedes good thoughts, and good desires, and good affections in the heart, and a man hauing tasted of it by faith, all his actions and all his thoughts will be full of the good taste, and good relish of the same.

*Q. When did Christ ordaine this Sacrament?*

*A.* After Supper, that is, after the eating of the Paschall lambe. When they had now sufficiently filled themselues with meate, and so needed not any further nourishment for this life; to shew that it is not the bodily life, but the spirituall, that hee seekes to feed, and to nourish in them, *Luke 22. 20.*

*Q. What*

*Q. What learne wee by this?*

*A.* That men must come to the Lords Table not to fill their bellies, but to feed their soules, to haue their faith strengthened, their zeale kindled, their loue increased, all their graces to bee quickened in them.

*Qu. What else may bee observed in the time?*

*A.* That the Disciples hauing supped before, had so moderately vsed the matter, that they were fit to receiue the Sacrament afterwards, which may teach vs to vse such sobriety and moderation in our meates, that wee bee not thereby made any way vnfit for holy duties.

*Q. Whom doth this meet withall?*

*A.* It meetes with those, who stuffe themselues with meate, especially vpon the Sabboth day; That thereby they become vtterly vnfit for any holy Dutie, being readier to sleepe then to heare, and to seeke ease for the body, then any comfort for the soule.

*Qu. Is the Cuppe indifferently to bee administred vnto all?*

*A.* If the Bread must bee administred vnto all, much more the Cuppe, Christs commandement being more expresse for the Cuppe, *Math. 26. 17.*

*Qu. Why did Christ make such expresse mention of the Cuppe?*

*A.* Christ being a Prophet foresaw in his Spirit, that the Pope would denie the people the Cuppe, but not the Bread, and therefore hee hath giuen a more expresse charge for the Cuppe, to breake the necke of this heresie before it rose.

*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That the Papists bearing hatred to the truth, through the iust iudgement of God vpon them, are commonly cast vpon these errors, which may most easily and most plainly, be conuinced by the Scriptures.

*Qu. How is Wine the Blood of Christ?*

*A.* It is not properly indeed his blood. (For Christs blood was not then in the Cuppe, but in the veynes and arteries of his Body, else how could the souldiers haue shed it the next day,) but it is called his blood, because it is a signe and a figure of his blood.

*Q. How*

*Q. How is this proved?*

*A.* First, the drinking of blood was condemned by the Law as an horrible thing, *Leu. 7. 27.* but Christ neuer brake the Law, *Mat. 5. 17.* And therefore hee dranke not his owne blood, nor commanded others to drinke it carnally.

Secondly, Christ expounds himselfe; For lest some should mistake his meaning, he shewes in the very next verse, that it was not Blood, but very Wine, that hee dranke, *Mat. 26. 29.*

*Q. Why is Christs Blood called the Blood of the new Testament?*

*A.* Because the new Testament was ratified and confirmed by it, *Heb. 9. 16.*

*Q. What is a Testament?*

*A.* It is that which wee commonly call a dead mans Will, whereby hee giues away his goods, and disposeth of his lands and liuings that belong vnto him. Such a will Christ made at his death, that hee gaue away all he had. The Souldiers had his Garments, the graue had his Body, heauen had his Soule: But his righteousnesse, his holinesse, his merits, his kingdome and glory he bestowed vpon his people.

*Q. How many Wills did the Lord make?*

*A.* The Lord made two } An Old Will,  
Wills or Testaments, } And a New Will, } *Gal. 4. 24.*

*Q. What was the tenour of the Old Will or Testament?*

*A.* Therein the Lord bequeathed life and Saluation to those onely that fulfill the Law, *Rom. 10. 5.*

*Q. What is the tenour of the New Testament?*

*A.* Therein the Lord bequeathes heauen, and the happinesse thereof to those that beleue in Christ, *Rom. 10. 9.*

*Q. Why did the Lord make this later Testament?*

*A.* Because wee were all cut off of all by the former, for that gaue vs nothing, but vpon condition that wee should fulfill the Law, and therefore seeing wee could not performe the condition, wee could not recouer one penny by the Will. Therefore the Lord to relieue vs made a new will, and annexed an easier condition: That all should be saued who beleue in Christ, *Heb. 8. 6. 7.*

*Q. What*



*Q. What gather wee of this?*

*A.* That the Papiſts folly is exceeding great, who make our ſtate farre worſe by the ſecond Teſtament then it was by the firſt. For by the firſt Teſtament Merits onely were required to Saluation: But by the later (as they ſay) both our whole taſke of workes is required, and beſides that, Faith in the Mediatour; So that our condition is now harder then in the Old Teſtament, God requiring then but workes onely; but now as they ſay, both faith and workes, as needfull to Saluation.

*Q. Why doth Chriſt ſay his Blood is ſhed for many?*

*A.* To ſhew that all haue not benefite by the blood of Chriſt. For though Chriſts blood bee a fountaine to waſh away vncleanneſſe: Yet wee ſee a number had rather runne further into the mire, then come to the laour of Chriſts blood to waſh away any one corruption that is in them.

*Q. Why did Chriſt ſhed his Blood?*

*A.* To purchaſe pardon, and forgiuenefſe for our ſinnes, Chriſt ſuffering that in his body and ſoule, which wee ſhould haue ſuffered for our ſinnes.

*Q. Haue wee no other benefite by the Blood of Chriſt?*

*A.* Yes: Through the blood of Chriſt, wee bee not onely diſcharged of the ſinnes that be paſt, but wee haue ſtrength and power againſt thoſe Tentations and euill motions that bee to come, *Heb. 9. 14.*

*Qu. How haue wee this?*

*A.* Euen as a Corraſiue, being applied vnto the diſeaſed part, eates out the corrupt fleſh, and drawes out the poyſon and the venome that is in it: euen ſo the blood of Chriſt being applied by faith eates out the dead affections, and ſuckes out the Cankered corruptions that are in it.

*Q. Why then doth Chriſt mention no benefite but Remiſſion of ſinnes?*

*A.* Becauſe this is the chiefeſt. For euery day wee deſerue to bee caſt into Hell; and wee giue the Lord iuſt cauſe to ſtrip vs, and to take away all his bleſſings from vs: And therefore if Chriſts blood did not obtaine pardon for our ſinnes, we might not looke to liue one day in any tolerable eſtate.

*Q. May*

*Q. May all come to receiue the Sacrament?*

*A.* No, none but they, who vpon due tryall finde themselves meet and fit to receiue it, *1. Cor. 11. 28.*

*Q. How must a man make tryall of his fitnessse?*

*A.* First, whether hee bee Gods seruant or no. For God hath furnished his Table for none, but for his owne people, and therefore vnlesse a man can approoue himselfe to bee one of Gods Family, and of Gods household, heemay not presse, and presume to come vnto it, *1. Cor. 10. 21.*

*Qu. Wherefore may not others come?*

*A.* If a man had provided a good meale for his seruants that haue done his worke, and a sort of Russians, and roysters, that haue done nothing for him, should come in and eate it vp, would not hee frowne and take on, when hee should spie them at his Board: So God hauing provided this Sacrament for his Seruants, will not take it well, if heespie any other there, that haue not serued him, *Math. 22. 12.*

*Qu. How shall a man know, whether hee bee Gods seruant or not?*

*A.* By considering whose businesse it is that hee hath laboured in, whether it be Gods worke, or the deuills worke which he hath done. Loue, and Patience, and Temperance and holinesse be Gods workes: But malice and enuie, and slandering, and lying, and swearing bee the deuills workes: So that a man may soone see what Master hee hath serued, *Rom. 6. 16.*

*Q. What is the second Point of a mans tryall?*

*A.* If hee bee Gods seruant, hee must then see with what faithfulnessse hee hath walked in his seruice, how hee hath carryed himselfe towards God, the Master of the house, whether hee hath loued him, feared him, serued him, obeyed him, beene thankfull for his mercies; humbled by his Iudgements, and how hee hath carryed himselfe towards his fellow Seruants in the house, whether hee hath sought their comfort, strengthened them in good things, tendered their credite, &c. 3. How hee hath liued towards himselfe in the moderate vse of his Christian liberties, in eating, drinking, sleeping, sowing, &c. *Psal. 119. 59.*

*Q. What*

*Q. What is the third Point of a mans tryall?*

*A.* When a man sees how loofely, and how vnfaithfully he hath done his worke; how ill hee hath performed his taske. Then he must consider, whether hee be truly sorry for it, whether hee be euen ashamed of his negligence, and of his sloath, that hee hath liued no better towards God, towards man, towards himselfe; and whether he haue no remorse nor feeling of it, *Exod. 12. 8.*

*Q. What is the fourth Point?*

*A.* Then hee must consider, whether he doe not desire to rise out of his estate, and whether hee bee carefull to vse the meanes in reconciling himselfe to his brethren; in seeking to be at one with God, and so minding to come to the Sacrament and for no other end, but to renew the Couenant between God, and his soule, and to draw strength from Christ, to liue better after then before, *Ier. 50. 5.*

*Q. What is the fift Point.*

*A.* Lastly, whether if God shall set him vpon cleere board againe, hee haue a full purpose to watch better ouer his wayes, neuer to liue as hee hath liued, to auoyde the occasions of sinne, and to take more paines for the nourishing, and increasing of good things in his heart.

*Qu. What is the vse of this?*

*A.* That a man finding these things in some measure in himselfe, may be bold to come with comfort: But they that haue no care to get them, may well looke for a cold welcome of the Lord.

*Q. How are wee to behaue our selues in the receiuing of the Sacrament?*

*A.* First, wee are to come with great reuerence, as into Gods presence; with great care, that wee doe not prouoke the Lord by any light, or wanton, or vnseemly behauiour of ours, that the Lord spie no contempt, no loosenesse, no prophane-nesse in vs, *Leuit. 10. 3.*

*Q. How is this declared?*

*A.* If a man were to goe but into the presence of a Prince, how carefull would hee bee, neither to doe nor to speake any thing



thing that might offend : How much more when wee come in-  
to the presence of Almighty God, must wee take great heed,  
that wee doe not the least things that may be displeasing in his  
sight.

*Q. What is the second Point ?*

*A.* Secondly, we must apply our selues to the Action that  
we haue in hand, bethinking our selues what wee came for :  
namely, to haue our sinnes weakened, our faith strengthened,  
our zeale kindled, our care quickened, our Graces nourished,  
and answerably thereunto labouring and indeauouring, the  
supplying of our wants, to draw life and strength from the  
dead body of our Sauiour Christ, that as the woman was hea-  
led by touching him, *Mark. 5. 29.* and streight way the course  
of her blood was dried vp, and she felt in her body that shee  
was healed of her plague : So wee touching Christ by Faith,  
may haue the course of sinne stopped, and the fountaine of vn-  
cleaneesse dried in vs all.

*Q. What is the third Point ?*

*A.* Thirdly, wee must looke that our hearts consent with  
our mouthes in the prayers of the Church : That wee lye not  
to God, and say wee bewaile our sinnes, when indeed wee bee  
neuer a whit sorry for them : That we repent vs of our faults,  
when in truth wee haue not so much as a purpose to amend :  
Wee lift vp our hearts to God, when many times wee doe not  
so much as thinke of God. For what an heauy thing is it to  
sinne there, where wee come to craue pardon of our sinnes,  
*I say 65. 3.*

*Q. What is the fourth Point ?*

*A.* Fourthly, wee are to marke what is done in the holy mi-  
nistration, not to sit in a browne study, as a number doe, but to  
fixe our eyes vpon the Sacramentall signes, and when wee see  
the Bread broken and pulled in peeces ; Then to thinke, euen  
so was the Bodie of our Lord, rent and torne vpon the Crosse  
for our sinnes. When wee see the Wine poured out ; Then to  
thinke, euen so was the Blood of Christ poured out of his  
Bodie, that I might haue health and comfort by it : And there-  
fore

fore when I reach out my hand to receiue the bread : Then I must looke that my heart be ready to receiue Christ who is offered to my Faith.

*Q. What is the first Point ?*

*A.* Firstly, the Lord hauing sealed the Couenant on his part ; wee are likewise to Couenant on our parts, that seeing it hath pleased God to forgie the sinnes that bee past, and to bring vs into fauour againe ; That therefore by his Blessing, wee will neuer liue as wee haue liued ; wee will neuer spend our time as wee haue spent it ; wee will neuer loue sinne as wee haue loued it : But the rest of the dayes, that wee haue to liue, shall bee wholly dedicated and vowed vnto the Lord.

*Q. What is the last Point ?*

*A.* Lastly, when our selues haue receiued, then wee are to looke how others receiue ; that seeing wee bee all seruants of one Lord, all feed at one Table, all nourished with one meat : That therefore, there may be more mercy, more kindenesse, more Christian loue among vs : And it may bee our shame ; that wee cannot liue peaceably together on Earth ; who hope one day to liue ioyfully together in heauen, *1. Cor. 10. 17.*

*Q. What are wee to doe after wee haue receiued ?*

*A.* Wee are to giue the Lord great thanks for the death of his Sonne, for giuing vs our part in him, and for the holy vse of the Sacraments, wherein Christ is so freely set forth, that wee may after a sort taste him with our tongues, feele him with our fingers, sinell him with our noses, behold him with our eyes, and euen feele him sensibly bestowed vpon vs, *Psal.*

*116. 12. 13.*

*Q. What is the second thing ?*

*A.* Secondly, wee must haue great care to liue better after, then before : that wee fall not backe to our old sinnes, and suffer our woonted malice, and sloth and vanitie to creepe vpon vs: and this not for a day or two, but all the dayes of our liues, euen as long as it shall please God to continue vs here below, *Iohn 5. 14.*

*Qu. Whom doth this Doctrine meet withall ?*

*Ans. First,*

*Ans.* First, it meeteth with those, who as soone as they haue receiued, runne immediately to prophane-  
 ness; spending the best part of the day in gadding, and swil-  
 ling, that it may iustly bee feared, that the Deuill makes  
 a better market that day, then hee doth many dayes  
 beside.

Secondly, it meetes with a number, that will Saint  
 it, and liue very deuoutly that day: But the very next  
 day or few dayes after, they returne to their olde bent,  
 and runne themselves, as deepe in the mire as they were  
 before.

*Qu.* What is the third thing?

*Ans.* Wee must bring our selues often into minde of  
 the Couenants and vowes which wee haue made to God,  
 thinking with our selues, that such and such a day, wee  
 were before the Lord, and there wee sware in his hearing,  
 and in the hearing of his People, that wee would neuer liue  
 as wee haue liued: Wee would lye no more, curse no more,  
 beare no more malice: And therefore, what a Iudgement  
 shall wee pull vpon our heads, if wee shall not bee carefull in  
 some good measure to performe it.

*Qu.* What is the fourth thing?

*Ans.* Fourthly, wee are to marke how the Sacrament  
 workes vpon vs: Whether wee finde our selues the better  
 for it; the stronger to resist sinne: the cheerefuller in Gods  
 seruice, the tenderer to our Brethren: And if it doe not  
 worke; What is the reason of it? Whether want of pre-  
 paration, or want of reuerence, or want of care after-  
 wards; that the next time wee come, wee may come to bet-  
 ter fruite.

*Q.* What is the last thing?

*Ans.* Wee must not bee long away, but so soone as we  
 feele any deadnesse, or coldnesse, or weaknesse to grow vpon  
 vs: wee are to make recourse higher againe for the reco-  
 uering of our strength: For as a man in a long iourney had  
 need of many Baits: So the Christian that hath a long



Journey to goe from Earth to Heauen, from man to God, from Mortalitie to Immortalitie, had need to come oft to the Lords Table to bee refreshed.

*Quest.* What is the reason then that some come so seldom?

*Answer.* Many of the Passengers doe not feele their need: no, though they bee ready to droppe downe into euery ditch: But such as feele the want, they are carefull to vse the Lords helpe against it.

DEO GLORIA.

FINIS.







# THE SVBSTANCE AND PITH OF PRAYER;

OR,  
ABRIEFE, HOLY, AND  
HEAVENLY EXPOSITION ON THE  
LORDS PRAYER.

Being the Summe and Marrow of diuers  
Sermons, written and preached, by that Holy, Lear-  
ned, Reuerend, and Iudicious Diuine : Mr. JOHN SMITH,  
late Preacher of the Word, at *Clauering in Effex*. And some-  
time Fellow of St. Johns Colledge in *Oxford*.

*Vprightnesse hath boldnesse.*

EPHES. 6. 18.

*Praying alwayes with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all  
perseuerance, and supplication for all Saints.  
And for me, &c.*



LONDON,

Printed by G.P. for George Edwards, and are to be sold at his house in the Old Bailey,  
in Greene Arbor, at the signe of the Angell. 1629.

THE  
2V38TANC  
A V D P I T I  
O E P R A Y E R

ALBERT, BOY, 4 N 12  
TREATY, 1840, ON THE TALL  
TREATY, 1840, ON THE TALL

ALBERT, BOY, 4 N 12  
TREATY, 1840, ON THE TALL  
TREATY, 1840, ON THE TALL

ALBERT, BOY, 4 N 12  
TREATY, 1840, ON THE TALL  
TREATY, 1840, ON THE TALL



# AN EXPOSITION ON THE LORDS PRAYER.

MATTH. 6. 9.

*After this manner therefore pray wee. Our Father  
Which art in heauen, Hallowed be thy Name.*

*Thy Kingdome come, Thy Will be done, in earth as it is  
in heauen.*

*Giue vs this day our dayly bread.*

*And forgieue vs our debts, as we forgieue our debtors.*

*And leade vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from  
euill. For thine is the Kingdome, the power and the glory,  
for euer, Amen.*



Having already spoken of the first part of Christian profession : the second followeth, and that is *Prayer*, wherein we can haue no better guide to direct vs, then the Lord himselfe, nor sweeter words then those so effectuall of our Sauour Christ.

There are then two things commended vnto vs in the words of our *Sauour Christ*.



*After this manner therefore pray ye.*

1 *A Duty, which is, that we must pray.*

2 *A direction in this Duty, how, and in what manner we must pray; both which, are implied in these first words of Christ. After this manner pray ye.*

1 *Concerning the Duty, two things are required,*

1 *What it is to pray?*

2 *Why we must pray?*

1  
Prayer, what  
it is?

For the first; Prayer is a lifting up of the heart unto God, whereby we desire things needfull of him, as the Well-spring and fountaine of all goodnesse. Whence it appears, that there are three things remarkable in Prayer.

1

Prayer is an action or motion of the heart: It is not a mouing of the mouth, or an action of the lips onely; but properly, an action or mooung of the heart; as 1 Sam. I. 13. Anna prayed in her heart, but her mouth spake not. So Psal. 20. 4. the Prophet prayes; And grant thee according to thy hart, &c. So Eph. 5. 19 the Apostles words are, Speaking to your selues in Psalmes & Hymnes, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord. So that Prayer must needs haue the working of the heart, for if it come not from thence, if that be not moued to pray, it is but lip-labour, and an idle sound; It is no prayer, because in prayer, there must be a mouing of the heart. The Lord by the Prophet, complaines of this neglect. And they haue not cryed vnto me with their hearts, when they howled vpon their beds, &c. and 1 Kings 8. 39 Salomon prayeth to God, that when any man prayeth, the Lord would giue vnto him, as hee knoweth his heart. For the Lord onely knoweth the hearts of the children of men. By which it is euident, that the Lord accounteth not of that prayer which comes not from the heart.

1 Sam. I. 13.

Psal. 20. 4.

Ephes. 5. 19.

Hos. 7. 14.

1 Kings 8. 39.

Oh that men of this world did well consider this, they thinke that if they tumble out words of prayer, though their mindes wander and are vnstedfast, though their thoughts be vpon other things, though their  
hearts

hearts be transported with diuers wanderings; yet they pray vnto God. But the truth is, that as Prayer is an Action and Motion of the Heart, so if the Heart doe not ioyne in prayer, though a man vse words neuer so oft, hee cannot truly say that he doth pray. Nay, I would this were the fault of the world onely, that euen the good seruants of God did not faile in this: For surely, the best men haue their stragglings and wanderings in prayer. Let a man come to prayer, and hee shall haue much adoe to hold his heart fast vnto God. As the fowles troubled *Abraham* in his sacrifice: So a number of by-thoughts are ready to trouble vs in prayer. Wherefore euery good seruant of God must accuse himselfe for this, and pray to God for grace, & strength to amend it. As *Abraham*, *Gen. 22. 5.* vsed his seruants and his Assle to helpe him in his iourney, but when hee came to Mount *Moriab* ( the place of worship ) then he discharged them, and left them a farre off: So worldly thoughts are tollerable and lawfull; if we vse them as seruants, to carry vs through this our iourney from *Earth* to *Heauen*. But when we come home to prayer, to present our selues before the Maiesty of God; then we must dismisle, and discharge them. So that this is the first thing to be obserued in prayer, that *Prayer is an action or motion of the heart.*

*Gen. 13. 11.*

*Fowles*

*Abrahams seruants.*

*Gen. 22. 5.*

The second thing in prayer is, that *Prayer is a motion of the heart, as it is lifted vp and eleuated vnto God with intentinesse and deuotion*, according to that which *David* saith, *Psal. 5. 3.* In the morning will I direct me vnto thee, and I will waite: and *Psal. 25. 1.* Vnto thee, O Lord! will I lift vp my soule, &c. Thus in prayer, there must be alwayes an earnest lifting vp of the heart vnto God, that whereas our affections ordinarily dwell here below, by prayer, they must be carried aboue *Sunne* and *Moone*, and *Starres*, to the very Throne of grace, to seeke things needfull at the hands of God. A

*After this manner therefore pray yee.*

4

Damasc. lib. 3.

Cap. 24.

Fiery Chariot.

learned Father defines Prayer to be nothing but a *mounting up of the heart vnto God*. So that prayer is like the fiery Chariot, in which *Elias* was transported from earth into heauen: euen so by Prayer, we are carried out of our selues, out of this world, and all worldly things, to be present with God in the highest heauens. So that there must be speciall excitation of the Heart in Prayer, that thereby we may come neerer vnto the Lord himselfe: which is the second thing to be obserued in Prayer.

3

Psal. 10. 7.

Psal. 27. 4.

The third thing in Prayer is, that we be carefull to desire things that be needfull, as *Psal. 10. 7.* Lord, thou hast heard the desire of the poore, thou preparest their heart, &c. and *Psal. 27. 4.* One thing haue I desired of the Lord, &c. So *Psal. 38. 9.* Lord I powre my whole desire before thee &c. So that in euery prayer there must be an earnest desire: whence we may consider two things in Prayer.

1 *A sense and feeling of our owne miseries and wants.*

2 *An earnest desire to haue them supplied.*

1

Concerning the first, there must be a feeling and former apprehension of our wants. By which meanes, a man shall the willinglier pray for a supply of the same. If we doe not find the Feauer, feeble the fits, be not pressed with it, as with a heauy burden; no man will seeke to the Physitian, that is not sicke; care for a fire, that is not a cold; creepe to a fountaine, that is not a dry: So there must be a sense of want and misery, before men be induced to pray: The blind men in the Gospell, cryed after Christ, *Matth. 20. 10.* and why? because they had a sense of their owne misery, that made them cry. Others should haue seene the saluation of God, blessed the meanes of their Redemption that God had sent into the world. But oh! as men buried in darkenesse, they could see nothing: onely the sense of misery makes men

Matth. 20. 10.



*After this manner therefore pray ye.*

5

men cry vnto God. So *Exod. 17. 4.* Moses cryed vn- *Exod. 17. 4.*  
to the Lord, &c. the sense of danger thus set him on.  
*O Lord (saith he) these people be ready to stone me, &c.*  
Thus we see, it must be a sense and feeling of our mis-  
eries and wants, which must driue vs to prayer.

*There must be an earnest desire to haue them supplied;* 2  
for though a man see his wants, and yet doth not re-  
gard them, nor will or indeuour to haue them relec-  
ued, this man will neuer pray to God; so that it is not  
enough for a man to haue a sense and feeling of his  
wants, and to bustle vnder them, and hang downe the  
head as a bulrush, but he must earnestly desire and seeke  
supply for them at the hands of God. So *Jehoshaphat*  
*sayes, 2 Chron. 20. 12.* *O Lord, we be not able to stand,* *2 Chron. 20. 12.*  
*but our eyes are towards thee, &c.* So *Iam. 1. 5.* *If any* *Iam. 1. 5.*  
*man lacke wisdom, let him aske of God, &c.* So that in  
prayer there must be a desiring of needfull things at the  
hand of God. For as ground when it is dry, opens it  
selfe into clefts and crannies, and gapes towards Hea- Ground.  
uen, as though it would deuoure the Cloudes. So must  
the true Christian be affected in prayer, earnestly desi-  
ring the supply of his wants at the hands of God.  
Thus it appeares, a man may speake words of prayer a  
hundred times, and yet neuer pray truely, if his heart  
be not disposed and affected to God. Prayer being (as  
I haue said) first a motion of the heart; secondly, not  
euery motion but that which is eleuated and lifted vp  
to the Lord; thirdly, not euery lifting vp of the heart,  
but whereby we desire things needfull; fourthly there  
must be a sense of our wants; fifthly, and last of all, yea,  
chiefest of all, an earnest desire to haue them supplied.  
And thus, as when many hands lift at a burthen. It is Many hands  
the easier heaued vp; so when all these concurre toge-  
ther, Prayer is the more fully made, and the better ac-  
cepted.

The second generall thing in this Duty of Prayer, is,

General point  
in prayer,

## Why we must pray?

John 5. 11.

For though the bare words of Christ might be enough for vs, and we should answer all temptations, as the lame man answered the Jewes: John 5. 11. *Hee who healed me, said unto mee, Take up thy bed and walke.* So we may say, Hee who healed me with a plaister of his owne blood, Hee that deliuered me by his owne death, and payed the ransome for my sinnes: *ipse dixit mihi*: He said to me, *Pray thus, &c.* Yet because much subtilty and infirmity lies in the heart of man, I will a little enlarge my selfe in this point, though I say this answer might be enough for vs.

First then, there be certaine *Obiections* to be answered, *Why we need not pray*: Secondly, we will shew the *Reasons, Why we ought to pray.*

The *Obiections* that may scale the heart of a man, and put in his heart that he need not pray, are two:

Obiections against Prayer,  
answered.  
Malac. 3. 6.

The first is: *Because no man can make any change or alteration in the Lord,* Malac. 3. 6. *Ego sum Deus, & non mutor, &c. I am the Lord, & change not.* Therefore if we cannot change God with our prayers, to what purpose is it that we should pray?

Obiection answered.

Sunne, eyes shut.

I answer, we pray not to make a change in God, for God is vchangeable, but we pray to make a change in our selves; that we may be capable of that goodnesse, kindnesse, and mercy, &c. that is in God. A man that stands in the Sunne with his eyes shut, If hee desire to haue the sight of the Sunne, he must not thinke to haue it by making any change or alteration in the Sunne, but he must make a change and alteration in himselfe; open his owne eyes, lift vp his owne eye-liddes; and then see the comfortable light of the Sunne that shines about him:

him: Euen so, if a man would participate of those precious and rich things that are in God; the way is not to thinke by our prayers to make any change or alteration in Him, but to make a change in our selues, Draw our hearts and affections neerer vnto God. As an ancient Father well obserues, where he most excellently well opens the very same point, &c.

*Dionys. cap. 3.  
de Diuis. Nominibus. Sicut si quis faciat, &c.*

The second Obiection is; *All things are decreed of God, &c. So that if God haue decreed this or that, then whether we pray, or pray not, it matters not, for nothing can alter the Decree of God.*

I answer as a learned man saith; *Whatsoeuer God hath decreed, he hath decreed nothing without meanes to effect the same.* For God hath not onely decreed the particulars, &c. but God hath also ordayned, that by such and such meanes, we should be led vnto the ends. Now because prayer is a meanes, and a speciall meanes to accomplish the Decree of God. Therefore we must pray, for this doth not take away prayer, but confirms it rather. For example, God decreed to prolong *Hezekiah's* life, &c. and yet the prayer of *Hezekiah*, was a subordinate meanes to accomplish the Decree of God, & seruing to that purpose. Take another example, *Acts 27. 31.* God had decreed to saue all in the ship, but how? by meanes of the ship, for when the Master and Souldiers would haue fled into the Boat; The Apostle *Paul* told them, that vlesse these tarried also, they could not be saned. So to apply this vnto our purpose; God hath decreed to giue such and such blessings, comforts, and graces to his Saints, and yet not to giue them but by the meanes of prayer, &c. So that if we will not vse prayer, we must not looke for any thing to be either granted or obtained.

2  
Obiection answered,

2 King 20. 5.

Act. 27. 31.

Hauiug thus dispatche these Obiections, come  
we



Reasons why  
we must pray.

*Psal.* 50. 15.

*Luke* 22. 46.

*Iam.* 5. 13.

We to the Reasons, *Why we must pray?* First, *Because it is the command of God; that we should pray, Psal. 50. 15. Call upon me in the day of trouble, and I will heare thee, &c. So Luke 22. 46. Why sleepe yee? arise and pray, least yee enter into tentation. And Iam. 5. 13. If any man be afflicted, let him pray, &c.* So that it is a cleare Commandement of God, that we must pray. Now as we make a conscience of any of the Commandements of God. So also we must learne to be conscionable in this. There is no man but will make some conscience of stealing and killing, and why because he knowes God so commands him. Now you see it is the Commandement of God to pray, let it then be our care to performe it accordingly; and more then this, it is such a Commandement of God, as that no man can excuse himselfe, if he neglect it. And therefore (saith *Augustine*) *Thou needest not giue almes to the needy, because thou hast not where withall to relieue them. Thou needest not come into the Congregation because thou art diseased, thou needest not visite the sicke, because thy strength will not beare it; but there is none so poore, so lame, so needy, so weake in the body, but he must pray; so that if we doe not pray, let vs looke for nothing at the hands of God.*

*Augustine.*

2

Reason, why  
we must pray.

*Marke* 11. 24.

*1 Iohn* 5. 14.

*Iohn* 4. 11.

Deepe well.

Secondly, *Because it is the meanes to conuey all the blessings of God vnto our soules; for Prayer is the very key whereby we open all the Treasuries and storehouses of Gods power and goodnesse: Christ saith, Marke 11. 24. Whatsoeuer yee aske of God in prayer, beleeue, &c. So 1 Iohn 5. 14. This is the confidence that we haue in him, that if we aske any thing according to his Will, hee heareth vs. So that Prayer is a meanes to conueigh all graces and blessings vnto our soules. The woman of Samaria, Iohn 4. 11. saith to Christ, The Well is deepe, and thou hast nothing to draw: but God be thanked, though the Wel of Gods goodnesse be deep, yet we haue somewhat to draw with: the holy bucket of prayer will diue*

diue into the depthes of God, and fetch vs waters of comfort from them, yea search the very lowest bottom of grace that is in God: as diuers of the Fathers well obserue. So that these things are euident inducements to euery Christian man to pray. For as, if there were a goodly fountaine, that feeds a whole towne, yet if men haue not vessels and pipes to carry water home vnto their houses, they were neuer the better. So, though there be a Fountaine of goodnesse in God, yet prayer is the meanes to conueigh it vnto vs, and bring it home vnto our soules, &c.

*August. Ascendit  
Ieremias, &c. dis-  
cendit miseran-  
dia.  
Gregor. Oratio  
in terra: o pater  
in Caelis &c.  
Chrysost. Hom.  
53. ad P. idem.  
Feeding foun-  
taine.*

Thirdly, *Because it is the note of a wicked man not to pray, Psal. 14. 4. David saith plainly, They call not vpon the Lord, &c. Isaiah, 64. 7. Notes, that it was a great signe of the calamity of the Church, when the Chaldeans had taken away the riches of the Temple, and the daily sacrifice ceased. Euen so it is a fore signe of Gods displeasure, when the daily sacrifice of prayer ceaseth. It is with a Christian then, as when the Chaldeans had taken the Temple. For then the Diuell doth dangerously possesse the heart of a man, and carries it quite away from God, as a child is carried in ones armes, and layed wheresoeuer the stronger party listeth.*

*3  
Reason, why  
we should  
pray.  
Psal. 14. 4.  
Isa. 46. 7.  
Temple rob-  
bery.*

Fourthly, *Because all our labours and endeuours are but in vaine without Prayer, as Iam. 4. 2. Yee fight and warre and get nothing, because yee aske not, &c. So that all our labour is lost, if we haue not prayer to attend the same. Thus we see Abrahams seruant, when he went about a businesse of his Masters, prayed vnto the Lord, Lord send me good speed, &c. And Isaac hauing sent his seruant about a wife, he in the euening went out into the field to pray vnto God: as knowing all his labour was nothing without the Lord. Now these goodly examples are for vs to follow; that whensoever we stand in need of any blessing, we should powre out our prayers vnto God.*

*4  
Reason, why  
we must pray.  
Iam. 4. 2.  
Gen. 24. 12.  
and 26.*

Seed sowne,

God. A certaine man, we read, once sowed good seed, but neuer could haue any good corne, at last a good neighbour came vnto him, and reasoned what should be the cause, he sowed so good seed, and reaped so bad Corne? why truly said he, I giue the land her due, good tillage, good seed, and all things that be fit: why then (replied the other) it may be *you doe not steepe your seede*: no truly, said the other, nor neuer heard that seed should be steeped. Yes truly, said the other, but I will tell you how? *It must be steeped in Prayer*; when the party heard this, he thankt him for his good counsell, put it home to his conscience, reformed his fault, and had as good Corne as any man. Thus haue wee heard of the Commandement to pray; the first maine point in the Preface.

Now come we to the second maine Branch, which is,

## *Our Direction how to pray.*

Wherein, there are two things to be considered.

1 *Why Christ giues this Direction?*

2 *What the Direction is.*

For the first, why *Christ giues a direction*, there bee three Reasons of it.

I  
Reason why  
Christ giues  
a direction  
to pray.  
*Luke 11.1.*

First, *To helpe the weaknesse of such as cannot pray*: This reason is touched, *Luke 11.1.* where when *Christ* ceased praying, one of the Disciples came vnto him, saying. *Master, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.* Whereupon *Christ* deliuered this forme of prayer to them. So that as I say, It was to helpe the weaknesse of such that are not able to vtter their own thoughts and desires. Therefore *Christ*, as he puts good thoughts in our hearts, by his holy Spirit: so here hee puts



puts good words into our mouthes; yea the words of prayer. So the Lord, *Hos. 14. 3.* Having exhorted *Hos. 14. 3.* the people to repent, puts the very words into their mouthes saying, *Take unto you words, and turne to the Lord, and say unto him, Take away all iniquity, and receiue vs graciously, so will we render the calves of our lippes.* In *Gen. 47. 12.* It is said of *Ioseph* that he nourished his Fa- *Gen. 47. 12.* ther and his Mother, and all the household; yea, *Iosephs Piety.* put meat into little childrens mouthes. So doth the true *Ioseph* the Lord Iesus, he doth put euen meate into the mouthes of his children; that is, hee doth put the very words of prayer into the mouthes of such as cannot pray.

There hath been a question, whether a man may vse a set forme of prayer, or pray vpon a booke. *Quest.*

But the question need be no question amongst vs, *Ans.* for we see by Christs example; If a man haue not the gift to utter prayer in his owne words, better vse another mans helpe, then quite to omit such a worthy duty.

*The second reason why Christ gives a direction to pray,* 2  
*was, To correct a number of errors, and obliquities that be* Reason why  
*in prayer.* This is the reason that is given, both in this *Christ gives a*  
place, and chap. 7. where Christ saith, *Be not as the Hea-* direction to  
*then, but after this manner pray yee, &c.* So the Lord pray.  
prescribeth this forme of prayer, as a correction of the  
abuses and corruptions which otherwise might creepe  
into our prayer. Saint Paul saith, *Rom. 8. 26.* *For wee* *Rom. 8. 26.*  
*know not how to pray as we ought, &c.* For how soeuer  
we can speake wisely in the eares of men, yet wee are  
the veriest fooles in the world when we come to speake  
vnto God. And so (as I haue said) to helpe the errors  
and defects of prayer, our Sauour Christ hath giuen  
vs a direction how to pray; for as *Cyprian* saith, *Hee* *Cyprian.*  
*who hath giuen life, hath also taught vs how to pray.* Di-  
uines shew, that the inward intent without the acti-  
on

Isa. 58. 3.

on, is as much as the action it selfe for though the action be good, yet if the manner be not so also, God will not accept it. *Isa. 58. 3.* The people say, *We haue fasted and punished our selves, &c.* but the Lord saith, *Yee fast to strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickednesse, &c.* So though that the action be good, yet because the manner of performing it was not, God did by the Prophet reprehend it. So *1 Chron. 15. 13.* *Dauid's* action was good, when he sought to bring vp the Arke, but because the manner was not good, because he did not seeke God deuoutly, but put Gods Arke vpon a Cart, whereas it should haue beene carried vpon Priests shoulders, the Lord made a breach amongst them, &c. So that we see in regard of gracious acceptation, the manner of the action is as much as the action it selfe. And thus we may not onely pray, but wee must pray, to acceptation, and keepe a due manner in our prayer.

3  
Reason why  
Christ giues  
a direction  
to pray.  
*2 Iohn. 14*

Woman of Te-  
koad,

*2 Sam. 14. 19.*

Cyprian.

The third Reason is, *That we might haue the greater assurance that God will heare vs when we pray, &c.* As *1 Iohn 5. 14.* *This is our assurance, that if wee aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs.* Now no man can doubt, that when we follow Christs direction, wee aske according to Gods will, and so no question but God will heare vs. When the woman of *Tekoad* made a report to *Dauid*, concerning *Abigail*, his sonne, *Dauid* said, *Is not the hand of Ioad in this?* which when hee vnderstood that it was so, *Dauid* did the better accept of it: Euen so, when a poore Christian comes to prayer vnto God, and the Lord saith, *Is not this tongue taught by Christ? Is not Christ a counsellor in this action?* we may thinke the Lord will the rather entertaine and accept of it. *Saint Cyprian* saith *As the Lord our Master hath taught vs: and of prayer. It is a familiarity, and a familiar hand of prayer, to intimate God with his owne words. When any one prayes, the Lord knowes the words of his Sonne.* So

you see the Reasons, why it pleased Christ to give a direction in prayer: First, to helpe the weaknesse of such as cannot pray: Secondly, to correct a number of errors in prayer: Thirdly, that we might haue so much the greater acceptation with God.

Now we come to the second thing in the subdiuision.

## 2 *What this Direction is.*

Which followes in these words: *Our Father which art in Heaven, &c.* Of this direction there are three parts. 2  
Maine Branch,

1 *The Preface.*

2 *The Petitions.*

3 *The Conclusion.*

First, There is a Preface, for our Saniour Christ doth not set downe the Petitions abruptly, but he first begins with a solemne Preface: and why with a Preface? to shew that there must be a prouision for prayer, a disposition of our selues, and a composing of the affections before we pray. We may not bluntly rush vpon this holy Duty, but come forward with deuotion, reiecting all worldly thoughts, and prepare our selues before we pray, *Psal. 10. 17. Thou preparest their heart, Psal. 10. 17. thou benedest care vnto them, Psal. 108. 10. O God my heart is prepared.* Note,  
*Psal. 108. 10.* So that there must be first a Preparation of the Heart: Now there be two Reasons, why we must be prepared in our hearts for prayer.

1 *In regard of God.*

2 *In regard of our selues.*

First, In regard of God, *That we may come with holy reuerence before him;* for because it is not a mortall man.



Speech to a  
King.

man, or earthly power, that wee haue to deale with in prayer, but a glorious and great God, before whom we ought to tremble, before whom the very Angels stand with an awfull regard and reuerence; at the seete of whose Throne, all Kings of this world cast downe their Crownes; therefore so we must haue the more care, how and in what sort we come before him. If a man were to speake to a mortall King, in a matter of some importance, how would he labour to fit himselfe for it: to compose his speech, his gesture, all his actions, that there might be nothing to offend. How much more when we, who be but dust and ashes, wormes meat and rottenesse, come into the presence of Almighty God, ought we to be prepared and labour so to bee composed, that nothing offend this great God of ours.

Sea mooued.

Secondly, In regard of our selues, *Because wee cannot by and by set up our affections, and stirre up our hearts to prayer, as soone as we haue occasion to pray:* as when the Sea is moued and rouzed with the winds, though the wind lye, yet the Sea workes still, a good while after, before it will be calme: And as in the miracle of the Gospel, the windes were laid at the words of *Christ*, which were wont to worke and rage a long while after: So it must be with our thoughts, though we haue layed aside our worldly labour, earthly desires, lusts, and such like; yet some waues are working still, some thoughts, cares, and cogitations are about vs, till wee prepare our selues otherwise. So that there must be a settling of our affections to prayer before hand. These be the reasons why it pleased our Lord to vse a Preface to this prayer, to teach vs how to prepare our selues to pray, before we set about it. For, as in a Clocke, though there be many wheelles, yet the motions and agitations of all, depend vpon the great wheele: So it is in all worldly businesse, all these lesser wheelles of our affaires, and cares of this world, must depend vpon this greater wheele

A Clocke.

wheele of Prayer. Thus our heart being settled and prepared to pray, it carries all the rest of the thoughts with it,

Again, In this Preface, we are taught three things,

- 1 To whom we must pray.
- 2 With what affection we must pray?
- 3 What be the duties required of them that pray?

First, we must pray, to God onely; For Christ he directeth vs to pray vnto our heavenly Father: Thus we must pray vnto none but Him, seeing by Christs owne Rule, we are directed vnto God onely, as in the whole Scriptures is euident, *Phil. 4.6. In all things let your requests be shewen to God in Prayer, &c. So Iam. 1.5. If any of you lacke wisdom, let him aske it of God. Saint Paul shewes the ground of this, Rom. 10. 14. But how shall they call on him in whom they haue not beleueed? Now by the Rules of Christian faith, we are bound to beleue in none but in God onely, & so our prayers to be directed onely vnto him. Of which there be two Reasons, why the Lord will haue prayers directed onely to himselfe.*

First, That a man might haue an immediate dependance upon God, and not depend upon any creature: or any power of Angels, but vpon God onely: being carried by immediate relation vnto God, as our Sauour teaches. So Saint Augustine shewes: There is no intermediate nature betwixt God and man: and so concludes, that we haue but one God Almighty to pray to.

Secondly, GOD would haue all prayer directed vnto him, That hee onely might bee knowne to bee the fountaine of goodnesse, and the spring of all good things. For, howsoeuer by his seruants and other meanes, other blessings and benefits are conueyed vnto vs,

1 Cor. 3.

A Clocke.

vs, yet in prayer, the Lord will haue vs goe vnto him, as acknowledging him to be the Fountaine, and all other meanes to issue from him. For howsoeuer the Lord affoord meanes, which must be vsed, yet must God blesse the worke, or it will turne to nothing. Saint Paul sayes, 1 Cor. 3. *I haue planted, Apollos watered, but God must giue the increase.* Very Philosophers can say, *Secunda causa non operatur nisi in virtute prima.* Second causes worke not but by vertue of the first mouer, as wee see in a Clocke; if a man will watch the first motion, and bring it into order, there is no doing with the Leades, or lesser wheelles, but he must goe vnto the great wheele, to deale with it to order all the rest. So, because God is the great Wheele of this world, vpon whose motion all others doe depend, sensible and insensible, earthly, and heauenly; *If in our first labour wee make our stay vpon God, there will quickly be a stay in any of the creatures that be out of order.* And so because all efficacy and workings in all effects, is from the Lord, and all instruments and meanes can worke no further then it shall please him to worke by them: our Sauour would haue vs likewise to goe onely vnto the Lord himselfe, who is the principall agent and workeman for our good.

Use.

Now if all prayer, by the rule of Christ, be to be directed vnto God alone. Then it is vtterly vnlawfull to pray to Saints, Angels, or any other Creature, Power, &c but to God onely. Yet here the Papists confute themselves, saying: In effect they come before God, for all the meanes as they vse (as they say) doe depend vpon God. *Bellarmino* in the name of all the rest, undertakes to cleare this: That they doe neither pray to Angels, or Saints for any thing, as the giuers and authors of any thing, but that they should pray for vs. But we see the words of Christ are directly against it, for he sayes plainly, when ye pray, pray in this manner:

Lib. de Inuoc.  
tione Sanctorum.  
1. 20.

Sic



*Sic Orate, &c.* so pray, &c. not in the Popish manner: thus Christ, not onely prescribes a rule, but also sets downe a speciall direction vnto whom we must pray, as well as in what order, and with what affection. And for this are all the holy Fathers.

*August. lib. 114.  
Enchirid. M.  
ledictus, &c.  
Chrysost.*

The second thing is, *With what affection we must pray:* which may be seene by the two attributes giuen to God. First, that he is here called *Our Father*. Secondly, that he is said to be *In heauen*.

*Rom. 9. Quanda  
orat quis, &c.*

Now, in that he is called (*Our Father*) this may teach vs two things. First, *That we must pray in faith*, that is, with an assured trust and confidence, that wee shall be heard; for if God be our Father, we need neuer doubt, but we shall finde louing and fatherly affection in him, for there is no father so ready to heare the requests of his children, as the Lord is to heare vs in all our desires. So he sayes, *2 Cor. 6. ult.* I will not onely (saith God) take the title vpon me, and appellation of a Father, but I will be a Father, you shall find in me all the affections of a Father, yea, and that more plentifully, then any father can haue. As the Lord will heare vs, so vpon this ground, we must pray vnto him in faith, that is, with a full assurance that we shal be heard when we pray. Thus we haue it, *Iam. 1. 6.* *If any man aske in faith, he shall receiue.* And Christ himselfe saith, *Marke 11. 24.* *What soeuer ye aske in prayer, beleeue, and yee shall obtaine it.*

*I  
Affection, wee  
must pray in.*

*2 Cor. 6. ult.*

*Iam. 1. 6.*

*Marke 11. 24.*

But now, here ariseth an obiection, how can we aske and pray in faith, that is, with a sound comfort and assurance that we shall be heard, seeing many times the Lord giues not to his dearest children that which they pray for.

*Obiect.*

I answer, as *Augustine* saith, *Non audit Deipimus ad Ans.*

A Corrasue.

Mothers diligence and loue.

*Voluntatem nostram, &c.* God doth not alwayes heare according to our will, but in that he knowes to be best and meetest for vs. As when a Chirurgion layes a Corrasue, or a burning Iron to a soare, the Patient feeling it to smart, cryes out, and would haue it remoued, the Chirurgion heares him, but lets it tarry, and the Patient lye still. *He heares him to his health and recovery.* So saith another, *Mothers rubbe their children there for their health, although they rore and cry againe :* yet for all that they doo not spare them : and why? it is for their health, &c. So must we thinke and conceiue, that when God doth not heare or grant our requests, *he heares so farre as it is for our good, though he does not heare vs to our wils.* For it is a dangerous thing to bee heard according to our desire. Because thus Christ heard the Diuell, when he suffered him to enter into the heard of swine, or we may say thus : *This is not the greatest mercy to be heard according to our will, but this, to be heard for our profit, when God giues w that onely which is best for vs.*

2  
Affection we must pray in.

Psal. 122. 6.

Dan. 9. 20.

Iam. 5. 16.

Secondly, *That we must pray in loue.* For Christ instructing vs to say ( *Our Father* ) would teach vs loue and charity; that is, not onely to pray for our selues, but also in the behalfe of our brethren; for this is a duty requisite in our prayers, to take in the whole Communion of the body of Christ, that euery one may haue a part in our prayer. So holy men of God haue done before vs, *Dauid saith, Pray for the peace of Ierusalem, Peace be within thy walls, and prosperity within thy Pallaces.* He prays God to heare the prayers which he made speaking, and praying, and confessing his sins, and the sins of his people. Whereupon an Angell came flying vnto him. *Pray one for another in the time of trouble.* Thus by the rule of Christ, we must not onely pray for our selues in faith, but for our brethren also, in loue and compassion, and fellowfeeling of the wants & needs one of another.

Ships trading, *When many ships Trade and Trafficke vpon the sea,*  
some

some goe for one thing, and some for another, some goe to one place, and some to another; and yet all tends to the good of the Countrey. So it is in the prayers of the Saints, some pray for one thing, some for another, some for grace, some for remission of sinnes, some for peace of conscience, some for temporall blessings, and yet all in the end for the good of the Church.

I should now come to speake of the Duties of them that pray: but first I must a little enlarge my selfe in the former of Faith and Loue, which should haue beene touched before.

Faith, being a maine pillar and foundation, where-  
upon this building of prayer consists, yea, such a one as Two grounds  
of Faith.  
I may truly affirme, *Sine qua non*: Ere I goe further  
I will shew two grounds of Faith.

- 1 *A perswasion of the power of God that he can.*
- 2 *A perswasion of Gods Willingnesse, that hee will helpe vs.*

For if we doubt, either of his power, that he cannot, or his will, that he will not helpe vs, though he be able, We can neuer pray in Faith; that is, with vndoubted assurance that God will heare vs. And because the greatest questiō is, of the will of God, for not many (especially amongst Christians) I suppose, doubt of the power of God. *Christ* first resolves and settles vs in that point, and shewes that God is (*Our Father,*) and because he is our Father, we shall be sure to find a most fatherly affection in him, that no father shall be so ready to heare the requests of his children, as the Lord will be to heare vs in all things we pray for. So that this is one ground of our Faith, not to thinke we come vnto God as vnto a stranger that doth not respect or regard vs in our needs; but we come to him as to a Father and one



*Psal.* 103. 13.  
*Malach.* 3. 17.

that doth loue vs, tenders vs, and will be as ready to releue vs, as the dearest friend we haue in this world.

So *David* saith, *Psal* 103. 13. *As a father pittieeth his children, &c.* And *Malach.* 3. 17. *I will spare them as a man spareth his owne sonne that serueth him.* The prodigall sonne, when he had slipt away from his father, and naughtily spent all he had, he had no hope to returne with any comfort but this; *Ibo ad Patrem, &c.* *I will goe to my Father, &c.* Howsoeuer I haue been a bad and a lewd child, yet I thanke God I haue a good Father to goe to.

This now is our very case: Alas wee haue runne away from God, as farre as euer did the Prodigall sonne from his father; we haue spent all, we haue nothing left by our bad husbandry: onely wee haue this hope and comfort remaining, that still we haue a good Father to goe to: God is our Father, who will heare vs, receiue vs, releue vs, and this (as I said) is the ground of a Christian man, that he may pray in faith: which thing holy men, in their prayers haue much regarded. *Isa.* 63. 16. *Though Abraham be ignorant of vs, doubtlesse thou art our Father, &c.* and chap. 64. 8.

*Isa.* 63. 16. and  
 chap. 64. 8.

But now, O Lord, thou art our Father, wee are clay, &c. worke of thy hands. Yea, our Saniour Christ himselve in this very Preface of Prayer, argues from the very disposition and nature of an earthly Father, *Matth.* 7. 9.

*Matth.* 7. 9.

*For what man is there, if his sonne aske bread, will hee giue him a stone, &c.* from whence his inference is: *If yee then, being euill, can giue good things to your children who aske, &c.* how much more will your Father which is in Heauen, giue his holy Spirit vnto those who aske it. So that this needs must be a goodly comfort vnto a poore Christian to consider of, because it is our Father, not a stranger, our good Father, our louing and compassiōnaie Father that deales with vs, so that wee shall easily find him inclined to goodnesse and mercy towards vs. Many places of Scripture doe inlarge this, and all to strengthen our faith, and make vs come the readier vn-

to God. *Psal. 27. 10.* Though my father and my mother *Psal. 27. 10.*  
 should forsake me, yet the Lord will gather me up, &c. *Isa. 49. 15.*  
*49. 15.* Can a woman forget her child, and not haue com-  
 passion upon the sonne of her wombe? Yea, they may, &c.  
 Where the Lord himselfe shewes, and sayes that hee  
 will not forget vs: so that knowing this loue, care  
 and tenderneffe of the Lord, & that he hath this fatherly  
 affection in him, we may well thinke, the Lord will be  
 most ready to heare and helpe vs in all that we pray for.  
 Alas, they that be not thus perswaded, that God hath  
 such a heart, bosome, and bowels of loue open vnto vs,  
 that he hath a fatherly care and compassion towards  
 vs; he, I say, that hath not this sweet and comfortable  
 apprehension of God, that knowes not God to be a Fa-  
 ther to him, must needes make faint and cold prayers  
 vnto God. But whosoever shall be perswaded in his  
 soule, that the Lord is become a Father vnto him, ac-  
 cepteth of him as his son, what is it, but that such a man  
 may hope for at the hands of God, which (as I said) is  
 the first ground of our Faith; viz. *A perswasion that*  
*God will heare vs when we pray vnto him.*

The other ground of Faith is, *A perswasion of the pow-* 2  
*er of God:* for if he be willing to helpe, and yet not able, Ground of  
 as wanting power, what are wee the better? but re- Faith.  
 maine euen weake people; such as *Isaiah* speakes of,  
*Chap. 3. 7.* In that day he shal sweare, saying, I cannot be an Isa. 3. 7.  
 helper. for there is no bread in mine house: And it makes vs  
 vncomfortable in that we goe about; but *Christ* shew-  
 eth that all power abideth in God, and all things are  
 subiect vnto him, whether in Heauen or in Earth, or  
 vnder the Earth; yea, he rules and gouernes all, and is  
 able to supply whatsoeuer man stands in need of. As  
 may be seene, *Psal. 50.* throughout: and *Psal. 115. 3.* Psal. 50.  
*But our God is in heauen, he doth whatsoeuer he will: and* Psal. 115. 3.  
*Deut. 33. 26.* There is none like God, O righteous people, Deut. 33. 26.  
 which ride vpon the Heauens for thy helpe, and on the

Cloudes in his glory, &c. So that in truth all that he doth, is to shew forth his goodnesse and power in helping vs. Of which he hath giuen sufficient testimony in Scriptures, that he both can and will supply our wants in whatsoeuer we stand in need of. Indeed earthly fathers they may be willing to helpe their children, but they are not alwayes able, as we may read, *2 King. 9. 14.* When the little child cryed out to his father, *My head, my head;* he could doe no more then command one to carry him vnto his mother, and so the child died: but the Prophet came, and by the power of God restored him. So in all things else the power of God, as it is manifest in things aboue our reach, so it is extended euen in this world, when it pleaseth him to fulfill all things that men can desire. And therefore wee see the leper cryed out, *Matth. 8. 2.* *Master if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.* So *Dauid, Psal. 8.* attributeth all things to the power of God. Yea, *Christ* himselfe, confesseth this in his prayer, when he saith, *Matth. 14. 36.* *Father, Omnia tibi possibilia,* all things are possible to thee. So that these be the two pillars of faith, to aide and giue wings to our prayers. A perswasion both of the will and power of God to helpe vs: thus haue we done with that first affection we must pray with; *in Faith,*

The second affection we must pray withall is loue; for *Christ* teaches vs to say (*Our Father*) and not my Father, (*Giue vs*) not me; teaching thereby that wee must not pray for our selues onely, but for others also. We must take in the whole body of Saints, all that loue God: all that thinke God their Father, yea, all the world that are the children of God. So *Dauid, Psal. 122. 6.* saith, *Pray for the peace of Ierusalem:* and *Iam. 5. 6,* *Pray one for another, &c.* So that Christians must not onely pray in faith, but in loue, and that for the communion of the whole body of *Christ*, whereof he himselfe

*Matth. 8. 2.*

*Psal. 8.*

*Matth. 14. 36.*

*Psal. 122. 6.*

*Iam. 5. 6.*



himselfe is a member : for as the sicke man in the Gos- Sicke man.  
pell, when he could not come vnto Christ ( *Marke 2.* *Marke 2.3.*  
3. ) vpon his owne legges, though his faith was great,  
and that hee beleued Christ could heale him ; was  
borne vpon the shoulders of foure men , who let him  
downe at the house top , and brought him to the pre-  
sence of Christ : So must we doe by our brethren, how-  
euer they can pray in faith themselves, yet must wee  
pray in loue for them. If this course were kept amongst  
vs, that we did thus pray one for another ; O what a  
comfort would this be to afflicted and distressed soules,  
to think that whensoever they went about to pray vnto  
G O D , there were many thousand hands and hearts  
lifted vp to God in their behalfe. I am perswaded it  
would much animate euery Christian to goe forward  
in this Christian duty ; thus you may see, how efficaci-  
ous this affection of loue is, but hereby is not meant  
euery sudden wish for the good of some particular per-  
sons, or priuate respect of friends; riuals, allies, acquain-  
tance, or such like, wherein we may exercise our selues ;  
but the generall care of the Church of God, and loue to  
our brethren, as hauing feeling of our fellow members.

The third affection that we must pray with, is ( *fear* ) 3  
and that for especiall reasons. First, *Because it is our Fa-* Affection to  
*ther that we haue to deale with.* Secondly, *Because hee is* pray with.  
*in Heauen, the place vnto which all Maiestie, reuerence and*  
*glory is due.*

Now we know that all reuerence is due to our earth-  
ly fathers, yea when they are sharpest vnto vs, as *Hebr.* *Heb. 12.9.*  
*12.9. We haue had the fathers of our bodies which corrected*  
*vs, and we gaue them reuerence, &c.* So then if our earth-  
ly fathers must haue reuerence, much more our heauen-  
ly Father ; most highly aduanced in dignity and power  
aboue this world. Wherefore this is a caution for vs,  
*Eccles. 5.1.* To take heed what we vtter before God, *Eccles. 5.1.*  
For He is in the Heauens. And in another place : *We*  
*must*

Gen. 18. 2.  
Gen. 32. 10.  
Rudinius in  
Gen. 24.  
Rebekah.

Water con-  
ueighed.

must looke to our feet when we enter into Gods house. For God is not onely a Father, but such a Father that wee haue to deale withall in Prayer : one so eminent and so high litted vp, that he is as high as heauen, therefore we must labour as much as may be, to be abashed and fall downe before him. So *Abraham*, Gen. 18. 2. *Bowed himselfe to the ground.* So *Jacob* humbled himselfe, Gen. 32. 10. To this purpose, *Rudinius* in his History vpon Gen. 24. saith thus. If *Rebekah* rode vpon the Camels amongst the seruants, but when she came into the presence of *Isaac* shee lighted downe from the Camels; So must we doe, howsoeuer in the world we beare vp our heads aboue our brethren, and are bold and carelesse when we are to deale with men; yet when wee once come into the Lords presence, and are to deale with the Lord of heauen and of earth, wee must all come downe from our Camels, be as humble, lowly, and base in our owne eyes as possible we may. If a man would conueigh water from a Fountaine, if hee lay his Leades too high; that is, be not deiected in spirit, stoop in humility, be not low in the Lords sight, he shall be defeated of all the blessings and comforts that he looks for, so that it must be our care to come into the Lords presence, with all reuerence, Feare, and Humiliation.

But here the Papists doe so dazzle mens eyes with the greatnesse of God, that they run beyond the marke. On the other side, saying, that sinfull men must not bee so bold to approach and come to Gods presence, but they must send a farre off, and send in others to bee sutors and mediators for them. But our Sauour Christ shewes vs, that all this high Maiestie of God, must not driue, or chase vs from his presence, but it must onely qualifie vs in our comming vnto God, that we doe not rudely and bluntly rush in before him, but that we come humbly and submissiuely into the Lords presence, abiecting and casting downe our selues, as before a power greater

greater then all the power of this world. It is a distinction that one hath of two sorts of Humility: *Humilitas Immediata, & Humilitas Accepta.*

It was a kind of Humility in *John Baptist*, when hee refused *Christs* offer, *Matth. 3. 14.* saying, *I haue neede Matth. 3. 14. to be baptized of thee, and comdest thou to me?* but *Humilitas accepta*, was in *Christs* acceptation, that hee would haue it so: and answered him accordingly. So it was humility in *Peter*, *John 13. 8.* When he said, *thou shalt neuer wash my feete:* but *Humilitas accepta*, when *Christ* was content to doe it. So in this case it is a kinde of Humility, when we can say, O I am a sinfull man, I dare not be so bold with such a power; but *Accepta Humilitas*, tels vs, we must doe it, we must come at the Lords bidding, at his commandement. So that this glory of the Lord, must not driue vs from him, but wee must come of our selues, and to him alone, and that with feare and reuerence.

The fourth affection that must be vsed in prayer, is, 4  
That we must come with eleuation of our hearts and mindes Affection of Prayer.  
as high as Heauen. For seeing God is in Heauen, our affections must neuer stay till they come as high as Heauen, where God is. And so oft as we pray, so oft in our thoughts, and in our minds, we must rise higher then the cloudes, aboue Sunne and Moone, and a'l the Stars. *Elias* his story shewes, that hee was carryed in a fiery *Elias*, Chariot into Heauen, euen so must we by prayer bee transported out of this world, to be present with God in the highest heauens. It was a signe betwixt *Danid* and *Ionathan*, when he shot his Arrowes, that if any of them fell short, there was no danger in it, &c. So it is Jonathans Arrowes.  
not with our affections, if they be short, and not eleuated and carried vp as high as Heauen, there is great hazzard and danger, that the Lord will not accept, nor regard them. Thus haue we seene, with what affection we



we must pray. In Faith, in Loue, with Reuerence, with Elevation.

Yet ere we come to the *Petitions*, wee must consider certaine *duties* of them that pray.

1  
Dutie of  
them that  
pray.

*Acts 9.4.*

*First, We must labour for the grace of adoption.* For how can we truly call God Father, if we be not his children? Alas, what doe we otherwise, but so oft as we pray vnto God, so oft continually we doe lye in the eares of God. It is like the aggravation of *Ananias* his sinne, *Acts 5.4.* *Thou hast not lied vnto man, but vnto God.* So if we come vnto God in prayer, & call him father, and yet be not his children, the very same may be said of vs, &c. Then you see now, what great cause there is, that euery man should labour for this grace of Adoption in himselfe, to repent his sinnes, to lay hold vpon the promises of the Gospell, to be renued by the Spirit of *Christ*, that we may truly call God Father, because now wee haue his true word, if we be his children, he is our Father: yea, we may the bolder goe vnto God, and challenge him of his promise, according to that comfort in *Hosea*, after so many threatnings, *chap. 1. 10.* *Tee are the sonnes of the Living God, &c.*

*Hos. 1. 10.*

2  
Duty.

The second Duty is, That we must labour to be perswaded of the fatherly care and loue of God towards vs; that we haue a Father in Heauen, one that doth respect and regard vs. And so whatsoeuer our estate is in this world; though neuer so poore and meane, yet to thanke God, that we haue our honour with the Lord, we may come as boldly into the presence of God, as the greatest King, Prince, or Monarch of the world, as *Malac. 2. 10.* *Haue we not all one Father?* and *1 Iohn 3. 1.* *Behold what loue the Father hath shewed on vs, that we should be called the sons of God?* so that as I say, it is our honor, comfort, and happinesse, that what estate soeuer we be of in this world, yet we know, that he who is the Father of Kings,

*Malac. 2. 10.*

*1 Iohn 3. 1.*

is

is our gracious and good Father, by the meanes and merits of Iesus Christ.

The third Duty is, that seeing God is our Father, 3  
Duty.  
*Wee endeavour to walke worthy of such a father*; that wee doe not dishonor, and disgrace him by our sins, *1 Pet. 1. 17.*  
*17. And if you call him Father, passe the time of your pilgrimage in feare.* Thus if we proclaime God our Father, then our care must be to walke worthy of him; It is the blame that God layes vpon the Iewes, *Ierem. 3. 5. Ierem 3. 5.*  
*Thou hast said thou art my Father, and yet thou doest euill more and more, &c.* So when men will call vpon God as a Father, and yet haue no care to please and obey him, to doe his will and honour him with a true heart; O how shall this one day light heauy vpon their hearts, howsoeuer we doe not feele, or regard it in this world. Thus then, if we call God Father truly, carry in our hearts a settled purpose, neuer to offend him, howsoeuer our owne weaknesse and frailties put vs by; yet the end of our life must be that we walke worthy of such a father, that is, strue with flesh and blood, as farre as possibly we can, to liue in holinesse and righteousness, to come to repentance and compunction of spirit, euery day to renew our Couenant, for the amendment of our sinfull liues.

Hitherto of the Preface, or entrance into this Prayer, the vse of all which may be: first, to reioyce in it as a goodly blessing, that God would vouchsafe to be a Father to such as we be: especially, men so silly and meane in the eyes of the world: secondly, to comfort our selues in this, that what estate or condition soeuer wee be of, yet to thanke God that wee haue a heauenly Father, one that reserues a Kingdome for vs, greater and better then this whole world. So much for the Preface; now come we to the Petitions as they lye in order.

*Psalm*

I

2

I PETITION.







# I. PETITION.

*Hallowed be thy Name.*



Hey be fixe in number, whereof the three first concerne, *The glory of God.*

The last three, *Our owne good.*

In the three former, the first *prayer* for the glory of God in it selfe: the second and third, *pray for the meanes of his Glory.*

First then we pray for the glory of God in it selfe, that the Lord may haue a holy Name amongst vs. The Name of God is most holy in it selfe, *But we pray that it may be holy vnto vs*, that we may giue the Lord glory and honour, which is his due, as God is a most excellent and most high power of himselfe: so we pray that he be so taken and acknowledged, all the world ouer; that the whole world may be ready to stoope and yeeld to the excellent and eminent power that is in God. This I take briefly to be the sense and meaning of this Petition (*Hallowed be thy Name,*) that is, Lord that thy Name may be holy in the hearts and mouthes of all men. In the Petition, we are to consider three things.

- 1 *The order of th. Petition.*
- 2 *The discovery of our owne corruption in it.*
- 3 *What be the speciall graces we pray for.*

The

1 The order is such, that the first thing prayed for, is  
 Thing prayed the glory of God; that he may haue his glory and ho-  
 for, the glory nour, whatsoever become of all other things of this  
 of God, world: this is the thing we must all care for, that God  
 may haue his honour, may be respected, regarded, loued,  
 feared, &c. Whatsoever become of all things in the  
 world, which may teach vs two things.

1  
 Lesson,

Rom. 9. 3.

Exod. 3 2. 32.

First, that there is nothing that we must more desire then  
 the glory of God: We must be contented to let all goe  
 for it lay downe our liues for it, whatsoever become of  
 vs, how soeuer despighted & abused yet if God haue his  
 glory, be esteemed, and regarded, it is well. For wee  
 see we are here taught to begin all our prayers with the  
 desire of this, before we pray for daily bread, yea, any  
 thing else belonging to our selues: Yea, (as one saith)  
*Before the Kingdome of God, we pray for the glory of God:*  
 to shew that if we could redeeme the glory of God with  
 losse, I say, not of our owne liues onely, but our owne  
 soules, we must bee contented: *I could wish my selfe to*  
*be separated from Christ for my Brethren, &c.* as it hee  
 should say, if God may haue any glory by it, then I could  
 be contented to redeeme his glory with my life, nay,  
 lose my part of eternall happinesse: as *Moses* wisht, ra-  
 ther then God should be dishonoured, to be blotted out  
 of his Booke.

2  
 Lesson,

1 Kings 19. 14.

Isa. 37. 34.

Secondly, That we must preferre the glory of God be-  
 fore all other things in this world. And what end wee  
 seeke, labour for, plead for, desire, or trauell for, we must  
 remember in all to preferre God aboue all, so that how-  
 soeuer we can be patient and quiet in other Cases, yet  
 when it comes to the Case of Gods glory, then we must  
 begin to rouse and stirre vp our selues, so as to haue all  
 our affections inflamed in vs: as *Eliab*, 1 Kings 19. 14.  
 so to say to our selues, *I haue bene zealous for the Lord*  
*God of hostes.* So did *Hezekiah*, when *Sennacherib* had  
 sent

sent him a rayling letter, he went and opened it before the Lord, as that which more touched him, when the Lord was dishonoured, then when his kingdome and life was threatned. So *Christ* himselfe that patiently heard all the rest of the Diuels temptations, yet when he came to take the honour from the Lord: then *Christ* begins to rouze vp himselfe, and chide him. *Amoyd Sa-* Matth. 4. 10.  
*san, It is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue;* Thus euen against the mightiest, we must stand out for the glory of *God*. How lamentable a thing then is it for wicked men, who can let the glory of *God* be troden vnder foot, and suffer him to be despised, dishonoured and blasphemed from day to day, and yet let it passe as a thing of nothing: O how shall we be able to answer this another day! or giue an account for it, when *God* shall come to iudge vs for our sinnes? We see in the whole course of Scripture, *God* is alwayes more ready to stirre in our cause, when the matter concernes vs, then when it concernes himselfe. So dealt hee by *Caine*: The Lord let him goe for the Gen. 4. 7.  
wrong he had done to himselfe, for his bad sacrifice, for his hypocriticall worship; but when he began to maligne his Brother, then said *God* vnto him: What hast thou done? *The voyce of thy Brothers blood cryeth vnto me from the ground.* So dealt the Lord by *Pharaoh*, hee Exod. 3. 7.  
was contented to put vp all the injuries against himselfe; his Idolatry, his blasphemy, and such like: But when he began to stirre once against the Church, and the Lords people, then the Lord opposed him, and when he would not desist from his cruelty at the last, he drowned him and all his hoste in the Red Sea. Now if the Lord be thus ready to shew himselfe, and stirre in our cause, then ought we to be much more ready, and rouze vp our selues to stirre in his, against all oppositions whatsoeuer.

The second thing considerable in this Petition, is,

Cc

2  
The discouery of our corruption.



*The discovering of our corruption in it: that is, a neglect of Gods Name, and an immoderate care of our owne: for when wee pray, Hallowed be thy Name; there is a secret opposition betweene our name, and the Name of God: we be all too carefull of our owne name, to deriue the credit and glory of things to our selues: but Lord teach vs to glorifie thy Name aboue all, and before all.*

*Gen. 11. 4.*

*Gen. 11. 4.* Wee reade that the people built a Tower whose top might reach to Heauen, and all to purchase to them selues a Name, but not at all to get any Name vnto the Lord, or inlarge his glory: but for the increase of their owne. This did *Nabuchadnezzar* in his pride aspire to: *Is not this great Babylon which I haue built for the house of my Kingdome, and for the honour of my Maiestie.* So that I say, this is our owne corruption that we so neglect the Name of God in his glory, being so carefull of our owne. Thus the Lord complaines of his people, *Hag. 1. 3.* That they built houses for themselves, went into the woods, fetcht home timber, squared it and carued it, to make houses for themselves, but left the house of God vnbuilt. So it is with vs in this case, we can build vp our owne names, doe any thing to grace and honour our selues, but not one amongst thousands, thinks of aduancing of the Name of God: thus doe we all leane too much to the corruption of our Nature; but oh! why doe not the thoughts of *David* come

*Hag. 1. 3.*

into our mindes. See now I dwell in a house of Cedar, but the *Arke* of God dwelleth within Curtaines. So say thou, I that am but a worme, dust and rottennesse, I that am but a bulrush, in regard of the Lord God, I haue my glory in the world, I am esteemed and regarded as if some body; But what care haue I of God? must God glorifie himselfe, or not haue glory? He that is so glorious, and affordeth all the blessings we inioy, shall not he be regarded? He that is the Fountaine and Store-house of all things, the glory and beauty of vs all, should not his ever-glorious Name be praised and glorified? Thus

*2 Sam. 7. 2.*

we should learne to take notice of this corruption in our selues.

The third thing to be obserued in this Petition, is,  
*The graces that we pray for.*

- 1 *That we may glorifie the Name of God.*
- 2 *That others may doe it.*
- 3 *That though both should faile, that yet the Lord would maintaine his owne glory.*

Concerning the first, we pray here that we may glorifie the Name of God, any way whatsoeuer, that hee may haue some glory by vs: which must bee three ways. I  
Grace we pray  
for.

- 1 *In our hearts.*
- 2 *With our mouthes.*
- 3 *In our lines.*

For the former of these: see 1 Pet. 3. 15. saith hee, 1 Pet. 3. 15.  
*But sanctifie the Lord in your hearts:* for the second, we haue Rom. 15. 6. where the Apostle exhorts them with Rom 15. 6.  
*one mind and one mouth to praise God:* for the other: see 1 Cor. 6. ult. saith hee, For yee are bought with a price, 1 Cor. 6. ult.  
therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit which are Gods. First, *Wee must inwardly acknowledge that all things come from God;* That we neither haue, or I  
In our hearts.  
can receiue any thing but at the hands of God: wee must therefore loue and feare Him, trust in Him, praise Him, and submit our wils to his will: and thus we pray that we may glorifie God in our hearts, when we acknowledge all the power in the world to be nothing to his: all the wisdom and loue in the world to be nothing to his wisdom and loue: when we doe labour about all things to keepe the Lord to be our friend, not regarding whosoever be displeased with vs, whosoever be against vs, whosoever rageth and stormeth, when we see God accepteth of our zeale and Piety towards him;

which if we pray for truly, then are we sure to glorifie God in our hearts.

2

With our  
mouthes,

Luke 2.20.  
Shepheards,

Job 1. 21.

Reuel. 14. 7.

Reuel. 19. 7.

Secondly, *We glorifie God with our mouthes*, both by speaking reuerently of the Name of God, and by confessing the Lords wisdom, goodnesse and Iustice in all his workes: for although the *Shepheards* were abashed to find *Christ* in a manger, the King of Kings in so poore an estate, yet they returned to their Flockes and Folds, and prayed God. So must we doe, whensoever wee haue heard of Gods goodnesse, or tasted of his mercy, we must returne home to our houses, (as the shepheards did to the fields) acknowledging the Lords kindnesse and mercy in it. Yea, what euer chance, though it bee losse and correction, yet wee must say as *Job* did in the midst of his troubles: *The Lord hath giuen, and the Lord hath taken away, blessed be the Name of the Lord.* So then this is that we pray for, that of all other things we may giue glory vnto God: according to that admonition of the Angell, *Reuel. 14. 7. Feare God, and giue glory to him; for the houre of his Iudgement is come, and worship him: And againe, Reuel. 19. 7. Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue glory to him for the marriage of the Lambe is come.* So that whatsoeuer is laid vpon vs, what change of estate soeuer the Lord sends, we must giue the glory to God, and confesse with our mouthes, that he is worthy of all honour.

3

In our liues.

Matth. 5. 16.

Thirdly, *We must glorifie God in our liues*, that we may so liue, as the Lord may haue glory and honour by vs, and no disgrace, for our good life is an honour to the Lord, as *Christ* himselfe saith, *Matth. 5. 16. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes and glorifie your Father which is in heauen, &c.* So *1 Pet. 2. 12.* the Apostle saith, *And haue your conuersation honest among the Gentiles, that they which speak euill of you, as of euill doers, may by your good workes, which they shall see,*



see, glorifie God. So must we pray, that we doe not disgrace the Lord by our sinnes, but liue so as the Lord may be honoured by vs. It is for this purpose a good meditation which one of the Fathers hath: God  
 “ (saith he) thus speaks vnto a sinner: O man, if thou hast no  
 “ care of thine own credit & safety, yet haue a care of mine,  
 “ Thinke man that I am dishonoured by thy sinne, for if  
 “ any disgrace or shame thereby rest vpon thy selfe, much  
 “ more vpon me whom thou oughtest to regard: but if thou  
 “ couldest so put it ouer with iollity and carelesnesse, yet is  
 “ God disgraced by it, therefore O man, though thou neglect thy  
 “ selfe, tender my glory, deface not my honour. Thus it is  
 cleere, as our good life honours God: so our ill life dishonours him: as Rom. 2.24. saith the Apostle. For the  
 Name of God is blasphemed amongst the Gentiles through you. O then! let vs all take heed of this, that we tender the glory of God: let vs pray, that wee may so liue in this world, conuerse here amongst men, that the Lord may be honoured by vs, and not dishonoured by our grosse and presumptuous sinnes.

For our helpe herein, There be three things which may quicken vs to this duty and care.

First, to consider, That all the creatures doe glorifie God in their kinde: as the Psalmist speaks. The Heavens declare the glory of God, &c. So in the Reuelation, it is written of all Creatures; That all they which are in heauen, and in earth, &c. And the foure beasts said Amen, when glory was giuen to the Lord. Therefore now seeing that all Creatures, not onely most noble, as Angels and Spirits, but the very lowest and meanest, yea, the insensible Creatures giue glory to God in their kind: oh how great shall our sinnes be, and how much our wickednesse aggrauated, if we doe not care to bring glory vnto him. O with what gladnesse should wee perswade one another to this dutie, that seeing there is no creature, but in his kinde, doth in some measure set

3  
 Things to  
 quicken our  
 care of Gods  
 glory.

1  
 Psal. 19.1.  
 Reuel. 5.13.  
 and 14.

out the glory of God, how often should man much more meditate then and praise the same?

2

1 SAM. 2. 30.

JOHN 17. 4, 5.

Secondly to consider, *That if we glorifie God, he will glorifie vs*: we cannot be so ready to set out the Lords Name and praises, but he is more quicke to requite and exalt vs: as it is written, *1 Sam 2. 30. For them that honour me, I will honour, &c. They who despise me shall be despised. Vnto which we may vse the words of our Sauour, in that solemne prayer, John 17. 4, 5. where he thus ( amongst other arguments ) prayes for glory. I haue glorified thee on earth, I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe: and now glorifie thou me, O Father with thine owne selfe: with the glory that I had with thee before the world was. So that when we haue glorified God in the time of this life, then may we assuredly expect that the Lord will glorifie vs at the day of death: but if wee haue no care to glorifie him in this world: how can we be perswaded that he will glorifie vs, after our departure hence.*

3

NUM. 20. 12.

Thirdly, to consider, *That God will seuerely punish the contempt of his glory*: for there is nothing in this world that he doth more tender then his glory. For which he commanded his people thus: *Thou shalt not giue my glory to another. Yea see for neglect of this duty, how seuerely he punished his people, whose carcases all perished in the wilderness: because they did not ascribe and giue glory to the Lord. Yea the hand of God fell vpon Moses and Aaron, because they failed in this duty: Because ( said hee ) you did not sa it sic me in the eyes of the children of Israel, you shall not bring this Congregation into the land that I haue giuen them. Thus if God will so seuerely punish the neglect of his glory in his own deare children and seruants, how shal they escape that are not so deare vnto him, and yet are much more faulty in the same kinde.*

The

*The second part of this Petition, is; that as wee pray* 2  
*that we our selues may glorifie the Name of God, So* Part of this  
*we pray that others may doe so also.* Petition,  
 That the whole world  
 may know and acknowledge the Goodnesse, Mercy,  
 Wisdome, Power, and Greatnesse that is in God. So  
 wee are exhorted to doe by the Prophet, *Gine vnto* Psal. 96. 4, 8.  
*to the Lord (the families of the people;) gine vnto the*  
*Lord glory and power, &c. Gine vnto the Lord the glory*  
*of his Name, &c. Ierem. 23. 16.* Ierem. 13. 16. *saith he, Gine glory vnto*  
*to the Lord your God, before he bring darkenesse over the*  
*land &c.* So that it is cleere, we must not onely glorifie  
 God our selues, but also be carefull that others, especi-  
 ally seruants and children vnder vs, doe the like: as  
 we reade of *Iob*, that because he was iealous of his chil- Iob 1. 5.  
 drens actions, he offered sacrifice for them: and the  
 Lord himselfe saith of *Abraham* *I know that Abraham* Gen. 18. 19.  
*will command his household to serue me.* Wherefore let vs  
 cast vp this account with our selues, that if of duty and  
 conscience we serue God; it is likewise our duty to  
 prouide that our children and seruants doe the like. Yee  
 shall find many men that put away their seruants be-  
 cause they be idle, stubborne, carelesse, and false vnto  
 them: but where is there one that puts away a seruant  
 because he is a swearer, a blasphemor of the Holy Name  
 of God, a prophaner of the Sabbath, &c. This shewes  
 that we haue more care of our owne workes and profit  
 in particulars, then of the Lords glory. But true Chri-  
 stians should take another course, and pray, that a-  
 boue all things, the Name of GOD may be Hal-  
 lowed all the world ouer: being diligent withall,  
 that all vnder their charge and gouernment do the like  
 also. Againe, we pray in this Petition, *That though*  
*both doe faile, yet that the Lord would maintaine the cause*  
*of his owne glory.* This shewes a sincere true aff: & on  
 to the glory of God, when we are contented that the  
 Lord should doe that which is for his owne glory,



1st. 12. 18.

howsoever the matter light heavy vpon our selues; as  
 Christ said, Father glorifie thy Name, so say we: Lord  
 though it be by death, though by my extinction, abolishing,  
 though I suffer all paines, though I indure the greatest mis-  
 ery that may be, yet glorifie thy Name, whether in life or  
 death. Thus when one can be contented to be exposed  
 to all the mischief in the world, all the shame and dis-  
 grace that may be, to set forth the honour of God, if hee  
 may be glorified by the same; this shewes that such  
 haue a desire of the glory of God, and that this sincere  
 affection commeth from the Lords mercy, being  
 powred into our hearts by his blessed Spirit,  
 whereby we can effectually cry out:

*Hallowed be thy Name.*

---

2 P E-

---



## 2. PETITION.

*Thy Kingdome come.*



**I**N the former Petition, we are taught to pray for the glory of God, which <sup>2</sup> *Petition* is preferred before the Kingdome of God, to shew that all our care must be for Gods glory. Now *in the next Petition we are taught to pray for the meanes of his glory; that the Kingdome of God may come, &c.* for then indeed God shall haue his glory, when looking for the Kingdome of God, it comes into our hearts to *inable vs* to performe his commandments, and that we be alwayes ready to doe his will; for vntill it be so, God shall haue little glory or honour amongst vs, so that first we pray for the glory of God, and then for *the meanes of his glory*. It is the error of the world to desire the *End* without *the meanes*. The glory of God (which is the *End*) they would haue: But the meanes of his glory, which is the Kingdome of God to come, and his will to be done, this, they care not for. The wicked *Iewes*, *Isa. 66. 5.* could say, *Let the Lord bee glorified*, which is spoken of all those who be worshippers of the true God. So the *Pharises*, *Iohn 9. 24.* were contented to say vnto the blindman, *Give glory to God*, <sup>*Iohn 9. 24.*</sup> but they would not allow of Christ the meanes of their saluation: for, said they vnto him, we know that this man is a sinner, whereby it appeares, that the common course of the world is, to desire the glory of God without the meanes of his glory.

*In this Petition also we may obserue three things.*

I  
Sense of the  
Petition.

First, when we pray that the Kingdome of God may come; *It is in opposition to another Kingdome that is already in the world:* for the sinnes of men: The kingdome of darkenesse, and of the Diuell, which is a great and mighty kingdome, and hath a number of proppes and pillars to vphold it: as for the Kingdome of Christ there be a very small company to vphold it: but the kingdome of darknesse hath a number of great ones to sustaine it, whole swarmes of people in euery corner, one would wonder at the multitude, and at their conditions. For howsoeuer men will say, I defie the diuell, and (according to the custome) spit at him, yet as long as they doe the will of the Diuell, practising workes of darkenesse, there is no hope that by their indeuours they can aduance the Kingdome of God; or labour that it should come vpon them. Doth not either ignorance or blindnesse eate vp their soules, so that they bee either lyars, swearers, adulterers, fornicators, couetous, drunkards, contentious, &c. wherein so long as they continue, they be the very proppes and pillars to vphold and shoulder vp the kingdome of darkenesse and the Diuell. Thus it appeares the Diuell is a great Monarch, because the greatest part of the subiects in all Kingdomes serue him, be obedient to him, and disobedient vnto God: they runne, as the Apostle speakes, *Ephes 2. 2. After the Prince that ruleth in the ayre, euen the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.* So *2 Cor. 4. 4* It is said, *That the God of this world hath blinded their mindes, &c.* For as God spake the word and it was done, saying, *Let there be light, and there was light:* So the Diuell cannot so soone speake the word, but by and by it is done, by worldly men. He can no sooner say, let there bee an oath, lye, bribe, quarrell, fashion, or wickednesse, but by and by some one or other puts it in practise.

*Ephes, 2. 2.*

*2 Cor. 4. 4.*

*Gen. 1. 15.*  
Light.

Thus



Thus he rules like a God in this world, a great pittie it is, that men should so be deceiued, for God will pull downe the Kingdome of darkenesse, and set vp the Kingdome of his deare sonne. Yea, this kingdome must first be pulled downe, ere the other be erected. For as in laying a foundation, when one would build a new house, he first pulls downe the ruines of the old, so must he first pull downe this kingdome of the Diuell, ere that other of Christ be set vp. Wherefore heere wee pray against this kingdome of darkenesse that God would destroy it, for which at this day, there is great need we should so pray, because the Kingdome of the Diuell is like a Sea, which as Philosophers say, gets in one place, if it lose in another: So is it with it, looke how much it hath lost by a defection and reuolt from Popery, so much hath it (in a manner) got by the filthy sinne of Drunkenesse, Irreligion, Pride, Contentions, and other foule sinnes of this land, what need haue wee then to pray, that God would pull downe this kingdome of the diuell, and euerie where set vp that of *Christ Iesus*.

House.

Sea-gaining.

Secondly, *In that we pray for the Kingdome of God to come: It sheweth, that there are a number of impediments and lets to hinder this Kingdome from comming. Which are of two sorts.*

2

Thing obserued.

1 *Many impediments in others.*

2 *Too many in our selues.*

Concerning others, we see daily, how men are drawne by example, by ill counsell, by diuers discouragements, whereby they are affrighted from seeking the peace of the Gospell: as *Matth. 20. 31* when the blind men cryed out on *Christ*, the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace, so it is with vs in this world, how are we scoft and derided, yea, chidden againe and againe. If we serue God in sincerity, and be zealous

1

For others.

Mat. 20. 31.

Amalecke.

zealous for the comming of this Kingdome. See it in the beginning, when the children of *Israel* came out of *Egypt*, how were they hindred and stopped in their journey. So whensoever we shall begin to make after *Christ*, we shall bee sure of a many lets and impediments: like vnto the *Pharisees* in the Gospell, who were ready to answer the Officers, and discourage the people from following after *Christ*, saying, *Doe any of the Rulers beleene in him, but this people who know not the Law?* Thus it is with the whole swarme of wicked men, who discharge men from the wayes of God.

Z

Impediments  
in our selues.

*Iohn* 12. 42, 43.

False man.

Againe, wee haue too many impediments in our selues. *Selfe-loue, loue of the world, loue of riches, honour, preferment, and such like*, as it is *Iohn* 12. 42, 43. said of many, that they beleued in *Christ*: but because of the *Pharises* they did not confesse him, for they loued the praise of men more then the praise of God. But we must not doe so, for though we sit farre in darkenesse from letting in the light of God vnto vs, or howeuer we seeme to cloie vp our eyes from beholding the light, yet let vs not be so contented, but pray to the Lord that he would breake through all these hinderances and impediments, and let downe his graces of mercy and loue so amongst vs, by his grace, that this Kingdome may come vpon vs, yea, that we may doe as the False man did, who brake through the roofe of the house to come to *Christ*; Remēbring that the Lord *Iesus* braketh through all impediments and hinderances, to come vnto vs and fill vs with his blessings, wherein we may further obserue two things, that in *Christs* comming to vs, & our comming to him, a number of lettes and hinderances do concur: yet he hath so wrought by his Spirit, as we can say, *Thy Kingdome come*; and he so ouercomes all, as he will at length say vnto vs, *Come yee blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdome prepared for you, &c.*

The

The third thing prayed for in this Petition, is, That we pray.

3  
Thing praid  
for in this Pe-  
tition,

1 For the Kingdome of grace.

2 For the Kingdome of glory.

Which two Kingdomes differ not in nature, but only in measure and in degrees: for the Kingdome of grace is nothing else, but a beginning and inchoation of the Kingdome of glory, there being no way to attaine vnto the one, vnlesse they passe through the other. It is a common custome of the world, that most men aspire to the Kingdome of glory; and yet cannot endure the Kingdome of grace, how should they euer attaine it, thinke you? we that by Gods blessing, are better taught, therefore first, pray heere for the Kingdome of grace, to be gouerned and ruled by the Lord here in this world. But more particularly let vs see what the Kingdome of grace is? namely, *The speciall power of Christ whereby he rules and gouernes in the consciences and soules of all his seruants.* This is the Kingdome which we do pray for, that the Lord *Iesus* would set vp a Throne in our hearts to rule and gouerne in vs by the rule of his Spirit, subduing and bringing vnder all our thoughts and consciences to himselfe. Now all men doe outwardly speake well of Christ, thinke sure enough to be saued by him, but yet cannot endure to be guided and directed by the Spirit of Christ, but in effect doe what those wicked *Iewes* say, *Luke 19.14. Wee will not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.* So it is with most of the world, they can be content to heare of Christ as a Sauour, to haue the Word preached, and to see the Gospell flourish: but they will not haue him reigne, strictly direct them in all their actions, restraints them in their passions, and guide them in their liues: doing whatsoeuer seemes good in their owne eyes. Yet ere we proceed.

Definition of  
the Kingdome  
of grace.

*Luke 19.14.*

Here



Obiect.

Here ariseth an Obiection, as *Luke 19. 21.* our Saui-  
our speakes, *That the Kingdome of God is come already:*  
how then are wee directed to pray for that which is  
come?

Ans.

I

*Esau.*  
*Gen. 27. 38.*

I answer in two respects; first, It is true that the  
Kingdome of grace is begun already, therefore we pray  
that as it is come to others, so also that it may come to  
vs, that we may feele the power and effects of it in our  
hearts and liues. Therefore as *Esau, Gen. 27. 38.* when  
he saw that his father had blessed his brother *Jacob*, cry-  
ed and roared out, *Blesse me my father, euen me also;* thus  
must we doe when we see the Kingdome of God to  
come vpon others, how God rules in them by his Sp-  
rit, orders them in their liues, directs them in their con-  
sciences, we, I say, must pray that the same grace of God  
may continually attend vpon vs.

2

*Rom. 7. 22, 23.*

Sicke man,  
Godly.

Againe, though the Kingdome of God be come al-  
ready, yet we pray for an increase thereof, that euery day  
we and others might feele the power of it more and  
more in our hearts and liues. For there is no man but  
feeles himselfe, in some sort and measure bound and in-  
thrall'd to the Temptations of sinne. Holy *Paul* him-  
selfe complains of this, *I delight in the Law of God con-  
cerning the inner man, but I see another law in my members,  
rebelling against the law of my mind.* And surely the state  
of the godly, are like vnto a man that hath been deadly  
sicke, and now is so on the mending hand, that he is per-  
aduenture able to creepe abroad with a staffe, yet not  
able to do the tenth part of the businesse that he sees he  
should, and at sometimes was wont to doe. Thus it is  
with the best of vs all, whilst we liue here, though the  
Kingdome of *Christ* be come amongst vs, yet had wee  
need to pray, that it may more and more come into our  
hearts, that we may feele the strength and vigour of it

to our endlesse comfort, and full recouery of our health in *Christ*. Yea, great reason there is why wee should thus pray for the Kingdome of *Christ*, being that no Kingdome is comparable vnto his: there being as much difference betwixt the Kingdome of *Christ*, and other Kingdomes of the world, as there is betweene *Heauen* and *Earth*, and that for diuers respects.

First, *In regard of continuance*, for earthly Kingdomes howsoeuer they begin in glory, yet by and by, both Lord and Crowne, and Scepter, withall their glory falls into the dust: But *Christ* is a King for euer, and although he once ware a Crowne of Thornes vpon earth, yet now he hath a Crowne of glory in *Heauen*, and is in possession for euer: Of whose Kingdome there shall be no end, as it is, *Luke 1. 33.*

Differences  
and excellen-  
cy of *Christ's*  
Kingdome of  
grace, before  
all others.

1

Secondly, *In regard of the saciety of his Kingdome*; For other Kings haue but rule ouer the bodies, goods, and liues of their subiects, at the farthest. But *Christ* he rules and gouerns the very hearts of them, and inclines their wills to effect spirituall graces, wherein the Kings of the Earth, can neither satisfie themselves nor their subiects. *Christ* will giue vs Crownes, and make vs Kings also.

2

Thirdly, *In regard of the right and Iustice of it*: For though other Kings being sinners themselves, can bee content to tolerate much sinne and prophanesse: yet *Christ* is so righteous and so iust a King, that he will tolerate no sinne or iniustice whatsoeuer, no not in Kings themselves; of whom it is said. *Isa. 32. 1, 2. Behold a King shall reigne in righteousness, and Princes shall rule in Iudgement.*

3

Fourthly, *In regard of the fruit and commodities of it*; For other Kings receiue Tribute from their Subiects,

4

but

but Christ giues a thousand things more then hee receiues, he takes away death and damnation with his left hand, and giues vs life and saluation with the right hand; so both hands are full of blessings, and store vs abundantly to the supplying of all our wants.

5 *Fiftly, In regard of administration and imploymēt of it;* for other Kings after they haue entred into their Kingdomes, commonly sit still, goe little, liue at ease, or at least, seeke by all meanes they can to maintaine the pleasures of their lines, and giue themselues to quietnesse. But our Sauour Christ doth most mightily rule and gouerne all things for the good of his seruants, watching ouer them to do them good, night and day at all times, and in all places, preuenting them with mercies: and working all his workes for their good: great reason it is therefore, that we should pray for the comming of his Kingdome.

A further  
scope of the  
Petition,

Yet we must further know, that we doe not onely pray for the Kingdom of grace: *but also for all good means conducting and leading vnto it*, for euery thing that may incite and helpe to the Kingdom of grace amongst vs. As for good Magistrates, Ministers, a pure right vse of the Sacraments: holy discipline of Christ in the Church for the good gouernment thereof, and for euery thing that may further this great worke of God amongst vs. So 1 *Tim. 2. 1.* Saint Paul wils that Prayers be made for all men, and for Kings and Princes, and for all that be in authority: *That vnder them we may liue a godly, peaceable, and a quiet life.* And Christ himselve, *Matth. 9. 38.* commands prayers to bee made vnto the Lord of the Haruest, that he will send forth labourers vnto his haruest. So you see it is our duty to pray for all the meanes which may aduance this Kingdome. Worldly men can say, they desire that the Kingdome of Christ may come, though they care not a rush for Hea-

1 *Tim. 2. 1.*

*Matth. 9. 38.*



ben or newnesse of life, for the Word, or Saints, or Ministers, or Holy orders of *Christ*, without which there can be no Kingdome of *Christ* amongst vs. It was not onely a tyranny in *Pharaoh*, to take away the straw from the people, but also when hee had so done, to require of them the whole tale of Bricke, as formerly. So it is the madnesse of the world, they take away the Word and the Sacraments, the holy gouernment of *Christ*, and when they haue thus done, yet they thinke to haue their whole tale of Bricke: as much Patience, Loue, Humility, Faith, Obedience, Sobriety, Temperance, and the like; as if all these gracious and good meanes were entertained amongst them. But wee must remember what the Scripture saith, *Where there is no vision, there the people perish.* Therefore whensoever wee settle our selues to remaine any where: as little *Isaac* said to his father, when they went vp to the Mount *Moriah*: *Behold the wood and the fire, but where is the offering?* So should we say wheresoeuer we goe to dwell. Loc here is a Church good ayre, a good house, meanes enough to increase wealth: but where is the Preacher? and the meanes of grace, for the saluation of our soules.

*Exod. 5. 7.*

*Pharaoh.*

*Pro. 29. 18.*

*Isaac.*

*Gen. 22. 7.*

Therefore seeing we ought, and must pray, *Thy Kingdome come.* Let vs pray vnto God often, that he would rule and raigne in our hearts, so by his holy Spirit: that sinne may no longer rule vs, nor wee bee ruled by our selues, but that God would rule and guide vs in all our wayes, so that in all things we may be ready to submit our selues to the holy gouernment of God: as Saint *Paul* writes, *That the peace of God may dwell in our hearts plentifully:* and with *Dauid*, that God would guide vs vnto the day of death: and then this will bring great ioy vnto vs, as *Zephaniah* speaks, when the King of *Israel* is in the midst of vs, then we shall see no euill. And withall, let vs often remember to pray, that there be no want of gouernment, but that God by himselfe may rule

*Yt.*

*Colos. 3. 15.*

*Psal. 48. 14.*

*Zeph. 3. 15.*

Blindman,

and reigne in vs, that though the world loue loosenesse, and cannot endure this kingdome, yet we may be pleyable and yeelding to be ruled by it. For as the blindman is best and safest, whose eyes being shut, follows his guide: so is euery Christian when they disclaime their owne wit, reason, and wisedome, and are ruled and guided by God in all things. Yea, the people of God neuer thinke themselues better, then when they be vnder the gouernment of God, and submit wholly to his will, and in so doing, let vs not be discouraged for our weakenesse and wants, for if we indeuour to doe this sincerely, grace (which at first in vs is like seed, because it must grow, not like straw which cannot increase) will grow from a little, to greatnesse of stature, and proportion in time.

*Now there be three Motiues to moue vs to this subiection to the will of God.*

I

The first is, *If we will not haue God to be our King, we shall be subiects and slaues in a worse Kingdome: as the Lord speakes by Moses, to perswade them to admit of Gods Kingdome: . Because thou hast not serued the Lord thy God with ioyfulnesse and with gladnesse of heart, for the abundance of all things, therefore shalt thou serue thine enemies which the Lord shall send against thee, in hunger, thirst and in nakednesse, and in want of all things. So the Lord threatens his people with captiuitie, 2 Chron. 12. 8. for their sinnes, saying, Neuerthelesse, yee shall be his seruants, that yee may know my seruice, and the seruice, of the Kingdomes of the Countrey: So that if we will not be Gods seruants, we shal sure be subiects and slaues vnto a tyrannous kingdome, a kingdome of many Lords: of which a Father speakes: Oh how many Lords haue they, &c. For if God be not our King, then euery foule lust, sinne, and temptation, will be our King to rule and gouerne vs at their pleasure. Therefore it is best to say with*

Deut. 28. 28.

2 Chron. 12. 8.

*Ambrose. o quam multos habent Dominos, &c.*

with holy *David*, *Lord I am thy servant, &c.* So I would *Psalm. 116.*  
haue euery good Christian say, *I haue no lord to rule ouer*  
*me but Iesus Christ: Come Lord and possesse me for thine*  
*owne.*

Secondly, *Because of the comfortable fruits thereof,*  
*Paul* sayes of this Kingdome, that the fruits thereof are  
Righteousnesse, Peace, Ioy in the Holy Ghost; so that  
there is much comfort for a man to liue in this King-  
dome. We see that all the people of God, who most, or  
at all yeilded to Gods gouernment, to set him high in  
their hearts, they alwayes passed so much the more  
comfortably their time in this world: And againe, the  
more any of them withdrew themselues from this go-  
uernment of God, they became alwayes the more dis-  
tressed and miserably perplexed with troubles and  
dangers. So *David* saith, *As for me, it is good for mee to* *Psalm 37. v. 1.*  
*draw neere to God.* So *Hos. 2. 7.* the Church is brought *Hos. 2. 7.*  
in thus resolving: *I will goe and returne to my first bus-*  
*band, for at that time was I better than now.* So must wee  
say, when we haue gone astray; It was much better  
with vs, when we dwelt vnder the gouernment of  
God, therefore we will returne to that good gouern-  
ment againe. A Tenant, you know, as long as he payes A Tenant,  
his rent, and doth suite and seruice to his lord, all is  
peaceable and quiet with him, nobody can molest him,  
but if he deny to pay his Rent, and doe no suite or ser-  
uice to his lord, then the Bailiffes will be busie to ar-  
rest and straine his goods, yea many times to ceaze on  
his body: Euen so as long as we pay the Lords Rent,  
acknowledge his gouernment, be ready to doe suit and  
seruice vnto him, so long we shall find all peaceable and  
quiet, but if we faile in our duty, then must trouble and  
mischiefe come vpon vs.

Thirdly, *Because the Kingdome of grace, is the only road-*  
*way to the Kingdome of glory;* No man when he is dead



can come to raigne with God, vnlesse God first raigne in him, being alieue in this world.

Citie.

We see no man can enter into a Citie, vnlesse first he passe through the Suburbes thereof. So Heauen is the great City of the Saints, they all seeke and aspire to; the Kingdome of grace is the Suburbes thereof, by which we must passe: therefore there is a necessity to be in the state of grace here, ere we can hope to raigne with God in glory hereafter.

2

Thing we pray  
for, is for the  
kingdome of  
glory.

Cant. 2. 16.

Reuel. 22. 30.

Rom. 8. 23.

Impertinent.

Dan. 4. 3.

Rom. 13. 1.

Lame man.

The next thing we pray for in this Petition, is; *For the Kingdome of glory*: that God would make an end of the *Conflicting* dayes of sinne, and hasten the Kingdome of his deare Sonne, the Kingdome of glory. So the Church prayes. *Returne my Beloued, and be like a Roe, or a young Hart vpon the Mountaines of Bether*: So in the *Reuelation*, *Come, Lord Iesus, Come quickly*; and Saint Paul shewes, *That all the Creatures doe groane for this happy day of Christs appearance*: So that here, in the second place, we pray that the Lord would abolish and darken all the Kingdomes of this world; amongst whom the holy Ordinances of God appointed vnto them for peace, are abused to their condemnation. So in *Daniel*, This Kingdome of *Christ* is compared to a tree, vnder the shadow whereof, the beasts of the field might rest, and the birds of the ayre find shelter; Therefore the Apostle sayes, It is ordained of God, so that though we haue no cause to murmur or grudge at the kingdomes of this world, but to thanke G O D for them, yet we must know euery state hath his abuses, and so haue these. But as a lame man in a garden, though he cannot doe that worke which one that is perfectly able to walke can doe, yet hee serues, and is vsfull to speake, direct, and fray away birds, keeping much annoyance from the fruit therof, which otherwise might be lost. So it is with worldly gouernments and states, though they be not so well ordered as they might bee, yet

yet no body can deny, but they fray away enemies, many dangers, and many rauenous birds that would else deuour vp the fruits of our labours. Therefore we pray not for the Kingdome of *Christ* in any detestation to these earthly kingdomes, but onely because we preferre the Kingdome of *Christ* before them. We thanke God for the Kingdomes of this world, but we would much more be thankfull for the Kingdome of *Christ*. As men that vse a Coach to bring them to a house, as soone as they come there, send away the Coach, as hauing no more vse of it: So the Kingdomes of this world, be but as Coaches, helpes and furtherances to transport and carry vs to a better Kingdome, the Kingdome of *Christ*: where being arriued, farewell all the Kingdomes of the world.

A Coach,

The reasons why we preferre, and especially pray for the Kingdome of glory are diuers. First, *Because in these earthly Kingdomes, most of vs are subiects and inferiours,* but in the Kingdome of glory we shall be all Kings, no King in this world can be so glorious, but the poorest and meanest Christian there shall be as glorious as hee; as *Christ* speakes, *Matth. 19. 28. Verely I say vnto you,* that yce who haue followed me in the Regeneration, when the Sonne of man shall sit in the Throne of his glory, yea, also shall sit vpon twelue thrones, Iudging the twelue Tribes of *Israel*.

Reasons why we pray, especially for the kingdome of Glory.

*Matth. 19. 28.*

*Luke 22. 30.*

Secondly, *Because many grieuances and annoyances are in these earthly kingdomes;* euen in the best of them, some Gall mingled with Honey, some Aloes with the Manna, some bitterneesse with the sweetnesse of them. Therefore as the people could say of *Salomons* Kingdome ( which was one of the best ) that it was but a yoake, and too heauy for them to beare: so the best is but a yoake and many times a heauy yoake too, but in the sweet Kingdome of *Christ*, there shall bee nothing

Matth. 13. 41.

Reuel. 21. 4.

Bees.

offensive to vs; as it is saide of the Angels at that day: *And they shall gather out of his Kingdome all things that offend, saith our Saviour.* So it is said, *There shall bee no more sorrow.* Bees wee know bee driuen from their Combes and Honey with a little smoake; euen so the vexations, puthers and smoakes, which wee finde on these earthly kingdomes, should make vs all long for that happy Kingdome of *Christ*, wherein there shall bee nothing to annoy vs.

3

Hebr. 12. 28.

Thirdly, *Because earthly Kingdomes, they yeeld vs peace and tranquillity, but for a time onely; for either they end or we end, and so all comes to nothing; But our happinesse in Christs Kingdome shall be for euer and euer: for when we haue liued a hundred thousand thousand yeeres in the full inioyment of it, wee haue more and more and more ages without end to possesse it: therefore Heb. 12. 28. it is called a kingdome which cannot be shaken; good reason then haue wee whose eyes he hath opened to behold this kingdome, to pray especially and groane for it.*

Now there be two wayes, whereby the kingdome of God may come vnto vs.

1 *Generally at the day of Iudgement.*

2 *Particularly, at the day of our owne death.*

1

Thing we pray  
for.

Ezech. 6. 10.

We pray for both these: First, that God would bee pleased to fold vp the times, make an end of this world, hasten the great comming of his deare Sonne: Thus the Saints cry vnder the Altar; *How long Lord Holy and true: dost thou not auenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?* We know this kingdome of *Christ* cannot come, but first there must bee a dissolution of  
this



this world, when all the glory thereof must turne to nothing: ( as *Peter* speakes ) *The Earth and all the workes thereof shall be burnt up.* 1 Pet. 3. 10. God forbid therefore that the world or any thing in it should make vs loath to come to Heauen: rather let vs be contented to suffer the losse of all, so we come thither to enioy this happy and blessed kingdome of the Lord Iesus, for which we are commanded to pray. Which as we pray for, so must we be carefull to fit and prepare our selues for it, that when it commeth, it may come to our comfort, we all pray, *Thy Kingdome come.* But know, O man, if thou hast not fitted and prepared thy selfe for it, if thou dost liue in thy sinnes, if thou hast had no care, nor regard of reconciling thy selfe to Christ, for thy saluation, if thou hast not beene thoroughly washed ouer and ouer in the blood of the Lambe; Oh whensoever this kingdome comes, I foretell thee in the Name of the Lord it will come to thy cost, to thy ruine and vtter desolation in the day of Christ.

Therefore consider of this, all yee that liue in known sinnes without repentance: yea, pray ( I say ) that the Kingdome of God may come, and oh, what haue you to doe with the day of the Lord: This comming shall be sorrow, wee, confusion, darknesse, nay, Blackenesse of darknesse, and tempest vnto yon for euer, and reiection from the presence of CHRIST: but if you would haue comfort of CHRISTs comming, liue well and be prepared for it with the *Wise Virgins*, hauing Oyle in your Lampes, and your Loynes girded.

Secondly, wee pray, that though this generall comming be deferred, yet that by death as by a close doore we may be let in into this kingdome. So that whereas the men of this world desire nothing more then to liue still here: hang, as it were, vpon the pleasures of this

life, saour nothing but of earth and earthly contentments: the true mortified Christian professeth another thing, he desireth to leaue all and goe home to Christ, as soone as may be; So *Iob*, *If a man dye, shall he liue againe?* *All the dayes of my appointed time will I waite till my changing shall come, &c.* and *Paul*, *Philip. 1. 23.* professes, *I desire to bee loosed, and to bee with Christ, which is best of all.*

It is true indeed, that no man may desire the day of death out of discontentment with life, because of the trouble and crosses of this world: It was *Jonas* fault to doe so yet in two respects, one may pray for death, yea, his owne death.

Respects to  
pray for death.

1

First, *That we may make an end of sinning and offending G O D*, that whereas hee euery day breakes out in the dishonouring of G O D, which vexes and grieues him, hee may pray the Lord to shorten these dayes of sinne: with abatement of our dayes, so finishing our offences, as *Saint Paul* does: *O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer mee from the body of this death?*

2

Secondly, *That wee may enioy the blessed fruition of the presence of God, as his holy Angels doe.*

*Moses* you know, desired but to see the backe parts of God on the holy mountaine, for hee could not see his face and liue.

If *Moses* so desired to see but a glimpse of his glory, as it were through a creuice or a chinke; how much more excellent will be the shining of his face in full glory? therefore because euery day wee liue in this world, wee lose a day in Heauen, as detained from him, who is our true life indeed: wee may therefore pray, that as soone as may be, wee may finish vp our course in this world, and cry to be away, to goe home to

*Thy Kingdome come.*

25

to the house of our Father, to the possession of a better  
life, the Kingdome of Glory, and happinesse pre-  
pared for vs, for which wee are taught to  
pray. *Thy Kingdome come.*

( \* \* \* )

---

3 P E

---

---

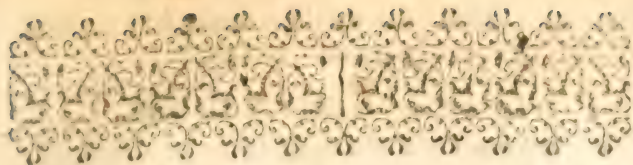
---

---



THE  
LIBRARY OF THE  
MUSEUM OF NATURAL HISTORY  
AND  
ZOOLOGY  
OF THE  
CITY OF NEW YORK

71-11



### 3. PETITION.

*Thy will be done euen in Earth as it  
is in Heauen.*



EE haue heard before, that in the first  
Petition, we pray for the glory of  
God, and in the second for the means  
of his glory, that is, that the king-  
dome of God may come into our  
hearts, and rule vs by his Spirit.  
Now in this third Petition we pray  
that we may be contented to submit unto it, and be alwayes  
ready to doe the Lords will, and not our owne. So that  
whereas in the former Petition, we prayed for the in-  
ward gouernment of God, the worke of grace, holy  
motions, striuings in our selues, that the Lord would do  
his part; now we pray that we may be willing to doe  
our part, not resist this inward gouernment of God, bee  
ready euer to yeeld obedience vnto it. All the Questi-  
on ( as one sayes very well ) betwixt God and vs is,  
whose will shall be done, Gods will should, but man is  
vnwilling to haue it so, but aspires to haue his own will  
for the rule of his actions, this is that which breeds all  
the quarrell betwixt God and vs: Now our Sauour  
Christ, he teaches vs in this Petition, to giue all the So-  
uerainty to God, to take his part against our selues,  
praying to doe his will, whatsoeuer may befall vs in  
this

this world: Thus haue we the summe of the Petition; in which, three things are to be considered.

1 *Whose will must be done? Gods will*

2 *What will of God we must doe?*

His reuealed will, that is, the will of God reuealed in his Word, his secret will being a thing reserued to himselfe, the other, *quo ad nos*, belonging vnto vs, to follow as the rule of our actions.

3 *In what manner we must doe it? As the Angels doe in heauen.*

I  
Whose will  
must be done? Concerning the first, *Whose will must be done?* It is the will of God, that will is it we all pray that we may doe, obey, submit to it in all our actions, and courses of life, so that this will of God may be the onely rule of our wils: Thus *Dauid* protestes: *I desire to doe thy will O God*: And againe, he prayes: *Teach me, O Lord, to doe thy will*. As if he should say, I need no body to teach me to doe my owne will, but Lord instruct mee that I may doe thine. So the Apostle *Peter* exhorts vs for holy life, *Not to liue any longer in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God*: So that Gods will must bee the Ruler and Moderator of our wils, all our dayes, bringing our will to Gods, and not Gods will to ours, as *Balaam* did. To this purpose Saint *Augustine* saith well  
Crooked stick. on *Psal. 44. 6*. *If a man lay a crooked stick upon an euen leuell ground, the stick and ground ill sute together, but the fault is in the stick*. In this case thou must not strue to bring the euen ground to the crooked stick, but bow the crooked stick euen with the ground: So it is betweene Gods will and ours, there is a discrepancy and iarring betwixt them, but where is the fault, not in the will of God, but in our crooked and corrupt affections: in which case, wee must not seeke to bring Gods will vnto ours, but be contented to rectifie and order the crooked-



crookednesse of our will by the rectitude and Sanctitie of the will of God, which must be the rule of our willes; for which cause we pray, *Thy will be done, &c.*

Now this will of God is opposed to three other wills Will of God  
opposed by  
three other  
wills. which be in the world: First, the Diuell hath a will, which is euer a crossing the will of God. God would haue vs doe one thing, and the diuell would haue vs doe another. If once the will of God be knowne, by and by, it is easie to know the Diuels will, because it stands in a meere contrariety and opposition to the will of God.

If any man obiekt and say, I hope there is no man so Obiect. wicked as to doe the will of the Diuell.,

I answer, it should be so; yet through corruption of Ans. nature, we are all naturally made to obey the will of the Diuell, more then the will of God. *Adam*, we see, when the will of God, and the will of the Diuell hung vp in an equall ballance by him, how soone was he ready to be guided by the Diuell, rather then to obey the will of God. And so the best of vs, howsoeuer we pray daily, *Thy will be done*; yet what a stirre haue we to bring our hearts vnto it, how gladly would we take a contrary course if we might, and haue Gods will another way of our owne?

I, but may some say, if there be such danger in the Obiect. Diuels will, how shall it be knowne and auoyded?

I answer, very readily and easily, and that by exam- Ans. ple: if a man tell a lye, whose will is it? not the will of God, for he saith, *Put away lying*. But the will of the Ephes. 4. 25. Diuell is lying, as it said of *Ananias*, *Act. 5. 3.* *Why* Act. 5. 3. *hath Satan filled thine heart to lie?* So it is of swearing & oth. r prophanneffe, which is not the will of God but the

*Hebr. 12. 16.*

the will of the Diuell. The like we haue, *Hebr. 12. 16.* *Let there be no prophane person, as Esau, amongst you, &c.* and so in all the rest. So long therefore as wee liue in our sinnes against conscience, and will not repent of them and amend our liues, so long as we be thus giuen ouer to wickednesse, our wills stand in subiection to the will of the Diuell: as Christ said to the Iewes, *Ye are of your Father the Diuell*: So he who doth the workes of the Diuell, without doubt is at his subiection; this is the first thing we pray against, that we may not doe the will of the Diuill.

*Iohn 8. 44.*

2

*Ephes. 2. 3.*

Secondly, There is a will of the flesh, as the Apostle calls it, *Ephes. 2. 3.* *The fulfilling the will of the flesh.* Against this will we pray also, and that we may be enabled to bring our will in subiection to the will of God: for which there be two maine reasons; First, because our owne will is most crooked and corrupt, vntill God renue it; for the will of man vnrenued, doth extraordinarily resist the will of God. As the rebellious Iewes said, *Ierem. 44. 16.* *The word that thou hast spoken vnto vs in the Name of the Lord, we will not heare of it of thee.* So *Iohn 5. 40.* Christ complaines of the Iewes: *But you will not come to me, that ye might haue life.* And *Psal. 36.* all the Psalmes shew so much, so that the will of man is apparantly rebellious, till God alter and change it by the power of grace. Therefore we pray that our will may be ouermastred by the power of grace, so as to submit to Gods will. Secondly, because Gods will is alwayes better then our will. Adam would needs haue his owne will in eating of the forbidden fruit, but I pray you whose will was the better? Gods will said, *Thou shalt not eate*: but mans will would needs eate. Now (considering the curses which came after) any foole can tell which was the better. The Marriners, *Act. 27. 10.* would needs haue their owne will, when they might haue bene in a safe harbour and sure Ha-

1  
Reason.*Ierem. 44. 16.**Iohn 5. 40.*

Reason.

*Act. 27. 12.*

uen, they would needs put forth to Sea, well they did Marriners.  
 so, but what was the end thereof? they all suffred ship-  
 wracke and hardly escaped with their liues, though  
*Paul* told them of the danger: so is it with vs, for the  
 most part we will haue our owne wils, though we mis-  
 carry in our courses: and then we are faine to tell you  
 (as *Paul* did the Marriners) *O my brethren, you should*  
*haue hearkned vnto the Lord, and obeyed and kept close*  
*vnto him, and so haue shunned this losse,*

Thirdly, There is the will of the world, which is still  
 opposite to the will of God; for when the world wills  
 vs such and such things, commonly God wils the con-  
 trary: therefore we must try and approue of nothing  
 further then it agrees with the will of God: so that  
 when any thing is determined or wished for, let vs haue  
 a care to the warrant & lawfulnessse of it. The Diuels  
 in the Gospel, you see, are charged to speake no more  
 of the name of Iesus, because it was not the wil of God.  
 So *Peter* and *John* answered boldly to the *Jewes*, *Whe-* Acts 4.19.  
*ther it be right in the sight of God to obey you rather then*  
*God, iudge you.* So the three children commanded to  
 fall downe before *Nabushadnezers* golden Image, an-  
 swered likewise: *Be it knowne to thee, O King! that wee*  
*will not serue thy gods, nor worship the golden image which*  
*thou hast set up.* So that I say, whatsoeuer the will of  
 man commands, we must alwayes looke to the will of  
 God, and hold our selues vnto it, as the onely rule of all  
 our actions and courses: Thus when we pray, *Thy will*  
*be done,* it is in opposition to these three wils.

- 1 *The false and wicked will of the Diuell.*
- 2 *The corrupt and crooked will of the Flesh.*
- 3 *The peruerse and abusing will of the World.*

So a true Christian in all estates ought to pray, *Lord*  
*grant that I may not guide my selfe by these wils, but that*  
*I may be alwayes ready to be directed by thy will:* And so  
 I haue done with the first point, *Thy will be done.*

The



2

Thing, what  
will of God  
must be done.

*Deut. 12. vlt.*  
*Psal. 119. 105.*

Marriners.

Pole-starre.

*Iohn 5. 39.*

*Iosh. 1. 8.*

Statute booke.

The second thing to be obserued in this Petition, is, *What will of God must be done?* Not the secret will, but the reuealed will of God in his Word; for herein the Diuell vseth great art and cunning, contrary to Gods will, to buzze in mens heads, many intricate and secret things, vnder the colour of art and deepe necessary knowledge, leauing the principall matters and maine points. But we must know, that it is the reuealed will of God, not his secret will must be the rule of our liues. As God speakes to Moses, *Deut. 12. vlt.* *You shall doe onely that I command you.* And *Psal. 119. 105.* *It is said by the Prophet, Thy Word is a lanthorne to my feet, and a light to my pathes.* Thus whatsoeuer the secret will of GOD bee; let vs alwayes hold to that will of GOD reuealed in his Word: doing as Marriners when they are at Sea, who when they haue no direction to sayle by, cast vp their eyes to heauen, and are altogether directed by the Pole-starre: So must wee doe in all our actions, thinke of no other guide or direction, but the bright starre of the holy Word of God, which will safely conduct vs to the heavenly City. Wherefore, because this will and Word of God, must still be looked vpon as our Compasse, let vs labour to know it, and be acquainted with it, that we may be fitted to be aduised by it. To this purpose Christ saith, *Iohn 5. 39.* *Search the Scriptures for they are they which testifie of me:* Vnto which Saint Paul addeth, *That they are able to make vs wise vnto saluation:* and *Iosh. 1. 8.* he saith, *Let not this booke of the Law depart out of thy mouth, but meditate therein day and night, &c.* Most men, you see, will haue a booke of Statutes in their houses, and if they be to do any great matter, they will doe nothing before they looke on their booke; euen so, because the Bible is the Booke of Gods Statutes, the best men should get this booke into their houses and read it themselves, or get others to reade for them, that thereby they may first know

know the will of God, and then practise to performe it. Whereby you see what a great fault it is amongst vs, that such a Christian duty is so much neglected. Therefore let vs labour to correct this corruption in our selues, and so pray that we may doe the will of God: first, labouring to know it, and afterwards putting it in practise. Now, as depending vpon this,

*There are foure speciall wills which God requires  
in his Word.*

*It is the will of God that wee should bee penitent for our  
sinnes: to which end God speaks by the Prophet Eze-  
kiel, As I liue, saith the Lord God, I desire not the death* *Ezek. 33. 11.*  
*of a sinner, but that the wicked turne from his way and line,  
&c. So 2 Pet. 3. 9. It is said, God is patient towards vs,* *2 Pet. 3. 9.*  
*and would haue no man to perish, but that all men should  
come vnto repentance: so you see it is the will of God  
that we should repent vs of our sinnes, that howsoeuer  
we cannot doe our duty, line as we should, yet alwayes  
to grieue at our hearts, be wounded in our soules, that  
we haue offended God, and cannot doe as we ought.  
They say that wounds which bleed, will the sooner* *Bleeding  
wounds.*  
*heale, but when a man hath a grievous wound, and  
does not bleed, there does vsually great danger follow.  
So it is in a wounded conscience which bleeds: when  
we are sorrowfull, lamenting, weeping, mourning, and  
meditating of our sinnes, then comfort followes, but  
when no remorse or repentance followes for sinnes  
which offend God, this is very dangerous.*

*Secondly, It is the will of God that we beleene in Christ:* *2*  
*As 1 Iohn 5. 23. This is the Commandement, that wee be- 1 Iohn 5. 23.*  
*leene in the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ. For though  
we be sinners, and infinitely guilty in our selues, yet it  
is the will of God, that we should lay hold vpon the  
promises of Grace, and imbrace life and,* *saluation*  
*Ec offered*

Shipwracke.

offered vnto vs in the person of his deare Sonne. Men in a shipwracke, be glad to lay hold on any thing that may bring them to the shoare; so must wee doe in the dangerous shipwracke of our soules, cast both our armes about Iesus Christ crucified, and killed, that he may bring vs safely to our heavenly Countrey.

3

Thirdly, *It is the will of God that we should liue a sanctified, and a heauenly life, here in this world.* As *1 Thes. 4.3.* *This is the will of God, euen our sanctification:* for because hee is willing to come amongst vs, and remaine with vs, he would haue vs forsake our sinnes, and keepe both body and soule, as a pure Temple for his holy Spirit to dwell in; for if *Balthazar* was so severely punished for abusing the vessels of the Temple, dedicate vnto GOD: what shall wee bee, if wee defile and contaminate the Temple of the Holy Ghost.

4

Fourthly, *It is the will of God that we beare patiently and quietly, all the crosses and troubles that God sends vs:* as *Peter* sayes, *It is better (if the will of God be so) that ye suffer for wel-doing, then for euill-doing.* And because this is also a part of the will of God, compose your selues quietly and meekely to vndergoe the troubles and crosses that God sends.

*Luke 22.42.*

Thus Christ prayes, *Luke 22.42.* *Let this Cup passe from me, neuerthelesse, not my will but thy will be done.* So saith *Dauid*, in that great crosse of his chasing from the Crowne: *Behold, here am I, let him doe vnto me what seemeth good in his eyes.* So when we pray (*Thy will be done*) the speciall care is to consider of these foure things: which if wee pray for, let vs labour by all meanes to performe the same; for what a strange thing is this for a man to come before GOD in prayer, to lift vp his hands and eyes vnto heauen, intreating that Gods will may be done, and yet haue no care to doe it,



it, being vnwilling to repent of sinnes, and to lay hold on the promises of Christ? to which purpose it was a waighty speech of a learned man: *Wee may as well spit upon CHRIST, buffet Him, beate Him with roddes, bow before Him, with cursed mocking, say, Hayle King of the Iewes, &c. as kneele in His Church, in our Pew, and say (Thy will bee done) and yet neuer haue any care to doe it; but grieue God with our sinnes adde wickednesse to wickednesse, day by day, neuer thinking of reconciling our selues, and examining our hearts and consciences, to reformation and newnesse of life.*

The third generall part of this Petition, is; *In what manner wee must doe the will of God?* You see wee pray that we may doe it in Earth, as they doe it in Heauen, that is as the Angels and blessed Spirits doe it which are in the presence of GOD, and the reason of this is, because (as we haue heard before in all duties) the manner of a thing (in regard of gratefull acceptation) is as much as the thing it selfe. 3  
General thing  
in the Petition.

As if one build a man a house, yet if he doe not build it to the minde of the owner, if it bee too high or too low, too wide, flat, or such like, he thinkes all his charges lost. House.

So if one plough a field, what is all his labour and paines, if it be not to the will of his Master? So in holy duties, how soeuer we doe the will of God, yet if wee doe it not in such and such manner as God prescribeth, he will not accept it. Yea, Schoolemen say, that the ground of this is, because *The manner of the thing is as well commanded as the thing it selfe.* So *Jeremy*, Cursed be he who doth the worke of the Lord negligently. Though it be the worke of God, yet cursed is hee, yea, (so much the more) if hee doe it negligently, not in such sort as he should. Field Plough;  
od.  
Modus rei cadit  
sub precepto.

It is said of *Noah* to his praise, that hee not onely did all things, but also in the very same sort and manner

Heb. 8.5.

as the Lord had commanded. *Moses* was commanded to doe all things according to the patterne shewed him in the Mount, this is that we pray for in the last clause of this Petition.

In which two things are especially to be considered.

- 1 *Why the Lord fetcheth vs a Patterne from Heauen, and not rather from good men in this world?*
- 2 *How, and in what manner the Angels doe the Will of God?*

Concerning the first, There are fowre speciall Reasons of it, why the Lord fetches vs a Patterne from heauen, rather then from Earth.

1

First, *Because a rare example doth most moue vs.* Few examples in this world be rare, and those few that be, are so darkned and clouded with contrary examples, that they hardly moue vs. To this effect *David* saith, *The Lord looked from Heauen, and saw, that none did good, nor not one.* So *Isa.* 64. 6, 7. the Prophet brings in the people confessing, *Wee haue all been as an vncleane thing, and our Righteousnesse is as filthy cloutes, &c.* And hee concludes, *for there is none that stirreth vp himselfe to call vpon thee.* Yea, also of this *Saint Paul* complaines, *affirmatiuely, Philip.* 2.2. *For all seeke their owne, and not that which is Iesus Christs:* So because there is such a rarity of good examples in this world, therefore our Sauiour Christ sends vs as farre as Heauen, to take our example from thence: as Marriners on the Sea, who are alwayes guided by the Starres, because they want in the Sea firme markes to direct them home to their owne Countrey. So must we doe, because we want firme and sure examples in this world, to raise vp our thoughts by into heauen, and mount vs beyond the clouds: we must take our patterne from those blessed Spirits and powers that continually doe serue in the presence of God.

*Psal.* 14. 12.  
*Ma.* 64. 6, 7.

*Philip.* 2. 2.

*Marriners.*

The

*Thy will be done in earth as it is in heauen.*

67

The second is, because those few examples that are in the world, be not pure and perfect, but haue their defects. Saint Paul (as I haue said) likeneth the examples of holy men, to the cloud that led the people out of Egypt, which had two parts, one bright, another darke, somewhat to be followed, somewhat to be declined. Now because the corruption of our nature is such, that wee are more prone to imitate euill then good, to follow David in his sinnes, rather then in his teares, to follow Peter in deniall of Christ, rather then in his repentance, therefore to helpe this, our Sauour Christ direct vs to the example of holy Angels which be pure and perfect.

Thirdly, Because these earthly examples be but of men terrestriall, like vnto our selues. But Angels be the most noble spirits of God, the glory and beauty of all creatures: so that the direction is forcible; If Angels eleuated and lifted vp to such a high degree, be alwayes ready and willing to doe the will of God, then much more we that be men much meaner and lower then they be. Saint Paul tels vs, that God when he bringeth his first begotten Sonne into the world, he saith, *Let all the Angels of God worship him*: why giues hee such a charge vnto Angels? was there any doubt, but that the Angels were ready to stoupe and doe seruice to the Sonne of God? The answer must be, that it was especially, to raise vp men to doe the like: that if the most noble spirits of God, fall and sinke downe at the feet of Christ, then much more, we that be but dust and ashes, wormes-meat, and wretched men, must be still ready to fall before him, and to doe him seruice. Thus our blessed Sauour in this place, shewes how prompt and ready the holy Angels bee to doe the will of God, and therefore doth the more incite and stirre vs vp to bee like them.

Fourthly, That we may make our conuersation heauenly,

Ee 3

while

4



while we be vpon earth; That though our bodies bee here vpon ground, yet that we might conuerse aboue the Starres, amongst Angels and Archangels, and all the blessed spirits continually attending to doe Gods will. According as Saint Paul speakes, *Phil. 3. 20.* But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also we looke for a Saviour, euen the Lord Iesus Christ, &c. And of men thus eleuated, he sayes, *Ephes. 2. 19.* Now therefore we are no more strangers and forraigners, but Citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God. Thus, as I say, though we liue vpon earth, yet in affection, we must labour to be ioyned to this heauenly troope of Cælestiall and blessed spirits, which attend to doe the will of God.

*Phil. 3. 20.**Ephes. 2. 19.*

How the Angels doe Gods will.

The next thing to be considered, is; *How the Angels doe the will of God?* and in what manner: for seeing Christ hath set them for our example, it is good for vs to know what altitude and height wee must aspire to, and ayre at, though we be not able to reach it. Now there be many wayes for our imitation, wherein Angels performe the will of God.

11

First, *They doe the will of God in purity of affection;* not for any by-reasons or respects, but in sincere obedience onely, because it is the will of God; as it is said by the Prophet David, *Psal. 103. 20.* *Yee Angels that excell in strength, that doe his commandements in obeying the voyce of his word &c.* So must we performe the will of God in purity of affection, because it is the will of God; onely desiring to please him in doing thereof. Thus Saint Pauls exhortation is, *Ephes. 6. 6.* *That we doe the will of God from the heart.* And *Psal. 119. 56.* saith the Prophet, *This I had because I kept thy Precepts.* So our care must be to doe that which he commands in soundnesse of heart, without any worldly respects. Many times, indeed, men doe the will of God, but it is not out of any purity of affection to Gods will, but because it is

*Psal. 103. 20.**Psal. 119. 56.*

*Thy will be done in earth as it is in heauen.*

69

for their owne profit, and brings t hem worldly ease, false comfort or some other respects, as *Pharaoh*, who would let the people goe, not in any obedience vnto God, or because God had commanded it, but in hope of his owne ease. The like of *Abner*, *2 Sam. 3.* Who thought to establish the Kingdome to *David*, not in obedience to God, but to maintaine his owne greatnesse and power, and out of priuate reuenge vpon others. *2 Sam. 3.*

Secondly, *Angels doe the will of God with readinesse*, neuer disputing or reasoning vpon the matter, but as soone as they vnderstand it to be the pleasure of God and his will, by and by, they are ready to performe it. So *Ezek. 9. 7.* As soone as the Angels had their charge, *Ezek. 9. 7.* by and by they went forth to performe it. And *Daniel Dan. 8. 16.* 8. 16. No sooner did the voyce command *Gabriel* to make the man vnderstand the vision, but he came and stood neere vnto him. So must we doe, neuer to dispute or debate the matter, pretending excuses, but as soone as we know his will, by and by addresse our selues to performe it. So did *Peter*, *Luke 5. 5.* When hee was commanded to let downe his net, and you know the successe, they were scarce able to pull in the net, for the multitude of fishes. So the Gouvernours seruants, *Iohn Iohn 2. 7.* 2. 7. When Christ bid them fill the pots with water, (which he turned into wine) neuer reasoned nor disputed vpon it, but did as they were commanded. So *Psal. 18. 44.* It is foretold of that change to be wrought by Christ: *As soone as they heare of me, they shall obey mee.* *Psal. 18. 44.* Thus must we adresse our selues to doe the will of God, with all readinesse in euery thing. But if wee examine our selues, we shall finde such a strange backwardnesse and reluctance in our hearts; how vnwilling bee wee to come to this duty, what adoe hath the Lord with vs, as is wonderfull, ere we can be brought to learne this lesson: how oft doe we flye off, and yeeld to sense and reason? Well, we must learne to see, dislike and pray

Ee 4

against

against this vntowardnesse in our selues and that GOD would giue vs more true iudgement and vnderstanding, with cheerefull wilningnesse to doe what he commands vs.

3

Thirdly, *Angels doe the will of God with delight*; that is, take singular delight and comfort in doing of it, so must we endeavour to doe it with delight and ioy; like as *Christ* speakes of Himselfe, *John 4. 34. My meat is to doe the will of him that sent mee, and finish his worke.* And it must not be grieuous in *Abrahams* fight for the Childe and the Bond-woman to be turned out of dores. So we must not thinke it enough to do good duties, but also looke that wee haue speciall delight in doing of them; as *Dauid* professes, *Psal. 119. 16. I will delight my selfe in thy statutes, &c.* And *Psal. 4. 7. Thou hast put gladnesse in my heart, more then in the time when their corne and their wine increased.* But now this is our sinne, that though in many things wee are content to obey God and to doe his will, yet we doe it with so little delight or spirituall ioy, with such irkesomnesse, tediousnesse, and vnwillingnesse, that wee endanger all the grace of our well-doing. In this case it fares with vs, as it did with *Ezekiel*, who saith of himselfe: that he went in the birternesse and heate of his spirit. So, though we are contented to goe, that is, to doe as God wils, yet it is with that repining and backwardnesse, that it looseth the benefit of the action.

*John 4. 34.**Gen. 22. 12.**Psal. 119. 16.**Psal. 4. 7.**Ezek. 3. 14.*

4

Againe, *The Angels with earnestnesse and intentiuenesse doe the wil of God*; they doe not freeze in their businesse; but bend all their strength about it. So *Dan. 9. 21.* sayes, *The Angel came swiftly flying vnto me*; so must we doe the will of God, not coldly and idly, but with all our intention and power; yea, this should also moue vs, in that this is the commandement of the Lord. *Thou shalt loue the Lord, with all thy heart, with all thy*  
*soule,*

*Dan. 9. 21.**Deut. 6.*



soule, and with all thy might. Thus much also *David* confesses, *Psal. 119.4* *Thou hast commanded vs to keepe thy precepts diligently.* Many indeed doe the will of *God* in shew, but coldly, loosely, lasily, with dead affections, there is no life in their obedience, nor spirit in their prayers, how then can they thinke that *God* will accept of them. He that strikes vpon a little Violl, and would know whether it bee sound or not, hearkens to the sound, for if it giue but a dull sound, if the ringing bee not shrill, he knowes that there is some cracke or flaw in it: So it is with vs in our obedience, when we giue but a dead sound, be not shrill, full of spirit and life; and when good duties come but slacke and coldly from vs, certainly wee haue some dangerous cracke and flaw within vs, against which wee must pray and seeke for reformation.

Fiftly, *They doe the will of God with constancy and continuance;* not at one time, and neglect it at another, but they are alwayes ready and seruiceable. So must wee be ready to doe at all times, and in all places. As *David* prayes, *Psal. 119.33* *Teach me, O Lord, the way of thy statutes, and I shall keepe it vnto the end.* So *Psal. 44.18.* the Church professes, *Our heart is not turne backe, neither haue our steppes declined from thy way.* And *Luke 1.75.* It is said we should *serue him all the dayes of our life, in holinesse and righteousness.* Indeed, for a fit or a spirt we can be content to doe so, heare the word, and frame our selues to some good courses, but to walke on in a constant course, and doe the will of *God*, as well at one time as another, this is hard: for commonly men doe by their Religion, as great men doe by their Retainers on Feast dayes, they come vp, and are all put in filkes and veluets, commanded to attend: but as soone as the time is past, they are sent to the Countrey againe, to flouen it as they did before. Euen so doe we in our courses of Religion, when a great day comes, a Communion

munion day, or such like; then we get on all our deuotion, wee are ready to doe some seruice vnto *GO D*, we seeme to trimme vp our affections, and to attend with the best as liue the life of the righteous; but as soone as that time is ouer, by and by we be gone: Lord who heares of vs, till there be the like occasion: This is one of our corruptions that we must pray against.

Sixtly, *Angels doe the will of God wholly*: in integrity, not in one part and neglect an other: but doe as it is said of the man who had the Inkehorne, *Ezek. 9. 11.* *Lord I haue done as thou hast commanded me.* So must we not make a conscience of some things, and leaue the rest vndone, but doe all so farre as frailty will permit, *For all his wayes were before mee,* (saith holy *Dauid*) and in another place. *Then shall I not be ashamed, when I haue a regard vnto all thy Commandements.*

*Psal. 18. 23.*

*Psal. 119. 6.*

Here wee are to take notice of the common course of the world, for there is no body so vilde and wicked, but is content to doe some part of the will of God. But when it comes to any strait or narrow search, to let all goe, and submit our will to Gods will in all things; Here is that hard tryall which makes vs flye off. *Pharaoh* could be contented to doe one part of the will of God, to let the people goe: but to keepe backe the women and children: at last he would let all the people goe, but not the Cattell: therefore *Moses* tels him, wee will not leaue so much as a hooft behind. The Lord will haue all or nothing; so let vs say in our strivings against sinne, not a house must be left behind, not a sinne, not a corruption, but all must be hated, forsaken, left off, in Gods seruice, and for Gods sake.

*Obiect.*

Here some may obiekt, How can we come to bee so strict, as to doe all?

*Ans.*

I answer, we must endouour and striue though wee cannot

cannot come to perfection of obedience; yet such a resolution must be set vp to doe all, being humbled and sorry that we can doe no better.

Againe, we may, and must doe this, to abstaine from grosse sinnes which duls the conscience, and deadens it in time: and then for the other frailties accompanying our life; Wee shall finde God a mercifull Father (vpon our confession) pardoning and passing by all our infirmities: when wee indenuour truely to doe his will; as here we pray: *Thy will be done on*

*earth even as it is in Heaven.*

( \* . \* )

---

4 P E

---

---

---



Handwritten text, mostly illegible due to fading and bleed-through. The text appears to be a list or a series of entries, possibly related to a historical record or a collection of items. The handwriting is cursive and somewhat difficult to decipher.



Handwritten text, possibly a signature or a date, located below the first horizontal line.

Four horizontal lines, likely for additional handwritten entries or a signature.



## 4. PETITION.

*Giue vs this day our daily  
Bread.*



Herein before I come to the Petition, I must first speake somewhat of the order. Hauing in the three former Petitions, prayed for the glory of God, we are here taught to pray for our owne good, that God would giue vs all things needfull for this life: by which order of the Petitions, our Sauour Christ would teach vs two things.

1. *To Order,*

2. *To moderate our care in the things of this life.*

For the first, touching the ordering of our care, for things of this life. Religion doth not exclude all care To order our care. for our selues, but onely to bring it in due order, that we may goe the right way to speed. First, caring for those things which belong vnto the Lord, then afterwards prouiding for such as belong vnto our selues. We may seeke our daily Bread, but we must seeke it in due order, wee may not seeke it before Gods glory, Gods Kingdome Gods will, but first the one, and then the other. Questionlesse, the thinking of our daily Bread, is not vnlawfull, yea, euery thing belonging to this temporary life,

Math. 6. 33.

Luke 10. 42.

Abrahams Ser-  
uant,

life, may be lookt after: but first Gods glory must weigh downe all, as Christs Counsell is; *Math. 6. 33. First, seeke the Kingdome of God and his righteousness, and all other things shall be administred unto you.* So Christ saith to *Martha, Luke 10. 42. One thing is needfull, God must haue the first place.* We reade that *Abrahams* seruant, when there was meat set before him, would not eat till he had done his Masters businesse, which hee came for: and when he had once dispatched that, then the Text saith, *He did eat and drinke.* So must wee doe in the businesse wee come for, concerning the glory of God, *the Kingdome of God, &c.* When wee haue done that, we may rest with the better conscience, and looke vnto our selues for our daily Bread, and ordinary comforts of this life.

But the world are quite contrary, they beginne with the care of themselues, their owne delights, ease, and pleasures: and then if any ouerplus remaine, or haue any spare time, they can be content to looke out a little for the glory of God. But you see our Sauour Christ would heere rectifie our thoughts, and order our care in these things.

2  
To moderate  
our care.

Water to a  
Mill.

Secondly, *To moderate our care*; that we doe not desire our daily Bread in any sort rashly, but onely with subordination to the best things, so farre forth as may stand with the glory of God, the Kingdome of Christ, and the doing of his will: and so farre forth as these temporary things may be a furtherance and a helpe vnto those better things. As a man wanting water to driue a Mill, must not too greedily open too many Springs and Sluces, for feare of glutting and damming it vp: So must it be with our wants in this world; for an ouer-hasty desire and indeuour to satisfie them may quickly drowne vp our care for spirituall graces, not caring what becomes of the glory of God, so wee may inioy our base contentments. Wherefore our Sauour shewes



shewes that the care of these earthly things, must be with subordination to Gods glory.

Why we pray  
for daily bread  
before remission  
of sinnes.

Another point to be considered, is, why we first pray for our daily Bread, and afterwards for the pardon of our sinnes? for in all reason, one should thinke that the pardoning of sinnes, being most necessary should be first, and then the other? I answer, there are two Reasons of it,

First, *Christ condescended herein to our weakenesse, and would graciously, first dispatch vs of our worldly care, and feare of wants, that hauing earthly things supplied, wee might haue the more leisure to attend and be better prepared for the heauenly.* Because many times we are so disturbed and incombred about earthly things, that wee haue little care for heauenly thoughts, which in that estate be vnwelcome vnto vs, hauing but bad entertainment.

As the Woman of *Samaria* was so troubled about the Fountaine water, *Iohn 4. 10.* as she could hardly hearken to conceiue of the water of life which Christ spake of. And as the children of *Israel* hearkened not vnto *Moses*, by reason of the anguish of their spirits, so it is with vs in our troubled thoughts, for the things of this life. Wherefore our Lord hauing a regard to this our weakenesse, would first ridde vs of the care of these earthly things, that we might with the more care and attention, apply our selues to heauenly.

A second Reason is, *That by experience of the smaller things, we might climbe up to the hope of greater.* For at first, men be not easily perswaded of the Remission of sinnes, and high Mysteries of eternall happinesse, but must be brought to it by steppes and degrees. Therefore our Saviour worketh vpon vs in this place with a secret wisdom, that by finding God to be good vnto vs,

Vessell tryed.

vs, in food and rayment, the things of this life, we might learne to rest and relie vpon him for a better life to come, for it is a sure thing, that he who will not trust vnto God for meat and drinke, and such like, will not trust him for the saluation of his soule, and hee that thinkes that G O D will stand with him for a piece of Bread, will neuer belecue that God will giue him pardon of his sinnes, and heauenly glory; Christ therefore would haue vs begin at the smaller, that finding the Lord fauourable and friendly in these lesser things, wee may be drawen to conceiue, that he will be as graciously inclined in greater matters. As a man that would try a vessell; first, he puts water into it, and such meane liquor; And then if it hold water well, he is the more bold to trust it with Wine, or *Rosafolis*, and the like. So when we finde God to be good vnto vs, in the meaner things of this life, this makes vs the more bold to relye and rest vpon him for greater things belonging to eternall saluation.

Now to come to the Petition it selfe, therein are diuers particulars to be considered.

- 1 *What it is that we pray for? (Bread.)*
- 2 *Of whom we aske it? (Of God.)* Lord doe thou giue it, meaning, if God doe not giue it, we shall neuer haue it.
- 3 *By what right? (Of Free-gift)* we doe not deserue it, but pray, doe thou giue it vs good Lord.
- 4 *What quantity of Bread wee pray for? (Daily Bread)* onely so much as is sufficient to sustain vs for a day.
- 5 *Whose Bread we pray for? (Our owne)* not bread of others.

6 For whom we aske? ( For our selves and others.)

7 For how long time? ( Onely for a day.)

( Give us this day our daily Bread. ) Concerning the first thing we aske, *Bread*: herein we are to consider.

1 The Extent of the Tearme,

2 The Limitation of it.

First, for the *Extension* of the Tearme, by Bread our Sauour Christ doth not meane, that God should giue vs bare bread and nothing else. But by *Bread*, he meanes all things else, as needfull to mans life, as Bread is, so that whatsoeuer is comfortable and helpefull to the life of man is here couered vnder the name of Bread, as wee see, *2 Sam. 9. 7.* *David said to Mephibosheth, and thou shalt eate bread continually at my Table;* Thereby meaning all things concurring to the comforts of this life. So *Isa. 4. 1.* *We will eat our owne bread, and weare our owne garments, &c.* That is, liue of our owne prouision, get all things needfull for this life. So that by Bread heere (as in many places of Scripture) our Sauour Christ meanes all manner of comforts of this life. For wee know that many haue bread, yet if they haue not other good blessings of God, houses and harbour, fire and water, sleepe, health, and rest, they may for all that perish: therefore when we pray for bread, we pray that the Lord will giue vs whatsoeuer is needfull to sustaine our weake and fraile life in this world.

And for the *Limitation*, we know that bread is a necessary and a needfull thing. It is not a friuolous thing of superfluity, that we may well want, but a most necessary thing: wherein our Sauour Christ hath heere so bounded our desires to guide them to needfull things onely, Bread, or that which is as needfull as Bread: so that if we once goe beyond the compasse and reach of bread, if wee desire a thing that is not needfull, a super-



Psal. 78. 18.

Iam. 4. 3.

fluious thing to nourish vanity and pride: then we may not expect that the Lord will giue vs that thing which we pray for, because, being not Bread, it is out of the compasse of the Lords grant: of which the Lord complaines, *Psal. 78. 18.* of his people. And they tempted God in their heart, by requiring meat for their lustes. So *Iam. 4. 3.* He tells vs why Christians aske and haue not: *Ye aske and haue not, because ye aske amisse, to spend upon your lusts, &c.* so that our Sauour Christ by limiting vs to Bread alone, teacheth vs to aske only things needfull at the hand of God.

Object.

But why doth the Lord heere mention Bread onely, and nothing but Bread?

Ans.

Gen. 28. 20.

1 Tim. 6. 8.

I answer, this is to teach vs, that if God giue vs nothing but Bread onely, yet wee must be contented; If God giue more, we must be more thankfull, but if the Lord abridge our dyet, and bring it to bread onely, that is, to so much as will maintaine life and soule together, (as we say) yet we must be contented, because wee haue as much as we pray for. So *Iakobs* practise and prayer was, *Gen. 28. 20.* And will giue mee bread to eate, and cloathes to put on; as the Apostle wils vs, *1 Tim. 6. 8.* When we haue food and raiment, let vs therewith be contented, all ioyning here with Christs precept for our direction.

2

Secondly, *We aske it of God, Lord doe thou giue vs our Bread,* wherein we are to take notice of two things.

- 1 Of our dutie, that we seeke for Bread nowhere, but at the hands of God.
- 2 Of our weakenesse and frailty, that haue nothing of our selues, but what God giues vs.

1

Concerning the first, wee haue many examples in Scripture, to teach vs to lift vp our eyes and hearts to hea-

heauen in prayer, looking for nothing else-where: that belongs to the comforts of this life. For saith *David*, *Psal. 136. 25. It is he which giueth food to all flesh.* So *Psal. 136. 25. Psal. 145. 15. The eyes of all waite vpon thee, and thou giueth them meat in due season:* Thus all good things are to be sought for from God. What a wretchednesse is then amongst men of this world, and grieuous sinne, when they haue any sicknesse, lamenesse, strange diseases, or vnlookt for accidents, they doe not seeke God for their daily Bread, or mitigation of those things by prayer, or humbling themselues before God: but runne to Sorcerers, and Witches, and vnlawfull meanes, as though the Diuell were more mercifull then God, or Hell more ready to afford them comfort then Heauen: O the end of such is fearefull, as that of *Saul*, whom the Lord is said to haue killed, because he asked counsell at a familiar spirit. Some other examples there be to this purpose, but I passe them. But the summe is; as wee must beg all good things from God, so learne we, though the Lord doe not by and by giue vs, yet to tarry his leisure, and not to repine or murmur at any thing. Moreover, we must alwayes acknowledge, that all the bread we haue, ( though our cup doe ouerflow ) comes from God, we haue no bit of bread, nor the least comfort wee haue, but all comes from him vnto vs; as *David* confesses, *Pf. 23. 5. Thou dost prepare a table before me; and againe, He filled the hungry soule with goodnesse.* Thus as all Riuers come from the Sea, and in all Countries discharge themselues into the Sea againe: So all blessings come from God, and must returne to him againe, with thanks and acknowledgment.

Riuers Sea-  
running.

In the next place, wee are to take notice of our owne weakenesse and frailty, that we are not able to supply one bit of bread into our selues, with all our wit, wisdom, skill, and cunning prayers, and labour, vnlesse God doe giue it. The Diuell perswaded our first Parents, by

See for this,  
August. 5. rm. 43  
De plenitudine  
Dei.

disobeying the Lord God, that they should be as gods : but now we may see what goodly gods we are, that we be not able to supply one bit of bread vnto our selues, with all our cunning and skill, vnlesse God giue it, and provide it out of the treasury and rich store. house of his goodnesse and mercy. All I say is, to set out the state and condition of the very best of vs in this world, though we carry our selues neuer so high, yet we are not able to put a bit of bread in our mouthes, vnlesse God giue it, for euery bit we receiue is of God, though we impute it to our owne industry and policy.

*Quest.*

Heere ariseth a question, *Why we doe pray for Bread,* seeing the most of vs haue bread enough already in our store, and houses.

*Ans.*

To which I answer, there are two things to be considered in Bread.

- 1 *The substance or quantity of Bread.*
- 2 *The vertue and power thereof*

*Isa 3. 1.*

Which the Scripture termes the staffe of Bread : as *Isa. 3. 1.* Hee threatens to breake the staffe of bread. Now though wee haue the substance, yet if wee haue not the staffe of bread with the power, we are neuer the better, for without Gods blessing, there will be no more feeding and nourishing in it, then of a very stone, yea, as good take a mouthfull of granel, as a mouthfull of bread without Gods blessing vpon it : otherwise wrath attends it, as *Psal 136. 15.* it is said, so *He gaue them their desire,* but withall *he sent leanness into their soules.* And so, though we haue bread, yet we must pray *G O D* to blesse it vnto vs, or else we shall be neuer the better for it. This is a point which most of the world know not, they thinke that if they haue bread in their houses, and tables, all is safe. they neede not pray to *God* for Bread. But if wee would consider that all these things come to  
nothing,



nothing vnlesse the Lord afford a blessing vnto it, and breathe vpon them with sweetnesse from his mouth, this would make vs doe our duty, and pray heartily vnto God to blisse our bread, and to giue it.

Thirdly, *By what right wee demaund our bread?* wee doe not challenge it of duty, or right, but pray that God would giue it of his free goodnesse and grace: so that herein we professe our owne sinfulnessse and guiltinesse to be such, in regard of sinne, that we be not worthy of one drop of drinke, or bit of bread, nor can by any meanes procure it to our selues. For euery day by our sinnes wee forfeit all we haue to God: dispose of all right and title to that, or the least and meanest blessing of this life; therefore vnlesse God doe giue it, and release vs of the forfait, and admit vs into fauour, we be but intruders vpon his blessings, which teacheth vs two things.

First, that seeing we be worthy of nothing, we therefore acknowledge the Lords goodnesse and mercy in it: that we haue great and many blessing (who yet if wee haue but a bit of bread, inioy more then we deserue, and a great deale more then we can challenge) be not therefore forgetfull of this blessing, but confesse from whence it comes: with good *Iacob*, *Gen. 32.10.* *I am not worthy of the least of all thy mercies.* So *Dauid*, *2 Sam. 7.8.* *Who am I, O Lord God, and what is my house, that thou hast brought me hitherto:* Thus must we doe considering our great vnworthinesse.

If we be not worthy of a piece of bread, then much lesse of the ioyes of Heauen: for if wee cannot deserue our bread at the hands of God, much lesse can we be able to deserue euerlasting life.

The Papists thinke they can deserue with their works, and so make themselues worthy of heauenly

glory, God not giuing it as a gift, but as their iust wages and hire. But our Sauour Christ shewes that God doth giue vs our daily Bread freely; yea, and therefore shewes that God doth much more freely giue vs Heauen: as Rom. 6. 23. *But the gift of God is eternall life through Iesus Christ our Lord.* Away therefore with the Pride of the Papists that dare challenge Heauen as a due.

Rom. 6. 23.

4

Fourthly, *How much Bread we pray for?* (Daily Bread) so much onely as may be sufficient, wee doe not pray for an excessiue quantity of bread, but we pray to the Lord to giue vs so much as is needfull, fit to sustaine our weake and sinfull nature. The children of Israel desired meate for their lust, not their hunger; and when they had it, inioyed it not, but the wrath of God came vpon them, therefore we must take notice of this, and learne to moderate our desires, to desire only so much as is sufficient for vse, and no more, as Iacob does. Gen. 28. 20. *If thou wilt be with me and keepe me in the way that I goe, and will giue mee bread to eate. and rayment to put on,* So Agur, Pro. 30. 8. *Remoue farre from me vanity and lies, giue me neither pouerty nor riches: Feed me with food conuenient for me.* Thus there must be a holy moderation of these things. Chrysostome saith well, *Shippes that be lightly burdened, easily passe through the Seas, and are many times without dangers, but they that be ouer-laden, are ready to sinke vpon euery storme.* So it is when men moderate themselves in the things of this life, they passe through this life with lesse danger: are the fitter and more contented to go home to their heavenly country. But when they ouerlad the ship of their bodies, taking in more then they can carry: inioy more then they can tell how to dispose of, they are ready to sinke, and to cast away all their precious Merchandize. Therefore let vs pray to God to giue vs sufficient bread and no more.

Gen. 28. 20.

Pro. 30. 8.

Shippes.

O the corruptions of our life, what excessse, is now crept

crept into this world? men are not content with great matters, but must abound euen to exceed others, nay, we neuer cease till wee haue wrested all out of other mens hands, got all the money out of their purses, all the goods in their houses: but take heed of this: low Meddowes or Marshes, when they came to be ouer-  
 flowen, and the water to stand in them, breed nothing but Frogges and Toades, that continually creepe and annoy them. So it is with our hearts, how soeuer otherwise fruitfull and capable of some goodnesse, yet if once they come to be ouerflowen with couetous desires, and grow muddy and myery, as standing pooles, they will breed nothing but frogges and filthy lusts, sinnes that croke and cry to annoy and terrifie vs. Now because by Bread (as you haue heard) we vnderstand all things needfull for the sustentation of this life, we must learne also not onely to refraine our dyet, but to keepe a moderation in all things appertaining to this life, and hold our selues close to good order and temperate sobriety that our desires be not like a sea which hath no bounds nor bottome. *Esa* (though a prophane man) could say, *I haue enough my brother*; but our corruption is otherwise, we cannot be contented with any measure, whatsoever we haue is not sufficient: Nay, though we haue enough, yet still we desire more and more, wee can neuer be filled. The Lord complaines of this, *Isa. 5. 3. Woe* *Isa. 5. 3.*  
*be unto them that ioyned house to house, &c.* And *Habakk. 2. 5.* *Habak. 2. 5.* Hee paints out a proud man that neuer keepeth at home, who enlargeth his desire as Hell, and is as death, and cannot be satisfied, but gathereth vnto himselfe all Nations. So Saint *Bazill* in treating of a couetous man, saith, *That he neuer ceaseth day nor night, nothing satisfieth him, no bounds containes him, but takes hold of all, and turnes all into it selfe, as swift Riuers arising from small beginnings, by little and little, exceedingly increase, till at length, with force and violence they not onely breake ouer their bankes, but beare downe whatsoeuer they meet with:* *Swift Riuers.*



Couetous  
man.

Mice.

So it is with the couetous men, &c. But we must learne to repressse this affliction in our selues, and pray to God for an orderly moderation in all things. One saith well, *That a couetous man is like a Mole, digging and labouring, when all that he hath digged, he gets vpon his shoulders: So whatsoeuer such men haue got, it lies heavy vpon their conscience, puts them in paine: and becomes a heavy load for them to carry vnto the Throne of Iudgement.* And as Mice besmeared with Bird-lime, creepe vp and downe, gathering a great deale of dait and filth, or other fit matter to burne: and so lighting on any fit occasion are vndone by their owne doings, so it is with a number of men in this world, they scratch and scrape, and when all is done, it is but sticke and strawes which they gather, to increase the fire of their owne condemnation euerlastingly.

Indenting.

There is yet one thing more to be considered in this matter, a point worthy the noting. That *whereas we pray for a quantity of Bread, yet we doe not determine how much.* Wee doe not say, Lord giue vs so much and so much bread, to teach vs all to leaue the particulars to the Lord, wee pray to be contented with that which He in his wisdom doth determine. A man may indent with a friend, as the man in the Gospell: *Lend mee five loanes:* but none of vs may indent with God, but referre all to his assignation and appointment. As a man making challenge to a field, yet is contented to referre the matter to friends, and stand to their award: so much the rather, if they be iust and wise, how much more ought we to submit all vnto God.

5

The fift thing is, *Whose bread we pray for?* Our owne bread, not the bread of others, but we pray to God to giue vs our owne bread. Now our owne bread is that we haue faithfully and honestly laboured for in our Calling, well got by lawfull meanes, and no more. This is that which the Lord promiseth as a blessing vnto his people,

people; *Psal.* 128. 2. *That they shall eate the Labour of* *Psal.* 128. 1.  
*their hands,* Thus the Apottle. *2 Thess.* 3. 12. Commands *2 Thess.* 3. 12.  
 euery one to worke with quiernesse, and eate their owne  
 bread; so that there are two kinds of Bread vnlawfull.

1 *The bread of idlenesse.*

2 *Bread of the fatherlesse and wickednesse.*

The first is, when a man hath no Calling, no imploy-  
 ment, no ability to doe businesse, and yet is idle, mispen-  
 ding his time, and is carelesse of himselfe, this man  
 doth not eate his owne bread, because he doth nothing  
 to make it his owne, &c.

Secondly, the Bread of wickednesse and of the Fa-  
 therlesse, when a man doth by oppression, deceit, cose-  
 nage, and such like, eate vp the Bread of others, yea  
 bread of the Fatherlesse, and of the poore, and of the ho-  
 nest; this also is none of his owne bread, and so cannot  
 be eaten with peace of conscience; therefore let vs  
 looke to eate of our owne.

The Diuell came to Christ in his hunger, and would *Matth.* 4.  
 haue had him turne stones into bread, hee could not *Stones.*  
 preuaile with Christ, but he doth with many men. In-  
 deed when men get bread by vnlawfull meanes, by ly-  
 ing, cozening, deceit &c. then they not depending vp-  
 on Gods prouidence in lawfull meanes, do turne stones  
 into bread, and take the Diuels counsell, not being ru-  
 led by God as they should. Wee read *Isa.* 11. 7. In that *Isa.* 11. 7.  
 great change to be wrought vnder the Gospell; It is  
 said (amongst other things) *The Lying shall eate straw*  
*like the Oxe*: Meaning, that then where that change is  
 truely wrought, they shall be so farre from feeding and  
 rauening vpon others (as formerly) that they shall eat  
 straw, be easily pleased: and brought to a better confor-  
 mity, being contented with mean, & their own things.  
 So a man truely conuerted and brought into the King-  
 dome of Christ, will rather eate straw, feed meanely,  
 be

be contented with what God allowes him, then by any vnlawfull meanes come by his food.

*Ulysses.*

Thus you see we pray for our owne Bread, that wee may prouide bread orderly for our selues, and not liue vpon others, or vse vnlawfull meanes. The Poets say, that *Aeolus* gaue *Ulysses* all his windes in a boxe, who when he was asleepe, thought it had beene gold, and so opning the box, let out the winds, w<sup>ch</sup> had like to haue lost all their liues and put them in danger of drowning. So many times it is when men will not bee contented with their owne; by doing wicked practises, and performing vnlawfull actions, they raise vp stormes and tempests against themselues, euen many times to put their liues in danger. Therefore let vs bee contented with our owne things.

6

Sixtly, *For Whom We doe pray?* For others as well as our selues; (*Giue vs our daily Bread,*) which word hath a double relation.

1 *Respectively to that which went before.*

2 *To the rest of the members of Christs body.*

Which is first *vs* that haue hallowed thy Name, *vs* that desired thy Kingdome might come into our hearts; *vs* that had care to doe thy will, *Lord giue vs our daily Bread*: So that this Petition is conditionall, as if hee should say, *Lord if we haue done these things, then giue vs our daily Bread, then feed vs, then Lord giue vs all things needfull for our life.* But if wee haue done nothing for thee, then we dare not claime that thou shouldst doe any thing for vs, for how soeuer thou hast promised to do vs good, yet we must feare thee, and first Honour thy Name. As *Psal. 34. 9.* *Fear the Lord, yet his Saints for nothing wanteth to them that feare him.* So that first wee must obey and please him, ere we may with boldnesse, vse the promises to our comfort: for w<sup>ch</sup> what face can wee stand vp and lay claime to Gods promises, when

*7 sal. 34. 9.*



when we haue not performed the conditions, and are not qualified like those parties and persons the promises were made vnto? as Iehu said to Iehoram, when hee demanded, *Is it peace Iehu; what peace (said hee) so Iehu,* long as the whoredomes of thy mother Iezabell and her witchcrafts are yet in great number? So may I say, so long as men dishonour God, haue no care of his glory, loue of his Kingdome, no desire to doe his will, how doe they looke to haue their daily Bread, their peace, or things needfull for this life.

A second relation is, *To the rest of the members of Christs body;* and so wee are taught to pray, not Lord giue me; but, Lord giue vs our daily Bread: So that a Christian man must not regard himselfe onely, but in a fellow-feeling of other mens miseries, hee must pray for their wants as well as his owne. The couetous man he had rather say, Lord giue mee Bread, then giue vs Bread: but the true Christian, extends his care and loue vnto the whole body of Christ, whereof he himselfe is a member. As *Abraham* sitting in his tent doore, in the coole of the shadow, pittied them which were traueling in the heate, and was ready to refresh them: so it is with euery true Christain, they are tender-hearted and haue a sympathy with others miseries. So we see in Nature, when the Sunne shines vpon these inferiour bodies, if solid bodies when they reflect their beames they cast their light and heat vpon other bodies that are nearest about them: but if they be empty and hollow bodies, such as haue no solidity. they take all into themselves, and reflect not: So it is in this case, they that be sound Christians onely possessed with power of grace, they cannot hold any goodnesse to themselves, but are ready to reflect it, and make others partakers of it: so must our labour and care be: not be hollow and false, but sincere and true affecting the good of others, as of our selues. *Sun. shining.*

The last thing to be obserued in this Petition, is, for how

how long time we pray for bread: *But a day onely,* (*Giue vs this day our daily Bread,* ) of which there be three Reasons.

1

Little birds.

First, *To teach vs to depend vpon God from day to day*; because we vsually rest not in the present blessings of God vpon vs, but are euer casting and contributing for the time to come. Therefore our Sauour Christ setteth this downe to preuent our carking and caring for the things of this life: for if from day to day the Lord giue vs bread, we must be contented, and leaue all the prouision for future times vnto the Lord, who gaue his owne people Bread, but for a day onely, *Exod. 16.* That they might altogether depend vpon Gods goodnesse and heauenly care from day to day. The little birds (as we all know) when they haue dined, know not where to suppe, and when they are fed one day, they know not where to feed the next, and yet God provides for them, and if God remember and fauour them, much more may we rely vpon his care and mercy towards vs: perswading our selues, that he who feeds vs to day, will feed vs to morrow, this weeke, next weeke, this yeere, next yeere, and so for euer as we trust in Him.

2

Secondly, *To teach vs to liue exceeding carefully, as if our last day were come*: for our life is so vncertaine and hangs by such a slender thred, that wee know not how soone it may be broken and gone, and therefore our Sauour Christ would haue vs liue exceeding carefully and watchfully ouer our selues from day to day euen to our last

*Exod 12. 11.*  
Pasleouer  
eating.

The people of *Israel* wee know doe eate the Pasleouer with their loynes girded, as men ready to depart at a short warning. so must we eat our dinners and suppers, as ready to depart and take leaue of this world at all times or whensoever the Lord will haue vs.

3

Thirdly, *That euery day we may come to God in prayer*:

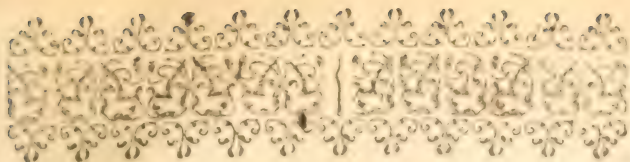
to

to be not a day from him, for if we made our suites before men onely, we would attend their leifures, much more must we wait vpon God: wee may well thinke when the day is past, our pattent is expired, and our grant ended, till we haue renewed it againe, so that euery day (as we haue said) we are taught to come to God in prayer, to renue our Patents and grants of blessings, that God may extend his mercy vnto vs. For it is the corruption of the world, yea, of our course nature, that we would not come vnto God once in a moneth, nay, not in a yeere, if meere necessity do not driue vs. Therefore our Sauioir Christ hath stinted this Petition to a day onely, that euery day we may learne to sue vnto God, to haue communion with him, in begging the things of this life: that so wee might be led the more happily vnto those eternall better things of life euerlasting: and so to be led by the vse of these weake temporary refreshments, to the feeding vpon that bread of life, which the Sonne of man doth giue his Saints and seruants So much shall serue for the fourth  
Petition: come we now to  
the fift.

---







## 5. PETITION.

*And forgive vs our debts, as we al-  
so forgive our debtors.*

**O**Ur Sauioer Christ ( as we haue seene ) in the three first Petitions , teacheth vs to beg those things tending vnto the glory of God, and the meanes conducing vnto the same : and in the three last, to begge for our owne good things, tending both to the comfort of this life, and of that to come : as *the forginewesse of sinnes*, a sanctified and a holy life, assisted by the power of grace.

In the former Petition, we haue heard on what conditions and how we ought to beg for the good things of this life, w<sup>ch</sup> as things necessary, tend especially to the bodily preseruatiō of health and life. Now here in this 5 Petition, we come to the good of eternall life, and this is either the grace of *Iustification* in this Petition, or the grace of *Sanctification* in the next , which yet is no further good , then as we apprehend and bring home the comfort of it. The world in their ignorance doe vsually say, *Who will shew vs any good?* Meaning, a good Lease, Purchase, or bargaine, not knowing any good beyond the good of this life : But there is a further good to be aimed at, for holy *Dauid* proceeds and lookes vp higher, saying *But Lord lift thou vp the light of thy coun-* *Psalm.*  
*seruance*

tenance vpon vs. Lord let mee haue the feeling of thy fauour, and of the forgiveness of my sinnes: and grace to liue well in thy fauour, hating sinne, and I shall ioy in it as my chiefest portion. So I say, after the good of this life, our daily Bread, we are here willed to pray for the good of a better life, pardon of our sinnes, and then grace and strength against them.

But before I come to the Petition, two questions must be answered.

- 1 Why there is but one Petition for earthly things, and two for heavenly, that is: (daily Bread) and in the other. First, Pardon for sinnes: Secondly, For graces against them.
- 2 Why this Petition is linked to the former, by a coniunctiue practise (Give vs this day our daily Bread) And forgive vs our sinnes. Which close coniunction we find not amongst the rest.

For the first I answer, it is for two speciall reasons. First, Because the Lord would not haue vs too carefull for worldly things, but to be holy and heavenly minded, as much as may be; that we might be discreet in our demands, and not dwell too long vpon earthly things. It is the custome of the world, (who vse to pray) not to care how long they continue their sute for daily Bread, being pleased to conclude all vnder that, as *Hos. 7. 14.* The Lord complaines, *They assemble themselves for their Corne and Wine, the things that they onely thinke on and care for, so as they could be contented continually to pray for them.* Wherein our Saniour Christ perceiuing a naturall corruption in vs, would therefore haue vs soone to haue done with this thing, and by and by to adresse our selues to better, to seeke more pertinent matters, pardon of sinne, saluation of soules; strength, and meanes to liue holily, without which, all the rest would turne to nothing, though we had as much as

See



Sea and Land could afford vs: so that as Birds which Birds dipping dippe into the Sea to get their food, soare vp againe and quickly rise, lest they should dull their wings, and wet their feathers that they cannot flye: So in our prayers, we must take heed that we doe not diue too deepe into the world, bringing our afflictions so low, as we cannot mount and raise vp our heavy hearts to the contemplation of those heavenly blessings and graces as the Lord would haue vs.

Numbers of men though they seeme likely in this world, yet are like the Lead and Plummets of a Clocke. Plummets of a Clocke. that continually driue downe-ward, and had need still to be wound vp. So it is with vs in praying for spirituall blessings: we decline and draw downe-wards, so much to the world, as we are heavy and dull in raising vp our selues towards heauen. Let vs then recouer our selues, and raise vp, and winde our hearts vp, and our thoughts as high as heauen, to the loue and meditation of heavenly things.

In a Garden, you see when men haue store of heavy Mould mingled, they mingle it with Chalke and Sand to make it high and lighter: so when our thoughts be heavy, earthly, and lumpish, our Sauour Christ would haue vs lift them vp with the cogitation and thinking of better things. In the Law, things that crept vpon all foure, were forbidden, yet if they had feet to leape vp withall, Creeping things leaping vp. they were iudged to be cleane. Euen so, howsoeuer some thoughts are about the things of this world, our Trades and businesse, yet if we haue legges to leape vp with, that we can raise our hearts to God, and better things; when we come to pray and prostrate our selues before God: it is not to bee condemned, they may passe for cleane well enough.

But if they alwayes creep on the ground, if neuer raised higher then the earth, if no good thoughts of God, if no looking vpward to better things, O then no doubt they were vncleane: not legally vncleane as the beaſts

were, but really vncleane in the sight of God and his holy Angels.

2

Sanctuary  
waight.

Secondly, *To shew vs, that our care must be twice so much for heauenly things as for earthly*: wee must haue twice as much care of our soules, as of our bodies: begging oftner spirituall, then temporall things. In the Law, the waight of the Sanctuary was double, to the common waight, which was to shew that the Lord must alwayes haue double waight in matters that appertaine to the Lord, in the saluation of our soules: in all such things, double waight, double care, double indeuour: but how cleane contrary is it with the world, who lay all the bent of their care vpon earthly things, and their indeuour for transitory things of this life; whereas we are taught by our great Teacher, alway to ouerweigh our earthly cares with more heauenly meditations, that thus hauing quieted our consciences, we may the more safely goe about our worldly affaires.

2

Question answered,

I  
Answer.

Againe, to the second question, I answer, this is annexed to the former Petition to shew vs two things.

First, *That pardon of sinnes is as necessary as our daily Bread*: Therefore with praying for Bread, wee are taught also to pray for pardon for our sinnes and offences. So that it is very necessary to haue these two ioyned together, that whensoever wee pray to GOD to put meat in our mouthes: wee alwayes remember that there is more excellent things to bee lookt after, then this temporary food: the pardon of sinnes, with hope of euerlasting life in Heauen.

This is the reason why our blessed Sauour so closely ioyned these together, that the thought of this temporary Bread might moue vs to desire the Bread of Life, for which cause Christ would haue these two Petitions connected together.

The

The *Jewes* (badly enough in other things) say well in this: A woman taketh two children to Nurse, the one is a very meane one, deformed, crooked, blinde, and not likely to live long; the other as goodly a child as may be, beautifull, well-favoured, and likely, infinitely, to out-live the other. Now the foolish woman, who bestowes all her care, diligence, and attendance vpon the worst childe, and neuer lookes vnto the best, must needs be ignorant and very foolish in so bad a choyce, and so great a neglect.

Childe nurse.

So is it with vs, wee haue taken two children to nurse, our Body, and our Soule, they be the children, and the Soule we know, is infinitely better then the Body, more beautifull, and of longer continuance; and yet like the foolish Nurse, wee bestow all our care, labour, and paines about the worst, wee are all for the body, care little for the soule, which yet must live when the body shall die. But our blessed Sauour would haue both children lookt vnto, the Body respected, the soule remembred, wherefore he strictly connects and ioynes these two Petitions together.

Secondly, this Petition was so connected to the former, to shew: *That though God give vs our daily Bread,* 2  
*yet if we haue not pardon of our sinnes, all the Bread of the world can doe vs no good.* Answer  
 For it is a sweet and most comfortable thing to the conscience, to be perswaded of Gods fauour in the forgiuenesse of sinnes. For if one haue all the variety of good things in this world, though his meat be *Manna* from heauen, Rayment as precious as *Aarons Robes* his life as long as that of *Methusalem*, his strength as *Sampson*, Beauty as *Absalon*: Glory, Wisdom and Riches, like *Salomon*, yet if he haue not this Petition granted him, which *Christ* here speakes of: *The pardon of his sinnes* all is lost, all is nothing worth: yea, in terrour of conscience, all is displeasing and uncomfortable.



Tertul-  
lus quid pro-  
de? Regum ali-  
mentum si ad  
Gehennam pas-  
cat.

Tower con-  
demned men.

Psal. 50.

For saith Christ, *Matth. 16. 26.* What shall it profit a man to winne the whole World, and lose his soule, or What rancome shall a man giue for his soule? This question Ter- tullian demaunds: *What will all thy dainty dishes auaille thee, if they doe but feed thee to the fire of Hell?* Therefore remember to say, *Lord giue me daily Bread, but O! Giue me also pardon of my finnes;* for vniuersally I haue a feeling sense of thy fauour, and hope of heauen, all things else are nothing vnto me. We know that condemned men in the Tower, who haue goodly lodging, lie well, great attendance, yet haue poore, or no comfort in all this; when they daily expect to be brought forth to execution. Euen so it is with all the magnificence and glory of this world, there is no comfort in any part thereof, without the forgiuenesse of our finnes: one must goe to hell. The rich Glutton (we read) when he was in Hell, howsoeuer he possessed all things in this life, and was glorious in estimation and riches, yet afterwards they profited him nothing; nay, they were the greater corra- siue vnto him, as he had formerly ioyed and flowed therein: who found by wofull experience, that one drop of Christs blood, one Dramme of the forgiuenesse of finnes, had done him more good, then all his infinite wealth and store of money. Let vs then all pray with David, *Psal. 50.* Cast me not away from thy presence, and take not thy holy Spirit from me. giue me, with daily Bread, forgiuenesse of finnes, and howsoeuer thou deale with me in the things of this World, yet let me haue the comfort of the saluation of my soule.

Hitherto of the entrance into the Petition, and the questions touching the same; In the Petition it selfe, three things are to be considered.

- 1 *A Confession.*
- 2 *A Request.*
- 3 *A Condition.*

*as we also forgive our debtors.*

In the confession three things are to be observed  
of vs.

- 1 That every sinne is a Debt.
- 2 That we be all fallen into this Debt.
- 3 That we be not able to pay this Debt.

For then we would neuer pray to haue this debt forgiven, if we were able to pay it.

First, concerning the *Confession*, wee acknowledge sin to be a debt, ( for by debts here are meant sinnes ) as The Confession. Luke 11.4.  
Christ in another place teacheth his Disciples, *Luke 11.*

4. *And forgive us our sinnes.* So the debt we speake of, is the debt of sinne : which for two causes is compared to a debt.

First, *Because it ariseth after the manner of a debt*; for as a debt (as we know) ariseth vpon the non-payment of money, and not performance of that which is due: so because we haue not rendred vnto the Lord that which is his due, not payed him that seruice, loue, honour, obedience, &c. that we owe him, being mightily behind with him; Hence it is, that we come to be mightily indebted vnto the Lord, being so farre in arrearages vnto him, and so sinne ariseth in the first place, after the manner of a debt.

Secondly it is compared to a debt, *because it bindes vs to a debt*; for as a debt bindes vs either to payment, or to punishment, to content the party, or to goe to prison, so doe our sinnes binde vs either to content the Lord in his Iustice, or to vndergoe eternal damnation, so that there is but one of two wayes to escape Iudgement, either to content diuine Iustice, or to vndergoe punishment. And yet the debt of sinne is a worse debt then any other, for it is not a money matter to be imprisoned for, but this calls him into Hell, for euer and euer. Indeed

66

deed the Law hath beene stricter, for a man that made not payment of his debt, was to be sold, his wife, his children, and all he had. Amongst the *Partians* the Lawes were more cruell, for if the debt were not payed, euery creditor was to take away so much of his flesh, as the debt came vnto, but these were courses barbarous and cruell. Now by the lawes we see, to be cast in prison is the punishment inflicted for a debt. But for the debt of sinne, we shall not only be cast into prison, which is hel, but there suffer paines and torments, eatelesse and leadlesse.

Another thing is, that sinne is not like a debt we owe in this world, for many a man, though not able to pay his debt, or not able to pay the interest for the time, yet may deuise some meanes to auoyde and shift it off by a trick, pretend danger in the way, or conscience in the businesse, or if all faile he may die, and then no body can compell him to pay the debt, but no man in the world can shift off the debt of sinne.

1

First, because God is able to proue euery debt that we owe him, he hath it in a booke, as *Iob* speaks, Chap. 18. 23. *Miniquitie is sealed vpon us in a bagge,*

2

Secondly, wee cannot sue for such a Protection as the power of Princes giue in this world; there is nothing able to protect vs from the Lord.

3

*Psal. 139. 7.*

There is no flying away; that wil not help vs neither, for we can flye no where from the Lord; though we flie vnto Helle, for saith the Prophet, *Psal. 139. 7. Whither shall I goe from thy spirit, or whither shall I flie from thy presence? if I haue ascended, thou art there; if I descend, thou art there also; if I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the bounden parts of the sea, even there shall thy hand lead me,*

Fourthly,



Fourthly, Death cannot free vs from the debt of sin, for howsoeuer by death wee are out of the Vsurers hand, yet wee cannot escape out of the hands of God. Therefore let vs make this vse of it. *Feare him* (saith our Sauour) *that when he hath killed the body, can cast both soule and body into hell*: so that of all debt, the debt of sinne is the most grievous, wherefore let vs be careful about all things to auoide and get out of this debt.

A man that loues quietnesse and peace, cannot abide to runne in debt, O how careful will he be to shunne it, he will liue hardly and poorely, goe thinne, and liue of his owne; so must we doe, if we loue our owne peace and quiet safety, auoide this grievous debt of sinne by all meanes. Especially, in a take heed we continue not in this wofull debt. But doe as a man doth when hee comes into an Inne, call s for no more then hee meanes to pay, for though hee see a great deale of good cheere before him in the house, yet hee considers what his meanes and ability is, for otherwise, if he neuer thinke of it, but calls, in for all he sees without thought how to discharge it, when the reckning comes, and he not able to pay, it is shame vnto him, besides the danger of imprisonment; so fareth it with vs, it is good to take vp no more then we are able to pay for: but howsoeuer we see a number of goodly things in this world, which may allure vs, and set our desires on fire, causing expence of money let vs take heed of being in debt: especially of this debt of sinne, the worst of all other.

The second thing in this Confession is, *That all men run into this debt of sinne*: yea, and very farre, for which wee pray not forgine vs our debt, but forgine vs our debts, because there are a great number of them: So that here is a plaine confession, that we are all sinners, and grievous sinners, euen the best of vs, for this is not a prayer for some of the worst, but for the holy Apostles, the Disciples of Christ, yea, for the whole Church dis-

*Iam. 3. 2.* perfeld all the world ouer. So saith, *Iam. 3. 2.* *In many things we sinne all :* and *1 Iohn 2. 2.* Christ is said to be the propitiation for our sinnes, and not for ours onely, but for the sinnes of the whole world. And *Iob* confesses, *If he would contend with God, hee could not answer him one of a thousand :* So *Dauid* prayes, *Enter not into iudgement with thy seruant, O Lord, for in thy sight shall none that liueth be iustified.* Yea, and *Salomon* in his prayer, *1 King. 8. 46.* confesses, *That there is no man who sinneth not :* Thus we see that no man liuing is exempted from this debt of sinne.

*Use 1.*

The vse hereof is, to humble vs before God in regard of this debt of sin, to confesse our owne vnworthinesse, and that the Iudgements of God on vs for our sinnes, are iust, to say therefore as the Church doth. *7 will beare the wrath of the Lord, because I haue sinned against him, &c.*

*Use. 2.*

*Pro. 6. 1, 5.*

Secondly, To labour as much as may be to cleare this debt, which cannot be done by our selues, but by Christ Iesus. Therefore let vs doe for our soules, as *Salomons* counsell is for our estates, *If thou be surety for thy neighbour, deliuer thy selfe as a Roe from the Hunter.* So for vs, let vs neuer be quiet, for we shall neuer prosper (if we belong to God) vntill we haue reconciled our selues vnto God by the mediation of Iesus Christ.

Arrearages to  
the King.

If a man runne into arrearages with the King, and euery yeare the Sheriffes and the Bayliffes come and straine vpon the ground, driue away his Cattell, impound them, disturbe his children and seruants, and indanger his person, no man that hath any wit in his head, but will seek to stay the matter, or compound for the debt, that he may liue in peace. Now iust this is our case, we all runne into arrearages vnto the Lord, and that euery month, euery yeare, euery weeke, euery day, by one offence or other. So that in iustice which is cuer ready, he

he may straine and imprison vs: Oh then why doe we not seeke to stay the matter, and to take vp the businesse with the Lord, to compose and settle it by our heavenly high Priest, *Iesus Christ*? and so walke on hereafter in holinesse and newnesse of lfe.

The third part of the Confession, is, *That wee be not able to pay this debt of our selues*: for if wee were able to satisfie it, what needed we to pray to God to forgive it? which prayer, is a plaine confession that we are not able to discharge it: we cannot say with the seruant in the Gospell, *Master, appease thine anger, and I will pay thee* *Matth. 18. 23.* *all*. We be not able to pay halfe, nor whole, nor quarter, nay, not any thing at all towards the satisfaction of diuine iustice: so all our sure is in this Petition, that the Lord would pardon and forgive it, seeing wee are not able to discharge it our selues. The Papists say, though they cannot pay the whole debt of sinne, yet they can pay a good part of it, and being a little helpt by Christ, they may easily discharge the whole, making vp the rest with their owne merits. But if we looke a little into the Point, we may easily see that no man liuing (saue the Lord *Iesus*) is able to pay this debt of sinne: (I proue it thus) *No man can pay God With his owne*: *But all the good that we haue or can doe, is the Lords owne, and none of ours but the Lords*: therefore no man can pay the Lord With it. Argument a-  
gainst the Pa-  
pists.

The Proposition I proue by comparison: Suppose a *Reason 1.*  
Steward owes an hundred pound vnto his Master, and *Steward.*  
hath not a penny of his owne; I demand now, whether the Steward may lawfully pay his owne debts with his Masters money? It is out of question that hee cannot. Now this is our case, all we haue, is but the Lords money, nothing of our owne, as *Dauid* confesses, *1 Chron. 1 Chron. 29. 14.*  
*29. 14.* *All things come of thee, and of thine owne haue we giuen thee.* So the Apostle, *1 Cor. 4. 7.* asks, *What hast* *1 Cor. 4. 7.*  
*ibid*



thou that thou hast not receiued? and if thou hast receiued it, why boastest thou, as though thou hadst not receiued it? Therefore because all wee haue is the Lords, it is euident, that we cannot pay the Lord with it, because no man can pay a man with his owne.

2. Reason.

Secondly, We cannot pay one debt with another, for it is a Rule in Law, that if a man hath two debts due vnto him or if you will, oweth two debts, by paying of one, he shall not cleere the other: now all that wee doe or can doe, is due debt vnto God, as Christ saith, *When wee haue done all we can doe, wee are but vnprofitable seruants.* Now because we owe a double debt; first, the debt of sinne, secondly, the debt of death, it is euident by performing the debt of death, wee cannot discharge the debt of sinne.

3. Reason.

Thirdly, Euery debt must be payed with currant money, as the Scripture saith, *Gen. 23. 16. Abraham payed for his sepulchre, 400 shekels of currant money, amongst Merchants.* such as wans nothing of value nor waight. Now God knowes all our seruice wants waight, when it comes to be waighed, for one cannot pay a debt with light and crackt Angels, or soothered gold. Nor can we satisfie the Lord with our counterfeite workes: for when they shall come into the exact ballance of his iustice they will all like *Balthazar* be found light: wanting of that integrity and worth which God requires: as it is, *Isa. 46. 6. All our righteousness is like filthy cloath,* so that it cannot make any currant payment to Gods Iustice.

*Aquinas 1. 2.  
Quest. on Art.  
4. 7.*

*Tanto grauius  
Peccatum, quan-  
to est Persona  
contra quem  
peccatur.*

Fourthly, The debt of sin is an infinite debt: the School-men prouethis: one sayes well, *So much the greater is the sinne, as is the person against whom it is committed: but the person of God is infinite, so that euery sin committed against God, is infinite, and we are guilty of it.* Now

we

we know; Infinite finnes cannot bee taken away but by an infinite act; because very reason will teach vs, that the plaister must be of the same extension with the soare, &c. So he that is guilty of an infinite fault, must haue an infinite act to remoue it. No finite power can doe this, no summe of money can redeeme it, for then a man might redeeme others as well as himselfe, but as I say, it must be no finite act, and so, no man liuing can pay this debt of sinne. Therefore, because no man liuing can pay it, Hence ariseth our request that we pray to God to forgive it of his free goodnesse and mercy, and so we come to

## *The second generall Head:*

Of this Petition, which is the request: *Forgiue vs our Debts, &c.* Wherein three things are to be considered,

- 1 *The matter of the Request.*
- 2 *The extension of it.*
- 3 *The Time.*

First, for the matter of the Request: It is as we see forgiuenesse of finnes, we pray to God for mercy, nay, we doe more, we do altogether confesse that it is the Lords free goodnesse to releale vs from the curse that we haue deserued: Here see two things;

First, That we haue all need of the forgiuenesse of finnes. We haue not more need of our daily Bread; then wee need the pardon of our offences; wherefore, wee are taught euery day to seeke it here by our Sauour: and the Prophet *Dauid* shewes, the vse of Gods mercy vnto him should effect so much, a seeking and drawing neere vnto God in prayer, vpon a sight of our finnes; Therefore shall euery one that is Godly, make his prayer vnto thee in a time when thou mayest be found, &c. So that  
wee

we haue all great need to pray instantly and often for the forgiveness of our sinnes, for if the Angels cry, *Holy, holy, holy, vnto the Lord, &c.* Much more may sinfull men who haue their consciences loaden with offences: considering Gods infinite Holinesse, and their owne vileneie, cry vnto God, to passe by so much impurity in them, that sinnes being forgiven, they may stand before him on better termes then before. Euery man can easily find that they haue need of daily Bread, but not one of many that they haue need of Gods merciful forgiveness. If there were an Inquisition made into our hearts, who examines so narrowly as he should, for offending so great and good a God? we doe indeed customarily say, *Lord forgive vs our sinnes*, but where is the feeling, the compunction of spirit, the drawing to particulars, the secret examination of our sinnes, the iudging of our selues, and such like? we haue peradventure made some search into our consciences, by reason of our sinnes, yet we are not wise to know our danger, to humble our soules for our transgressions, to make vp the breach betwixt God and our selues to pray heartily for the forgiveness of sinnes, with a feeling conscience and sense of the excellency of the same.

Secondly in that we pray for forgiveness of sinnes, this shewes, that *the forgiveness of sinnes, is a most excellent and speciall mercy that all should seeke for.* Because we bee sinners, we must therefore be earnest and constant suitors to the throne of grace, that our sinnes may be remitted, released and washed away in the blood of *Iesus Christ*. This made the Prophet *Dauid*, cry out againe and againe for mercy. And the Prophet *Hoshea*, in many places, comforteth *Israel* as well as churleth them. And *Moses* also (after *Israel* had sinned) vscth this as an especiall Argument: *Therefore now, if thou pardon these sinnes, thy mercy shall appeare, &c.* But let vs come to example.

*Psal. 51.*



If a man had committed such an offence that he could no otherwise escape death but by the Kings Pardon, he neither could nor would be at rest till by one means or other, he had obtained the same, written and sealed to, which done, he would carry it home, locke it vp safe, and many times looke vpon it with ioy and comfort. This is the case of euery one of vs. by reason of our sins, whereby wee haue committed that Treason against the Lord, thereby deseruing ten thousand deathes. Now then, what must we doe? but sue for a pardon, appeale to the throne of Gods mercy, for the getting and obtaining thereof, be sure that it be sealed and confirmed by the blood of *Iesus Christ*, then laying it vp sure, that we may often looke vpon it to our eternall ioy and comfort.

Now that this is so, appears by two reasons: first, it is excellent, because it is one of the greatest blessings that God giues to any in this life: as *Psal. 32. 1.* Blessed is hee whose wickednesse is forgiven, and whose sin is couered: and *Isa. 33. ult.* amongst other priuiledges, this is reckoned vp as a great one. The people that dwell therein shall haue their iniquity forgiven: speaking of the happinesse of those that shall be ioyned to the true Church. Yea, vnlesse we haue this, there is no Beast, Dogge, Serpent, Toade, or any vile Creature, but is infinitely better then we, for when they die, they goe but to the earth, but we (without forgiveness of sinnes) to hell and endless paines and torments.

Secondly, the greatest danger wee stand in, by the meanes of sinne, shewes the excellency of it, for otherwise, not hauing our sinnes forgiven, the Diuell will deale by vs as *Laban* did by *Jacob*, when he had escaped him. *Laban* did pursue and ouertake him, searched all his Stuffe, when, if he had found any thing of his owne, he would haue seized vpon him, his goods, wiues, and children,

children, bringing all backe againe with him. So it is with vs, without a release and protection from the danger of our sins; the diuell will pursue and seize vpon vs and all we haue, looke into euery corner of our liues, when if he can finde any thing of his owne in vs, any sin vnrepented, then will hee seize vpon vs, and carry vs with him into Hell for euer.

*Quest.*

Well then, seeing the forgiuenesse of finnes is such an excellent and needfull mercy, what is the reason that so few seeke after it?

*Aus.*

*1. Reason.*

One reason is, *The want of due consideration*; because we neuer looke into our hearts liues, and courses, neuer thinke how it stands betwixt God and our soules; for this cause, we thinke neither of our debt, nor how to get out of it. The seruant in the Gospell was found infinitely indebted vnto his Master, but when did it appeare so, as hee was conuincd of it? when the debt booke was searcht into and particulars ript open, then, and neuer till then, was hee found to be so greatly indebted. So it is with vs, we thinke all well enough, till God come to reckon with vs in particular, and set our finnes in order before vs, as he speakes, *Psal 50* and then this monstrous sight driues vs to a due consideration of our wofull and wretched state.

*2. Reason.*

A second reason is, *A blinde and foolish presumptuous perswasion that God will shew vs mercy, though we doe not seeke it, and though we take little or no paines for it.* The greatest part of the world, as you see, liue in their finnes without repentance, neuer come vpon their knees to the throne of grace, to aske pardon for them, what is the Reason? because (as they say) God is mercifull a good man, and they may doe well enough: all is not so strict as these preachers would make vs belene: but the truth is, If God be mercifull, it is to such as seeke it  
and

and repent for their sinnes, as *Lam. 3. 25.* *The Lord is good to them that trust in him, and to the soule that seeketh him.* This if we seeke for, and prize mercy, wee may haue it but if we seeke it not; and find no want of it, nor pray earnestly for it, it is a sure signe we are yet in a miserable naturall estate: that though there be an Ocean of Mercy in the Lord, no one drop shall runne vnto vs; but one day, such shall cry like *Dinah*, for a drop of such water, and shall not haue it; nay, if we be cruell to deny mercy vnto others, when wee haue receiued mercy our selues, we shall be sure to be punished for it also.

The next thing in this Petition is, the *Extension* of it, we pray to God to forgive all our sinnes, not of any speciall troubling, waighly, filthy one, but of a release of all whatsoeuer. 2  
Thing the Extension. A number of the world, according to the false manner of their accounts, are onely troubled for some one sinne, that doth distresse and lie heauily vpon them, hauing no remembrance of those sinnes which neuer shamed them in the face. This was *Judas* case hee was pitioussly perplexed for betraying of *Christ* but neuer thought of his couetousnesse and corrupted heart, the fountaine whence this cursed sinne was hatcht, and had roote. So doe most of vs, stricke perhaps and pray against some one sinne that troubles vs, but we seldome enlarge our hearts to discend down in particulars, that our secret faults, wantonnesse lusts, couetousnesse and the like may be forgiven: as the holy Prophet by his example, teacheth vs; *Who can understand his faults, cleanse Psal. 12. me from my secret sinnes.*

The third thing is, *The time of the Request*: we see it must be our daily suite vnto God, as euery day we pray 3  
The time. for daily Bread, so must we pray to God for the pardon of our sinnes. This is a speciall point, that euery day we make attonement and reconciliation with God for our sinnes,



*Gen. 3. 8.**Uncleane.*

sinnes, because euery day we renew our sins and offend God, therefore we had need euery day to renew our lutes and prayers vnto God. When *Adam* was fallen, the Text saith, *God came to him in the coole of the day*; The Lord would not let him sleepe in his sinnes, but came and awoke him, putting him in remembrance of his sinne. So in the Law; If a man were vncleane, yet when the Euening came, he must wash his cloathes, and so be reconciled accordingly. Euen so, though we be vncleane by reason of our sinnes, yet if we wash our selues by the true teares of Repentance, we shall be reconciled to God, and admitted into the Campe againe. This then may teach vs, that howsoeuer we haue our daily slippes and fals; yet if we doe euery day labour to make our peace with God, for the sinnes of the day, that we doe not let them runne weekly, and monthly, and yearly, we may be sure to find mercy at the hands of God.

Now there be diuers Reasons to moue vs to this duty and make vs renew our prayers daily without omission.

1

*A Steward.*

*Ephes. 4. 26.*  
*Sunne wrath.*

First, *Because we are very prone to forget our sinnes, nothing sooner.* Therefore it is good to remember them, the sooner, the better. A Steward who hath large reckonings, and but a short memory, he must haue the oftner reckonings, yea, euery dayes account cast vp: so because we be forgetfull, and a number of sinnes doe easily slip vs, we must desire euery day to make euen with the Lord. The Apostle counsels vs, *Ephes. 4. 26. Let not the Sunne goe downe vpon your wrath.* If then the Sun must not goe downe vpon our wrath, to admonish vs not to be mercilesse, much more ought we to take heed of that the Lords wrath go not down vpon our sins, for want of our repentance.

2.

Secondly, *Because the fresher sense of sinnes is at the first,* for by referring repentance, it takes away the sense of sinne,

sinne, as the memory thereof. Wounds, <sup>the condition,</sup> bleed Wounds bleed  
 most when they be fresh, then they doe most feelingly ding.  
 affect vs: let one haue a bruise or straine, commonly the  
 greatest sense and paine is at the first: but afterwards Bruise, Straine  
 time will allay and mitigate, and so slacke the sharpnesse  
 of sense, as we shall nothing so much feele the griefe of  
 them. So it is with our sinnes, our greatest and quickest  
 sense of them is at the first; so the sooner we seeke for re-  
 conciliation, the more easie will it be for vs to obtaine  
 mércy, and we will so much the more eagerly desire it.

Thirdly, *Because, if euery day we get our sinnes dischar-*  
*ged, we shall haue the lesse to doe when we come to die.* Ther-  
 fore it is good not to suffer them to run on, but take the  
 in pieces betimes when they are committed, and repent  
 of them. As a man that would carry home a great tree, A Tree.  
 if he diuide it, and breake it in a number of small pieces,  
 he may then with ease at seuerall times carry it away. So  
 if we doe with the great bulke and body of our sins, di-  
 uide them euery day apart, & make our prayers for the  
 daily remission of them, then shall we haue the lesse to  
 doe when we come to die. Wherefore as sins increase, so  
 let vs euery day seeke reconciliation, that we bring  
 no after recknings to God: for enough are those euery  
 day by themselves.

Fourthly, *Because the sooner we repent of them, the soo-*  
*ner we shall be quiet, and haue peace and rest;* for so long as  
 the conscience is awake: and not feared by sinnes vnre-  
 pent of, there will be vexation in the heart, vntill sins  
 be confessed and pardoned; as in *Dauids* case: *He roared,* Psal. 32. 4.  
*and had no rest vntill hee had made his peace with God.*  
 As when an Arme or a Bone is out of ioynt, the sooner Arme, Legget  
 it is set, the more ease one shall haue. So it is with vs,  
 whensoever we haue sinned against God, the soule being  
 out of ioynt, the sooner we shall find ease. Wounds, you Wounds vn-  
 know, that are not by and by dressed, will ranckle and dressed.  
 fester so, as the cure of them will be much more difficult  
 and dangerous.

See, because wounds of our sinnes, if they be long kept from searching, opening and laying them before the Lord. Let vs therefore prevent the mischief which may follow our delayes, making vpon all occasions a continuall and speedy attonement with God.

The third generall part of this Petition, is,

### *The Condition of the same.*

We pray to God to forgive vs, as we forgive others: yet this cannot be a cause of Gods forgiveness, but a condition onely: It can be no cause, for as the Schoolemen say, *Finiti ad infinitum nulla est proportio*: There is no proportion of the Finite, to the Infinite thing. And so no reason, because wee forgive our Brethren some small matter, that GOD should forgive vs the infinite debt we owe. Therefore, no cause, but a condition of it. Very reason will teach vs this, that it is in the power of the giuer to prescribe vpon what condition he giues his gift; as Christ saith to Peter, *John 13.8. Unlesse I wash thee, thou shalt not bee cleane*: As if hee had said, I am content that thou haue part with mee in my kingdome and glory, but yet there is a condition annexed: *Except I wash thee, except thou obey me, submit thy selfe vnto me, thou mayest not haue it*. So God did giue vnto Paul the liues of all that were with him in the ship, yet it was conditionall, *Except these abide in the Ship, ye cannot be safe*. And so must we be contented to rest vpon the meanes which God hath appointed: and be willing to performe such conditions as hee inioynes vnto vs. But the wickednesse of the world, and corruption of men: that willingly will not come to any conditions with GOD, but would haue the blessing without the condition: like the kinsman of Ruth, hee would haue had the land, but when he heard the Condition, that he must haue Ruth to wife, he refused the bargaine. So the Rich man in the Gospel would haue had

3  
Part of the  
Petition.

*John 13.8.*

*Acts 27.24, 31.*

*Ruth.*

Rich man.



had eternall life, but when he heard the condition, that he must leaue all and follow *Christ* in a poore estate, he would not meddle with it, but went away sorrowfull. So it is with the world still, and so it is with most men, they would haue the blessing, they would haue life euermore, forgiveness of sinnes, and the like, but they will none of the condition, to forgive the offences of others. But let vs remember, if we looke to inioy the Lords blessings, we must come to his conditions; wee may not haue them vpon what termes wee will, but be contented to accept of them on what manner the Lord will giue them vs.

Now the Conditions, that the Lord giues vs, are, First; *Easie to be done*: For the Lord doth not say, man must content me for his sinnes, let mee haue so many teares, so much sorrow from thee proportionable to thy offences: spend as many dayes in my seruice, as thou hast spent in the seruice of sinne. But what saith hee? *Forgiue, forgiue*, be ready and forgiue others, and thou shalt euer find me more ready to forgiue thee. So that it is an easie condition which the Lord prescribes. O we might thinke it abundantly wel with vs, if we were able to purchase so excellent a mercy as the forgiveness of sins, at any rate whatsoever, yea, though we bought it with a great deale of paines and transitory goods, yea, life it selfe, but the Lord lets it come at an easier rate, at such a poore price, that it is wonderfull he imposeth no more vpon vs, then to forgiue others? This shewes his goodnesse, loue, and mercy, and all to make vs confesse the greatnesse of the same. As *Naamans* seruant said vn-

1  
Easie.

to his Master: *If the Prophet had commanded thee a greater thing, wouldest thou not haue done it for thy health?* But now, *onely to wash and be cleane*, what a thing is this? So the Lord may say, had he prescribed vs any difficult and hard matter, for the remission of our sinnes, would wee not haue beene glad of it? but now when hee hath imposed so easie a taske vpon vs, as

2 Kings 5.13.  
*Naamans* seru-  
uant.

to forgive others, what shall be said vnto vs if wee neglect it.

2

Profitable to  
our selues.

Secondly, *A condition profitable to our selues*, of no profit to the Lord at all; what doth he gaine by our forgiving of our brethren, but all the profit redounds vnto our selues, both because we shall be the more gentle and fitted vnto goodnesse: and many times by this meanes, we shall haue the more fauour and loue by winning many vnto vs, in loue and kindnesse: God causing vs finde from others, as they receiue from vs: so gaining some, whom neither sharpnesse, threatnings, nor sorrowes could reconcile. Look into the Story of the *Aramites*, *2 Kings 6.22.* When the King of *Israel* (hauing them in his power) would haue killed them; No saith *Elisba*, set bread and water before them, that they may eate and drinke, and goe to their Master, by which occasion, the bands of the *Aramites*, (it is said) came no more into the land of *Israel* to annoy it. So great profit came by this kindnesse and goodnesse: so will it turne altogether to our profit and benefit, if we can practice this duty in forgiving of others.

*2 Kings 6.22.*

3

Helpfull.

Sunne shining  
on a wall,

Thirdly, *It is a condition which doth much further and helpe vs in the expectation and hope of blessings lookt for.* For if we who be but men, that haue but a drop of mercy, can forgive our Brethren, we may well thinke, that the Lord who is the Ocean and full Sea of graces, must and will be more ready to forgive vs. When we see the Sunne shine vpon a wall, wee easily conceiue that it shines more brightly and gloriously within his owne Orbe. So we finding so much more mercy in our selues, to forgive our Brethren, may easily conceiue that there is much more mercy in the Lord to forgive vs, because he is the very Fountaine of all that mercy and forgiveness we shew to others.

Thus as the blessing is conditionall, so must wee per-  
forme the condition: if we hope for Gods fauour.

Here

Here comes a question to be answered, *Why of all other duties doth the Lord prescribe this condition vnto vs.* *Quest.*

Because by all meanes he would nourish and preserve loue amongst vs as much as may be: for whereas by the taint and corruption of sinne, we are ready to fall asunder by infinite quarrels and iarres, and so to pull in pieces and rent the sweet bonds of brotherly society: wherein the Diuell hath played his part by bringing into the world diuision and dissention amongst vs; the Lord in his loue, seekes to vnite and draw vs into one: therefore (of all conditions) imposing this of loue vpon vs: that if the loue of God do vs good, we maybe pleas'd to doe good one to another. By this golden chaine, he seekes to linke and tye the whole world together: therefore we should by all meanes shunne anger and matter of offence. Christians should be like Rootes well grown, which though many times they be diuided and parted yet by and by, they doe shut so close, that nobody can see the seame where the rent was, or the diuision. So among Christians, howsoeuer it cannot bee but in this frailty of life, contentions and iarres will fall out amongst vs, yet must we shut againe so close, yea claspe one another so fast, as no body may perceiue who hath offended.

Now in the Condition it selfe we may consider two things.

- 1 *The Duty, which is, To forgive our debtors.*
- 2 *The Quality, we must forgive them as God forgives vs.*

By Debtors, first, are meant, such as haue sinned and offended against vs. for by debtors, our Saviour *Christ* doth not meane such as owe vs a money debt; for a man may craue forgiuenesse of God, and yet require a money debt of his brother. Indeed, in case of miserable extremity, when a man is insufficient and cast behind hand by ineuitable meanes, then a man is bound to forgive a money debt: for the Prophet *Isa. 58. 3.* amongst



2 *King. 6. 5.**Coloss. 3. 11, 12.*2  
The quality  
of the duty.

I

*Gen. 4.**Matth. 18. 33.*

2

2 *Sam. 12. 13.*

other sinnes vpbraides the people with this as a maine great one : Yee will require all your labours as debts : But out of this case of extremity, with a safe conscience we may aske a money debt. For so when one of the Prophets, lost his Axe ; he cryed out , it was but borrowed, inferring that it must be restored : and *Elisha*, increased the womans oyle to pay debts with. And the Apostle bids vs owe nothing to any man but loue : to which I may adde, that by *Salomon* it is made a note of the wicked to borrow and not to pay againe. So that it is cleere by debtors, our Sauour *Christ* meanes such as are indebted to vs in the debt of sinne , whom wee must forgive, as the Lord forgives vs. As the Apostle exhorts, *Coloss. chap. 3. vers. 11, 12. Put on tender mercy, kindnesse, &c. forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, as G O D forgave vs , which is the second thing.*

Next, *The quality of this duty, we must forgive others as God forgives vs.*

First, *(God forgives vs truly.)* He doth not make a shew of forgiveness, and keepe our sinnes by him, to watch vs a good turne, but truly, according to his loue and mercy : forgiving and forgetting our sinnes, so must we forgive our brethren, and not make a shew of forgiveness, keeping rancor and malice in our hearts, like *Cain*, who spake kindly to his brother, but when he had him in the field, fell vpon him and killed him, *Matth. 18. 33. Except yee forgive from your hearts, your brother ; (saith our Sauour) you shall not be forgiven.* So when we say, I will forgive and doe not, let vs consider, would we haue the Lord to deale so with vs ? consider, what a wofull case is this : for who can answer one of a thousand ? and who cannot but be terrified to thinke that God remembers all.

Secondly, *God forgives vs easily without any great adoe.* No sooner did *David* say, *I haue sinned*, but *Nathan* told him : *The Lord hath also put away thy sinne, thou shalt not die.*

die. No sooner was hee humbled at his Masters feet, who owed the 1000 Talents, but the King released him, and so must we forgive our brethren, not stiffely, standing vpon our tearmes, but being gentle, and easily intreated, as we find the Lord is vnto vs. But I appeale to common experience, how hardly we are drawne to this duty? there must be such intreaty, mediation, such going betweene parties as is wonderfull, and all farre from the patterne here propounded vnto vs.

Thirdly, God doth forgive vs all our sinnes, not our smaller, reseruing the greater, but generally all, and of all sorts whatsoeuer they be. So must we do by our brethren, forgive them in all wherein they haue offended vs, we must not keepe any secret faults in store, but passe by and forgive all, lesse and more. But such is the custome of the world, that generally they can bee content to say, I would forgive, but the matter is so great, concerns me so neere, toucheth my good name, my reputation, that I cannot. But if we will be assured to bee the children of our heavenly Father, who shall inherit the promises, we must breake custome with the world, and put on the spirit of meeknesse, patiently forbearing one another, as Christ himselfe hath taught vs, *Luke 17.4. If seuen times a day he turneth vnto thee, and say it repenteth me, thou shalt forgive him.* If this mooue not, yet let vs remember the many hainous sinnes, which God forgives vs, and so be moued to forgive others.

Fourthly, *God forgives vs often*, not once, but many times, though we sinne from day to day, to morrow, and next day, yea, to our lines end. So must we often and vpon all occasions forgive one another. If thy brother offend daily, thou art bound daily to forgive him; not once or twice, but euen to seuentie times seuen times.

Thus if we follow the example of Christ, questionlesse there will be a great deale of more loue wrought

in vs, wee shall haue an assurance of Gods mercy to-  
wards vs: prepare a way into our selues, by preparing  
our hearts to performe these things: that with com-  
fort we may pray in all occasions: *And forgine  
vs our debts, as we also forgine our debtors.*

Now follows the fixt and laſt  
Petition.

6 P E-





## 6. PETITION.

*And lead vs not into tentation, but  
deliuer vs from euill.*



After prayer for our daily bread, we haue been taught, to pray for the forgiveness of our sinnes, which was to shew that without the pardon of our sinnes (through Gods fauour and mercy) all the bread in the world is nothing worth. It is nothing to haue all the blessings of Sea and Land, therewith to perish in sinne, and at last be damned with the diuell, therefore after prayer for our daily Bread, we are taught to seeke for pardon for our sinnes, reconciliation with God.

Now in this sixt Petition, we are taught to goe one step further, and pray to G O D for the grace of Sanctification, that we may not onely haue our sinnes pardoned, but our spirits also awakened and strengthened to recouer life, worke *vivification*, hauing power and vertue wrought to resist them, so as we may no more fall into sinne, but that we may be kept by the power of God in all holy courses. This is that we pray for in this Petition, that as God hath freed vs from our sinnes, so we may be freed from sinne hereafter; In summe, *That we may not be led into tentation.* But whereas there may seeme a connexion of two Petitions in one, it may reach vs two things.

First,

First, *That vpon pardon of former sinnes, the Diuell is alwayes ready to fasten new sinnes vpon vs.* Therefore after pardon of our sinnes, we pray that wee may be kept from more sinnes, as knowing the Diuell will be busie, not onely not to let vs alone so, but seeks by all means to supplant and surprize vs, as the Apostle speakes, *2 Cor. 11. 3.* But I feare, lest as the Serpent beguiled *Eue*, through his subtilty, so your mindes might be corrupted. &c. and *1 Pet. 5. 8.* *Be sober (saith he) and watch, for your aduersary the Diuell as a roaring Lyon, walketh about, seeking whom he may deuour.* So that howeuer we may relye vpon the pardon of our former sinnes, the Diuell is ready still to thrust new sinnes vpon vs. As we know if a prisoner get out of prison, and make an escape, the Tylor will not let him goe so, but make Hue and cry after him, raise the Countrey, lay all the Townes and wayes to take him, till at last he seaze vpon him, and bring him backe to the stinking Dungeon which he came from. So doth the Diuell deale by vs, when wee haue made an escape, got out of the prison-house of our owne sinnes, he will not let vs goe so, but makes after vs, layes all baytes and ginnes possible, to see if possibly he can intrap vs, that so he may carry vs backe to our former old courses to walke in the wayes of darknesse. So we see the griuouousnesse of sins, and daily tentations, are inseparable companions in this life: for wee shall neuer haue our sinnes forgiuen, but the Diuell will bee ready to tempt vs vnto other sinnes, so to lay a new load vpon vs.

Prisoner  
escaped.

2

Secondly, *That to the grace of Iustification, we must alwayes labour to ioine Sanctification: that is, we must not onely labour to haue our sinnes pardoned, but also mortified, and the power thereof weakened, for by sinne there be two things alwayes remaining.*

1 *The guilt of sinne.*

2 *The corruption of it.*

*The guilt of sinne, is a binding of vs to the punishment*

ment(as I haue said)by order of diuine Iustice, which is taken away by the Lords mercifull forgiuenesse, but when the guilt is taken away, the corruption of sinne remaineth, which is a wayward disposition of the soule, whereby it is wholly inclined vnto euil, and vnfit and vnable for heavenly things. Now this is that we pray for, that God would not onely take the guilt of sinne away, with the punishment and penalty due vnto it; but the corruption of it also; this is our desire: others indeed are well enough content to haue their sinnes pardoned, but to haue them mortified, restrained, weakned, and the power thereof abated and quite killed, but a few desire heartily. But we who know the danger and bitterness of sinne, must pray also to haue the soule Sanctified, the faculties rectified, and set in the same beauty, that the LORD in the beginning gaue it. When a man hath broken an Arme or a Legge, some fooles care no more but to be eased againe, so the Chirnrion can giue them somewhat to take away the ache, they go no further; but they who be wise doe not onely seeke to haue the paine slaked, but also to haue the bone well set againe, that by that meanes there be no blemish or disproportion to the rest of the body. So it is with a true Christian, he doth not onely desire to be rid of the paine of his sinne, the aches of his soule, but the very corruption of it also healed and mortified in him. David conioynes these two together, *Psal. 103. 2, 3. Blesse the Lord, O my soule, and forget not all his benefits: who forgiveth all thine iniquitie, and healeth all thy diseases.* The like we haue, *Psal. 51 9, 10.* where he prayes, *Hide thy face from my sinnes, and blot out all my iniquities, create in me a cleane heart, O God, and renew a right spirit in mee.* Thus after Iustification, he prayes for sanctification, which also must be our care through the course of our life. So much of the connexion.

The Petition it selfe hath two Branches in it.

1 We pray that we may not be tempted vnto sinne.

2 That



- 2 That though we be tempted, yet we may not yeeld vnto it.

Now there be two kinds of Temptations obseruable, which we are subiect to in the course of our liues.

1 Of tryals and tentations to sinne.

2 Of sicknesse and diseases.

Tentation, is any present prouocation, or inclination to sinne, which is a bait laid by the Diuell, or our owne flesh against vs. When we pray therefore, not to be led into temptation, we pray that we may not haue any prouocation or inticement to sinne, that may euermore overcome or intrap vs, in leading vs from that loue, duty, and obedience we owe vnto the Lord: so that the words in this first part of the Petition, containe two principall things.

1 A Confession.

2 A Request.

1

First, in that we pray not to be led into temptation, Here is a close confession that our sinnes deserue it, that the Lord may iustly leaue vs vnto the Will and power of temptation. As it is said of the Gentiles, *Rom. 1. 24. Wherefore also God gaue them vp to their hearts lusts, to doe things vnseemely.* So *2 Thes. 2. 11.* It is said, because they went on in the loue of darknesse, & receiued not the loue of the truth, that they might be saued; For this cause GOD should send them strong delusion, that they should beleue a lie. So that God in his iust iudgement giues vs vp to our sinnes, making one sinne the punishment of another. This the Lord shewes plainly in the parable of the Vineyard, *Esay 5. 6.* For so also a man that hath a Vineyard, as long as it beares well, hee will fence it, weed it, and hedge it, that no hurt come vnto it, but if it grow barren, and yeeld him no profit, then he causes the hedge to be throwne downe, pull away the wall, and let in Hogges, Swine, and Vermine to deuoure it. So doth God order and deale in the businesse of our soules, so long as we bring forth branches flourishing and

*Rom. 1. 24.*

*2 Thes. 2. 11.*

Vineyard.

and worthy the fruit of the Gospell, so long we are fenced and tended well cared for of God. But when wee grow barren, bring forth bryers and weeds, then all our labour is lost: when although the Lord doth not let in hogges and swine, yet doth the Diuell and all the power of darknesse, come in vpon it: and blindes and hardens vs more and more; by reason that we haue abused the gifts and graces which the Lord first bestowed vpon vs.

The second part of this confession is, *That we are exceeding prone to yeeld vnto temptation*: Wherefore wee acknowledge that the Lord in iustice may giue vs vp to the temptations of the Diuell, for which cause we pray that we might not be tempted, because we find such infirmity in our selues that if we be tempted, (a thousand to one) we shall yeeld to the tentation: for the corruption of man is like vnto dry Tinder, ready to kindle and take fire with euery little sparke. So ready are wee to be carryed away with euery little temptation; wherefore our Sauour Christ wills his disciples to pray, *That they enter not into temptation, as knowing how feeble and weake they were to resist it.* Men know not themselves, if they doe not know this, how ready and prone they be to lay hold on euery tentation, so that it is good for euery man to be iealous of himselfe. If one had a body all of Gunpowder, how carefull would he be not to come neere the fire, afraid of euery little sparke; euen so, knowing our owne procliuity to sinne, how ready euery sparke (that is, euery temptation) is to take hold vpon vs, we ought to be the more carefull, by all meanes to flie away from the occasions of it. O how ready are we to brag and vaunt of our strength, that all the Diuels in Hell shall not be able to corrupt vs: and thus many times associate our selues with Drunkards, Swearers and vncleane persons. Little do these men know themselves and their owne corruption, that they be so apt to take fire, and ready to yeeld to temptation. And albeit they

Drie Tinder,

Math. 26.41,

Body of Gunpowder.

Candle on a  
wall,

they scape away with life as *Iacob* did, yet many times they goe away halting, and carry a wound and scarre with them to their dying day. As let a man sticke a Candle to a stone wall, though the Candle do not burne through it, yet it will leaue a shrewd smutch behind it, soyling the wall, so as it will not easily be wyped out. Thus it is with tentations, though they doe not all the mischief they would and might doe, they will yet be sure to leaue an impresion of filth and staines behinde them.

2

The second part of this first Branch of the Petition is, *The Request*, that seeing we are so prone to yeeld vnto temptation, we pray that God would not leaue vs vnto our selues, or giue vs ouer to them, but that we may be kept by his power and mercy, not onely from sinne, but from all the occasions of it: which shewes, if we would keepe our selues from sinne, we must shunne the temptation, baits and prouocations thereunto, or else not auoyding the occasion, we shall neuer auoyd the sinne it selfe, considering the procliuity of our nature vnto it. Can a man (saith *Salomon*) take fire in his bosome, and not be burnt? goe vpon coales and not singe his feet, entertaine many sinnes, and not be faulty? It is impossible. *Peter* (as we know) was as bold, and (in shew) as well settled as any man; but when he came vnto the high Priests Hall, and was thrust in amongst that wicked crew, he thought it was good policy to say as they said, doe as they did, and so most shamefully denied his Master, but on the other side, good *Ioseph* (as we reade) was not onely carefull to auoyde the sinne, but the occasion of it, when he was inticed by his lewde Mistris: he hearkned not vnto her to lie with her, he durst not tarry in her cōpany. So that herein consists the wisdom of a Christian, to auoyd all the occasions and prouocations vnto sinne. When the Lord determined to cause the flood of waters to cease from off the face of the earth: It is said he stopped the fountaines of the deepe, and

Flood ceasing.



and shut the windowes of heauen. So because there be certaine floods of sinne in vs, wee must stop the fountaines below, and the windowes aboue: all occasions and prouocations leading vnto it, that we may auoyde the torrent and ouer-flowing thereof. *Chrysostome* sayes well, *It is an easier matter to auoyde the occasion, then when the occasion is offered, to auoyde the sinne.* An easier thing for a bird to flie by a snare, then when shre is intangled with it, to escape out of the danger, and auoyd it. Thus must the wisdom of the Lord teach vs wisdom to auoyd the occasion, as the sinne it selfe.

But from hence ariseth a great question, *How can the Lord be said to lead vs into temptation, seeing Saint James sayes, That God tempteth no man to sinne.* *Quest. Iam. 1. 13.*

I answer, *It is one thing to lead a man into temptation, and another thing to tempt.* To lead a man into temptation, is, to permit a man to be tempted, to giue way to the Tempter, and this God doth in Iustice. For Saint Paul sayes, God gaue the *Gentiles* vp to their owne lusts; and by the Apostle it is said, He sent vpon others strong delusions: yet doth not God tempt a man to sinne, but the diuell onely, and his owne concupiscence, but God (in his Iustice) first giues way to the temptation, as is plaine by that place, *2 King. 22. 20.* Where God is brought in, *2 King. 23. 20.* asking this question: *Who shall intice Ahab to goe down to battell, and fall at Ramoth Gilead?* and so vpon the offer of an euill spirit, to performe this office: God sayes, *Goe, thou shalt intice him, and shalt also preuaile.* So that though God tempt no man to sin, yet no man is tempted, but the Lord is the chiefe orderer and guider of the temptation. As when a man sets a Dog vpon a Beare, *Dogge, Beare,* It is the Dog that flies vpon the Beare, and lugges him and pulshim: but it is the man that sets the Dogge vpon him, and guides, and ouer-rules him in all that hee doth. So is it in temptations, it is the Diuell and our owne flesh which tempts vs to sinne, but it is God in his Iustice, that directs, ouer-rules, suffers the temptation

to ebbe and flow, goe on and off, at his owne will and good pleasure, of which there be two Vses.

Use 1.

Ioh<sup>n</sup> 19. 10.

First, seeing God can lead vs into temptation, that is, seeing all power of temptation is in his hand, this must make vs fearefull to displease him, who can turne the Diuell, Men, Angels, our owne corruptions loose vpon vs, and set our selues against our selues. *Pilate*, thought to strike feare into Christ with this; *Knowest thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee: and haue power to loose thee?* O but much more ought this to strike terrour vpon vs, that the Lord who is Omnipotent, hath power to free vs from temptation: and when he pleases, also, to set all the world against vs, vpon vs, to torment vs.

Use. 2.

Secondly, seeing that all power of temptation is in the hands of God: from hence ariseth the comfort of a Christian, that the Diuell (for all his malice) cannot tempt vs one iot further, then the Lord wil permit him, for his malice is both limited and restrained at the Lords good will and pleasure: else how liue we, feed we, prosper we, escape we in dangerous tentations? but that our God doth ouer-rule all his malice and power: and make a hedge about vs, as we see in *Iob*. Otherwise he hath malice and power enough to ouerturne and destroy vs all suddenly. To this purpose, *Saint Paul* sweetly speakes, *1 Cor. 10. 13.* That *God will not suffer vs to be tempted aboue that we be able, &c.*

2

Branch of the  
Petition.

The second Branch of this Petition is, (*But deliver vs from euill.*) Whereby is meant the euill of sinne, not any bodily euill, of wounds, troubles, diseases, and the like, but the euill of sinne whereby God is prouoked and offended: being so called, euill, *negatiue*, &c. by an excellency or excesse, because of all euils, it is the greatest euill in this world, to haue an euill conscience, to be of a lewd life, a swearer, drunkard, vncleane person, &c. This is the greatest euill, aboue pouerty, sicknesse, blindness, lameness, or any worldly losse whatsoever: though most of the world do not thinke so. Demand of them  
what

What is the greatest euill in the world? some will say, a wicked wife, some the losse of dearest friends, some want of health, money, and the like, some one thing, and some another, as their ignorance and fancy leades them, but the truth is, we see the greatest euill is the euill of sinne: Which I thus proue.

*That must needs be the greatest euill which separateth vs from the greatest good.* Argument.

*God is the greatest good: and sinne separateth a man from God; Ierem.*

*Therefore sinne must needs be the greatest euill of all others.*

For neither pouerty, sicknesse, blindnesse, lamenesse, nor any affliction (of it selfe) separates from God: nay, they being sanctified, draw vs neerer to God, to know him better, and trust more in him; as *Zeph. 3. 12. I will also leaue in the midst of thee, an afflicted and poore people, and they shall trust in me.* Therefore of all euils, the euill of sin is the greatest: seeing it deprives vs of the greatest good of all the sweet and comfortable communion with God, his Angels, and all the ioyes of Heauen, and brings to communion with the diuell and his angels, to Hell torments for euer. We see how *Mary* wept and tooke on when Christ was remoued from her sight, *Oh Mary weeping, (sayes she) They haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue layd him:* So is euery true Christian discouraged, hauing lost sense of communion with Christ: when he apprehendeth how his sinnes haue raised vp a partition wall betwixt God and him, this of all sorrowes is the greatest: Nay, in this case, nothing can comfort vntill the Sunne shine: Againe, vntill the Sonne of Righteousnesse discouer himselfe some way to the soule, by some beames of his fauour: as the Churches experience was in that dolefull estate, *Lam. 1. 16. For these things I weepe, mine eye, mine eye runneth downe with water, because the Comforter that should relieue my soule, is farre from mee, &c.* So is it with euery sinne-



sicke soule, vntill they haue found and recovered Gods fauour lost.

Use 1.

The vse of this is, that seeing of all euills, sinne is the greatest, we must learne so to esteeme and account of it. What a world is it to see, how men will complaine of worldly euills, pouerty, toothache, headache, and such like, and neuer complaine of our sinnes, whereby the soule is made a stranger to God, and we reputed as enemies vnto him.

Use. 2.

Another vse may be, to admonish vs that our greatest care must be to auoyde sinne: wee see how carefull we be to auoyde fire and water, hunger and thirst, nakednesse & wants, how much more should we study to flye from sinne: seeing if all the euils of the world were compacted in one, they are not able to bee so great en euill as the euill of sinne, which as Saint *Augustine* sayes is sweet but the death bitter, which attends it in the bottome. The people, *1 Sam. 14.* saw honey drop, and yet (though they were extreme hungry) no body durst taste it: because of the curse. so howsoeuer wee see the honey of this world droppes, pleasures of sinne, yet it is not best to taste them, because of the curse and bitter fruit of sinne. When Porters are hyred to carry a load, they vse first to feele and poise it with their hands, to see if they be able to vndergoe it, for if it be too heauy, they will not meddle with it. So should we doe before we meddle with sinne, consider the burden and waight of it, waigh the danger and punishment, that so finding it of all euils the greatest; wee may shie and shunne it.

*August. Rom. 42*

*1 Sam. 14.*

Hony drop-  
ping.  
Porters.

Use. 3.

To be contented then to endure patiently the euill of punishment, that wee may escape the euill of sinne; seeing G O D of his infinite wisdomme inflictis the one that we may be freed from the other: as one well sayes: A wise workeman, will vndergoe the lesser euill to auoid the greater: as the Chirurgion cuts off one member, lest all the body should be infected: or as in a fire

Lesser euill.  
Chirurgion.

men.

men will pull downe three or foure houses to saue a whole Towne. So it must be our wisdom, by enduring the lesser, to auoyd the greater euill of sinne; for the euill of Punishment, is not absolutely and simply euill, (euill in it selfe) it indeed seemes euill to him that feesles it: but it is good in it selfe, as *Irenaeus* speaks, It is good in it selfe as being an act of Diuine Iustice. *Malum Penae*: euill in the punishment, *Sed bonum est Iustitia Dei*, good in regard of Gods Iustice. But the euill of sin it is absolutely & simply euill in it selfe: because it is a direct auention and turning away from him that is only good.

*Iren. lib. 4. cap. 1.  
72. & Cyprian.  
Iren. Ad Popul.  
Iren. Epistol.*

The second thing remarkeable in this last Branch of the Petition, is, to obserue two or three things from hence, that we desire to be deliuered from euill.

First, *Our owne inability, that we be not able to deliuer our selues.* It is God that must deliuer and keep vs from all sinne. So that in confession of our owne frailty and weaknesse, wee acknowledge all power to be of God which must deliuer vs from euill: yea, from this great euill of sin. So *Peter* shewes, *That wee are kept from the power of God, through faith vnto saluation.* And *Christ* prays for his disciples, *That the Lord would keepe them from euill.* So that it is God onely who keepes vs from euill, we are not able to keep our selues frō the very least.

*1 Pet. 1. 5.  
Iohn 17. 15.*

It hath been a question, whether man can resist temptation by the power of Nature without grace, wherein some of the *Schoolmen*, goe on very smoothisly, some worse and more harshly.

*Quest.*

But the truth is, that no man by the power of Nature (not assisted by grace) is able to resist the least temptation. This not onely *Saint Augustine*, against the *Pelagians*, shewes by many strong reasons; but also very reason will confirme it. For,

*Ans.*

*No body can deny but that it is a good thing to resist any temptation whatsoeuer.*

*Argument.*

*But there is no good thing in vs by Nature.*

*Therefore by Nature we cannot resist any temptation.*

2 Cor. 3. 5.

John 15. 5.

Childe led.

That there is no good thing in vs by Nature; see for prooffe, 2 Cor. 3. 5. Where the Apostle shewes, wee are not of our selues sufficient to thinke a good thought. And Christ tels vs, John 15. 5. *Without me ye can doe nothing*: Wherefore we must desire still that God would deliuer vs by his Almighty power. A little childe, so long as he is led by the hand of the Mother, so long is he able to walke vp and downe the house without hurt, but if the Mother once let it goe, then it falls, and breaks face or nose, and so cryes out. So it is with the children of God in this world, so long as he vpholds and sustains them by his grace, so long doe they walke without hurt and danger in the wayes of God. But let him neuer so little withdraw himselfe and his Grace, leaue vs to our selues, by and by we fall into great and grievous sinnes, whereof happily we are not healed many a yeere after. You see what *Dauids* confession is; *I said in my prosperity I shall neuer be moued*: But thou hidst thy face, and I was troubled.

Secondly, This shewes it to bee a great deliuerance and worke of Gods goodnesse and mercy to bee kept from sinne. It seemed a great deliuerance, the escap'ing of bodily danger: as *Peter* from prison, *Ioseph* out of bondage, *Daniel* from the Lyons denne: but indeed the great deliuerance is to be freed from sinne, which the Angell pronounces as a great blessing (speaking of the birth of Christ) *His name shall be called Iesus, for he shall saue his people from their sinnes*. So *Isa. 116. 8*. He confesses this for a great mercy. *For thou hast deliuered my soule from death, mine eyes from teares, and my feet from falling*. This the people of God must especially pray for to be freed from the power of sinne. But oh! the greatest part of this world haue no care to bee deliuered from this greatest euill; So they may be deliuered from trouble, danger, sicknesse, they thinke all is well with them, they are content to live and dye so, yea to rot in their sinnes. As the children of *Israel* cryed vnto *Mo-*  
ses,

Matth. 1. 21.

Psal. 116. 8.



*ser, Toke Serpentes,* went to haue the fiery Serpents re- Fiery Serpents.  
 moued, being well enough pleased to retaine their sins,  
 so they were rid of the Serpents. So doe the men of this  
 world desire to be rid of the Serpents, worldly griefes  
 and wants, annoyances, sicknesse, lamenesse, vnseasona-  
 ble weather, and such like, but no care to be rid of the  
 greatest euill of sinne.

The third thing is an Interrogation, by way of de- Quest.  
 maund. *What be the euills of sinne, which we here pray to*  
*be deliuered from?* 3

Thing.

I answer in generall, we pray to be deliuered from all Ans.  
 sinne, so it comes in vnrestrained: *Lord deliuer vs from*  
*euill:* that is, from all euill. So that we pray to be deli-  
 uered from euery euill way, as *Dauid, Psal. 119. 101. I Tsal. 119. 102.*  
*haue refrained my feet from euery euill way, that I might*  
*keepe thy commandements,* So the Apostles exhortation 1 Cor. 7. 1.  
*is, Let vs cleanse our selues from all filthinesse of the flesh and*  
*spirit, perfecting sanctification in the feare of the Lord.* It  
 is the common corruption of the world, that they bee  
 carefull to auoyd some sinnes, and not others. Like *Ie-*  
*horam,* who tooke away the Images of *Baal*, and yet de- Images Baal.  
 parted not from the sinnes of *feroboam*. So it is with  
 many of vs, we can be contented to take away the Ima-  
 ges of *Baal*, to be afraid of some grosse and grieuous  
 sinnes, such as Murther, Theft, high Treason, &c. and yet  
 they will continue in a number of other sinnes vnrepent-  
 ed of. But we must flie from all sinne, as much as may  
 be. If a Theefe haue found one hole in a house, at that A theefe,  
 one hole, he may carry out all the wealth and treasure of  
 that house. So if the Diuell finde but one hole in our  
 hearts, one close sinne we are addicted to, at that one  
 hole hee will rob vs, and carry out all our treasure, leaue  
 vs neuer a good grace to stand by vs at the day of  
 death;

Thus much in generall.

Secondly, we pray particularly to be deliuered from In particular,  
 three wicked euills; First, *From the euill of a wicked*  
1  
heart,

Heb. 3. 12.

Prou. 4. 23.

heart, because it is the fountaine that all our actions come from; for which cause the Apostles exhortation is, *Hebr. 3. 12. Brethren take heed, lest there be in any of you an euill heart, to depart away from the living God. And the wise mans counsell is, Prou. 4. 23. Keepe thy heart with all diligence, for from thence commeth life.* If a man would haue good water about his house, he must especially look vnto the cleansing of his Springs, for though he clesse his Pipes and Conduites, yet if his Springs bee soule and muddy, he is neuer the better. So because the heart is the Fountaine and Spring of all euill, wee must especially looke to that.

2

1 Cor. 10. 32.

2 Cor. 9. 15.

The second kind of euils which we pray against, are *offensiuē euils*, scandalous to our holy profession, such as doe not onely bring disgrace vpon our selues, but in some sort also cast disgrace vpon the Lord himselfe. Which is contrary to that rule of the Apostle, *1 Cor. 10. 32. Give no offence neither to the Iewes nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God: euen as I please all men in all things, &c.* So Paul saith, *2 Cor. 9. 15. For it were better for me to dye, then that any man should make my reioycing vaine;* So it should be with vs, rather to die a thousand deaths, then to loose our reioycing, bring any dishonour vnto God, or staine our holy profession, and the Gospell.

Thirdly, *we pray against the euill of our owne Nature,* that is, against those sinnes we are most prone, and inclined to, for euery one hath some speciall sinne which haunts his nature aboue the rest. Now therefore wee pray vnto God that he would deliuer and keep vs from the speciall sinnes which our nature is prone and inclined vnto: As the Drunkard from his owne drunkenesse, the Lier from his deceit, the corrupt man from his vncleannesse, &c. *Dauid he prayes (to this purpose) to be deliuered from his iniquity.* It cannot be somewhat easie to keepe vs from our owne sinnes, such as our nature is most inclined vnto, herein a man may  
make

make trueſt tryall of himſelfe. And as this muſt be the continuall care of a Chriſtian, ſo eſpecially now when the bleſſings of God lie before vs, and we be ready to gather that which the good hand of G O D hath provided for vs, O then pray vnto God that wee bee kept from euill, from the euill of ſinne that he doe not take away his bleſſings, or hide his countenance from vs: as *Moses* was deſired to couer the ſhining brightneſſe of his face. But intreat wee the Lord to come into his Vineyard, to enter vpon his bleſſings, and to inioy the fruit of our labours: and ſo to guide vs continually by the hand of his good providence: *As we may not be led vnto temptation, but be deliuered from euill.* And that for theſe reaſons.

- 1 *For thine is the Kingdome,*
  - 2 *The Power*
  - 3 *And the glory for ever.*
- Amen.*

Having thus ſpoken of the Petitions, both which concerne Gods glory, and our owne good: whereby Chriſt hath taught vs to make our Requests regular, whatſocuer we aſke, demaunding it according to Gods *1 Iohn 5.4.* will, with aſſurance to receiue it: as we haue it, *1 Iohn 5.4.* He now at laſt brings vs vnto a view of thoſe reaſons, whereby we may ſtrengthen and backe our Petitions, that we may be aſſured not to looſe what wee pray for. Seed as we know may periſh two wayes.

- 1 *If it be not good.*
- 2 *If the ground be naught.*

For though the ſeed be good: yet if the ground bee not anſwerable, it will come to nothing. But it is not ſo with the ſeed of Prayer, for the ground that it is ſowed in, is the cares and boſome of God. Therefore howſocuer it may periſh in reſpect the ſeede is not good, yet it can neuer miſcarry, becauſe the ground is good, but the L O R D will make it proſper and returne it with a bleſſing and increaſe.



Therefore let vs hold our selues to the rule of *Christ*, and then we need not to doubt, but to haue a blessing if wee seeke for it; and be not wanting to our selues, the Lord will not be wanting vnto vs, as you haue heard.

Now for the conclusion, it containes two things.

- 1 *Certaine reasons to inforce the Petitions, Thine is the Kingdome, Power, and Glory.*
- 2 *A reflection or reiterating of our desires, in the last words, Amen, which is as much as to say, Lord, let it be so.*

*Quest.* First, for the reasons, we must consider, why our Sauiour *Christ* annexeth these, and doth propound *Petitions* without inforcing reasons? This was to shew with what earnestnesse, and excellent feruent intention, wee must pray to God, not slightly and coldly, but pressing him with arguments, being serious to obtaine what we pray for. But how doe many of vs pray, indeed it is with such deadnesse, and coldnesse, as if we did not greatly care whether our requests be granted or not. Now to correct & mend this fault, our Sauiour shewes we must be serious and earnest in our suits. *David* sayes, *My voyce came to God when I cryed, My voyce came to God, and he heard me.* Children be earnest when they craue, but when they cry, they are so importunate, that they will haue no nay. So we that be the children of God, must not onely craue of God, but cry also, and be so importunate, that nothing can quiet vs till we haue our requests granted, and the blessing we seeke for. This our Sauiour shewes by the importunity of a friend, suing at midnight, (an vnseasonable time) who beates, and knocks, and calls, and will not rest vntil he haue the three loaves that he came for. As also by the widdowes importunity and preuailing with the vniust Iudge: which shewes, that the greater and more it is, the more acceptable our Prayers are, and the likelier to speed.

*Children crying.*

*Luke 18. 5, 6.*

Saint

Saint Paul wills vs to strue by prayers with God: meaning, that as *Jacob* stroue, wept, and wraisted with *Gen. 32.25.* the Angell, and would not let him goe without a blessing; So should we strue with God by prayer, in a holy reuerence, and say as he said, *Lord I will not let thee go* *Hos. 12.4.* *unlesse thou blesse me, unlesse thou shew mercy vpon me, and grant me my desire*; and then, no doubt, keeping the right course which Christ hath set downe, we shall preuaile with our God. But oh! how are wee to seeke in this, how poorely come we forward in grace, as hauing no life in vs? as though we suspected that God were not able to grant our requests? or else the immoderate cares of this world choake vp our desires: or the foolish interposition of vaine thoughts, and wanton motions hinder our zeale and deuotion. So that by our Saniours reasons, we must learne to quicken our selues, to be more serious in our prayers, considering God will haue it so, and delighteth in importunity, therefore shewing vs vnderstandable reasons to incite vs to pray.

Secondly, we must consider, *What kind of reasons they be which Christ annexeth here?* 2 They be all reasons taken What kind of from without vs, and not one of them found within vs: reasons they be. which was to shew, that nothing of the world is within vs, (no not in the very best of vs) that might moue or incline the Lord to shew mercy and fauour vnto vs: no such dignity or merit, whereby we may procure fauour or thinke to be heard and speed at the hands of God: seeing whatsoeuer inclines God to heare and pittie vs, is wholly in himselfe. As *Dauid* shewes in that prayer of the Church, *Psal. 44.4.* *Thou art my King, O God, command deliuerances for Jacob; through thee will we push down our enemies, through thy Name will we tread them under that rise vp against vs. So Psal. 143.11. Hee Psal. 143.11. begges quickning from God for his Names sake, &c. And Daniel 9.18. (saith he) We doe not present our supplications before thee for our owne righteousnesses, but for thy great mercies.* Dan. 9.18

Iſa. 48. 11.

So hee himſelfe by the Prophet ſpeakes in another place: *I doe not theſe things vnto you for your ſakes, O houſe of Iſrael! but for my holy Names ſake, &c.* Thus when we would obtaine any good thing from the Lord, we muſt learne to goe out of our ſelues, and to raiſe all the matter of our hope and ſpeeding from the Lord, for his own ſake, out of his meere goodneſſe and mercy.

3  
The reaſons  
are forcible.

Thirdly, we are hence to conſider with our ſelues, *that the reaſons be ſit and forcible*, whereby our Sauour Chriſt, ſecretly answers three doubts concerning prayer, which might be diſcouraging impediments, to hinder vs not to ſpeed, when we pray.

I

Matth. 20. 20.

First, *When the party to whom we pray, hath no authority to grant it.* This was ſcene when the Mother of Zebedees ſonnes came vnto Chriſt, deſiring a requeſt of him, that her two ſonnes might ſit, *the one at his right hand, the other at his left hand, in his Kingdome, vnto which Chriſts answer was; firſt, in generaall, Yee know not what yee aſke, &c.* and then he tels her, *But to ſit on my right hand and on my left, is not mine to giue, but it ſhall be giuen to them, for whom it is prepared of my Father.* Here ſhe petitioned amiſſe, in ſuch ſort as came meereſly from affection and fauour to her children, this is one impediment, ſuing vnto one who hath no authority to grant, at leaſt in that thing.

2

Iſa. 3. 7.

Secondly, *When though the party hath authority, yet hee hath not power and ability to doe it.* As in that deſolation of Iudea, propheſied of, *Iſa. 3. 7. Where ſome ſhould come and hang vpon helpleſſe helpers: this answer (he ſhewes) they make. In that day ſhall he ſweare, ſaying, I will not be vnhealer, for in my houſe is neither bread nor cloathing, make me not a ruler of the people.* So *Mat. 17. 16.* We read a complaint made vnto Chriſt by a certaine man whoſe ſonne being lunaticke and brought to his Diſciples, they could not cure: this is alſo a diſcouragement, if wee doubt of the parties ability to helpe.

3

Thirdly, when though the party wee come to hath both



both authority and ability : yet is unwilling to grant, as we see in churlish *Naball* towards *David*, *Shall I then* 1 Sam. 25. 12.  
*take my bread and my water, and my flesh that I haue killed for my shearers, and giue it vnto men, whom I know not whence they be ?* these be the three impediments which if they possesse one thoroughly with a preiudice, may hinder prayer : either not to be, or if done, yet not to speed. Now, our *Sauour Christ* remoueth all these, shewing ; 1 *That the Lord hath authority to doe it, because the Kingdome is his.*

2 *The Lord hath ability, because his is the power.*

3 *Hath willingnesse to doe it, because all the glory and honour of it shall be his owne.*

And thus by these three reasons, our *Sauour* hath cleared and remoued all these rubbes in the way, which might make vs doubt not to obtaine at the hands of God what we pray for.

Concerning the first reason, taken from Gods authority, *(For thine is the Kingdome)* we obserue, that *The Sovereignty and free disposition of all things is in the hands of God* : So as we may well pray, *Lord thou mayst giue vs Heauen, pardon of sinnes, daily bread, all that we need and pray for.* Because, *Thine is the Kingdome* : thou hast the free and intire Dominion of all things, and thou (as *Soueraigne Lord*) maist dispose of them, & dispence them at thine owne will. So *David* saith, *Thine, O Lord, is greatnesse, and power, and victory and praise : for all that is in heauen, or in earth, is thine : both riches and honour come of thee, and thou raignest ouer all, &c.* All other things are tyed to lawes and rules ; a man in his family may not take the childrens bread and giue it vnto the dogs. Yea, a King that will rule in his owne Kingdome, hath his power limited and confined of God ; for it is mentioned as a note of an euill King, 1 Sam. 8. 14. *That hee shall* 1 Sam. 8. 14.  
*take their fields and vineyards, and best Olive trees, and giue them to his seruants ;* But God hath an illimited power and vnrestrained, so as he may dispose of all things

at his pleasure : being therefore sure that we can aske for nothing which he hath not authority to giue vs.

3

Nay, this reason, if it be well weighed, hath a further force in it, Namely, because *the Kingdome is thine*. So, O Lord! it belongs vnto thee, and is much for thy honour, to giue vs all these blessings and graces that wee pray daily for. For we all know that it belongs vnto a king to provide for the comfortable and good estate of his owne subiects and seruants. And therefore *Salomons* kingdome and gouernment (amongst other things) was so renowned for this, because he so royally and richly provided for his subiects, that *siluer was nothing worth in his dayes*. So seeing God is our King, it belongs to his care, to furnish and store vs with all graces needfull. Thus holy *Davids* practise was to fetch all his wants out of Gods store-house, as *Psal. 5. 2. Hearken vnto the voyce of my cry, my King, and my God, for vnto thee will I pray*. The reason of this his dependance vpon God, hee shewes, *Psal. 74. 12. For God is my King of old, working saluation in the midst of the earth*. Thus also it is Gods honour to furnish his owne subiects and seruants, with all manner of blessings and graces necessary. The vses briefly are two.

*Salomons* provision.

*Psal. 5. 2.*

*Psal. 74. 12.*

Use 1.

First, seeing the Kingdome is Gods, whatsoeuer thy selfe or thy estate be, though neuer so vnworthy or vnfit, be not distrustfull, discouraged, doe not dispaire, because the kingdome is the Lords, that is, *Hee hath the free and absolute disposing of all, to distribute, and giue away at his pleasure, vnto whom he will, and when he will*. Therefore yet a while, pray still, be patient, and waite his leisure, for he will come to thy comfort in the best time.

Use. 2.

*Mat. 23. 15.*

Secondly, seeing the kingdome is the Lords, neuer grudge at the good estate of another : because the Lord is onely wise, yea, infinite in wisdom to dispose of all things as hee list. *It is not lawfull for me to doe with my owne as I list* : So let vs be contented with his good will and pleasure, hee who hath least hath more then

then he deserueth: see what *Jacob* sayes, *Gen. 32. 10* *Gen. 32. 10.*  
*I am not worthy of the least of thy mercies.* So when old  
*Eli* was threatned with the destruction of his house, for  
the transgressions of his sonnes: his reply is, *It is the Lord's will.* *1 Sam. 3. 18.*  
*Lord, let him doe what seemeth him good.* And *Danid* *Psal. 7. 1.* *Psal. 59.*  
*59. 9.* saith, *I was dumbe, I opened not my mouth, because*  
*thou didst it.*

The second reason is taken from *The power of G O D; 2. Reason.*  
that is, the strength and abilitie to doe all whatsoeuer  
we pray for or need, is Gods. Earthly Kings many times  
want power, though they be willing to helpe their sub-  
jects and seruants; as when the poore woman cryed  
out to the King of *Israel* (in a great distresse of hunger)  
*Helpe my Lord, O King!* He answered: *Seeing the Lord*  
*doth not succour thee, how should I helpe thee?* Thus we ma-  
ny times want power, but there is no want of Power  
and ability with God, seeing out of the rich store-house  
of his abundant plenty, hee is able to supply what wee  
stand in need of: As the Apostle speaks, *1. Eph. 3. 20.* *Eph. 3. 20.*  
*to him therefore that is able to doe exceeding abundantly, above*  
*all that we either are able to aske or thinke, be all glory for*  
*euer.* Thus it is a good thing for euery man to be per-  
swaded of this, that we can aske nothing at the hands  
of God, but he can giue it. Whereupon the *Leper*, and  
so the *Centurion*, both come to *Christ* with this speech, *Matth. 8. 8.*  
*Lord if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.* And *2 Cor. 9. 8.* *2 Cor. 9. 8.*  
*8.* He shewes this much, *That God is able to make all*  
*grace abound in them, &c.* *Peter* (we reade) so long as he  
carried his eye to *Christ*, he was able to walke vpon the  
waues of the Sea. But when he lookt away from *Christ*, *Peters Sea-*  
and cast his eies vpon the Windes and Billowes, by and walking.  
by he began to sinke. So is it with vs in this world, as  
long as we can cast our care vpon the power of God, so  
long we may be vpheld in all temptations and troubles:  
as a man standing on the top of a high Tower, is safe so  
long as he lookes vp, but looking downwards, is ready  
to fall. So it is with vs, when we doe not looke vnto  
Heauen,



Heauen, but looke on feares and other things downeward, we by and by are in danger of drowning. It is a good thing therefore euer to looke vnto the power of God, considering that what is impossible to man, is possible with God, with whom all things are possible.

3. Reason.

The third reason is taken from the glory of God, *For thine is the glory for euer and euer.* That is to say, Lord it is thy glory and honour to doe these things that wee pray for, and though not for our sakes, yet Lord doe it for thine owne honour and names sake, which is aboue all things a strong motiue, there being nothing which more mooues, and preuailes with him, then his owne glory. The glory of God, is as it were the eye of God, his tenderest part, yea, such a part, as he will not haue touched: as *Isaiah* speakes thereof. *My glory will I not giue to another, (saith the Lord.)* So though nothing in the world be in vs, and we haue no merit, being to fall into the dust, yet this is sure that the Lord will thinke vpon vs, as *Dauid* speaks, *Psal. 40. 17. But I am poore and needy, yet the Lord thinketh on me, &c.* he will thinke on whatsoeuer concerns his owne glory and honor: Consider we then what a great mercy this is vnto vs, that the Lord hath lapt and folded vp our good in his glory. As the Iuic is so wrapt about a tree, That it cannot be fel'd, but we must fell the tree also: so is the glory of God in-folded and wrapt in our good, that they both goe together.

*Psal. 40. 17.*

*Iuy.*

These things considered, let vs striue in our prayers, with humblenesse, confession, shame, importunitie, giuing all to God, and emptying our selues of all good things in our selues. So *Abraham* speakes vnto God, *I haue presumed, that am but dust and ashes to speake vnto the Lord.* So he sayes, *Isa. 40. 17. All Nations before him are as nothing, and they are counted to him lesse then nothing, and vanity.*

*Gen. 18.*

*Isa. 40. 17.*

Thus must wee come downe all and be abashed in our owne sight, referring our selues in prayer to the good

good will of God, vsing strong Arguments, and much Patience in Humility.

## Amen.

This last word containes a reflection or inference of our desires. Some learned men take it for an assent of faith, but though in Positions and Propositions, it be so, yet in prayer it is alwayes vsed as a roote of reflection, *Amen, Good Lord let it be so.* Which shewes that there must be great attention in our Prayers, the mind must be seriously fixed vpon that we speake for to the Lord, without straying and wandring thoughts. It is an opinion of the Papists, that if a man haue a generall intent to pray, it is no sinne to entertaine wandring cogitations, so that a man may goe on with his beales, and finish vp the number of his dotish sayings for all his businesse. As they that haue a iourney to *London*, if they put themselves on the way, need neuer thinke on *London, London.* for euery step the horse takes, sets him forwards. But our Sauour Christ here shewes the flat contrary, that we must finish vp our prayers, with the same attention, earnestnesse, and feruency, with which they were begun, all wandring thoughts being expelled. For so long and no longer we pray, then our minde is eleuated and lifted vp vnto the Lord.

Saint *Augustine* sayes well to this purpose; who intends to speake to one in a serious matter, and then turnes his talke to another? who will haue a suit to a Iudge, begin to propose the matter, and then turne his speech to his friend standing by? who can suffer this? who can endure it? much more then when wee come to GOD in prayer, ought we to haue our thoughts set, and mindes prepared to be attentiuie vnto that which is said: like Holy *Dauid*: to bee able to say, *My heart is fixed, O LORD, My heart is fixed: awake my glory, &c.* that we may not appeare before the

Speech turning.

*Amen.*

the Lord : with flat, dead, heavy spirits, and wandering  
 thoughts : but with ravished hearts and mindes se-  
 rious, thirsty, earnest, attentue, longing for the  
 things prayed for ; We may alwayes conclude  
 our prayers comfortably, to our euerla-  
 sting reioycing, to cry, Euen so Lord ;  
*Amen, Amen, Amen.*

*Veni etiam Domine Iesu.*

---

*Ff N f S.*

---



---



# THE POORE PENITENT OR, THE DOCTRINE OF REPENTANCE.

As it was Preached in diuers Sermons, by  
that Reuerend, Learned, Holy, Painfull, and Iu-  
dicious Diuine, Mr. I O H N S M I T H, late Minister  
of the Word of God at *Clanering in Essex*; And some-  
time Fellow of *St. Iohns Colledge in Oxonford*.  
Published since his death for  
the Hungrie.

V P R I G H T N E S H A T H B O L D N E S.

I S A Y 48.18.

*O that thou hadst hearkened to my Commandements, then had thy peace beene as a  
River, and thy Righteousnesse as the waues of the Sea.*

*Thy seed also had beene as the sand, and the off-spring of thy bowels like the grawell:  
his Name should not haue beene cut off nor destroyed from before mee.*



L O N D O N,

Printed by A.I. for George Edwards, and are to be sold at his house  
in the Old Baily, in Greene Arbor, at the signe of  
the Angell. 1629.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE DEPARTMENT OF THE HISTORY OF ARTS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS



*To the Reader.*

**C**hristian Reader, I send thee here the sowre and bitter Pill of Repentance, yet feare it not, for it comes not to kill, but to cure thee. It may bee bitter in the taste ; but take my word for it, it will bee healthfull in digestion. I know thou canst indure to sweat, purge, and toyle for the health of thy mortall bodie ; why wilt thou not doe as much for the euerlasting good of thy immortall soule ? If thou beest an Atheist, I leaue thee in thy gall of bitternesse vnto thy perdition ( except thou Repent : ) but if a Christian, I pray thee remember, what the Spirit of God sayes. Euery one that hath this Hope in him, purgeth himselfe euen as he is pure. Are all things be-



come new by Christ? and dost thou thinke to goe to Heauen in the old rotten defiled ragges of the first *Adam*? there being no change wrought in thee? Deceiue not thy selfe, there is no remedie; if thou wilt not mourne for sinne, thou shalt mourne for iudgement. If thou wilt not shed teares here for thy offences, there is no remedie, thou must of necessitie weepe for euer in Hell, where shall bee (saith our Sauour) wailing and gnashing of teeth world without end. Be not therefore (like Ephraim) a deceitfull Merchant: weigh things rightly in the ballance of the Sanctuarie: and remember (as God wishes of his people Israel) that thy chiefest wisdom is to remember these things: The miserie of sinne; The Happinesse of Holinesse, and thy later end: which if thou neglectest, all thy other actions are and shall prooue but meere foolishnesse in the sight of God. Vanquished by the importunitie of a friend (in hope it might prooue profitable for thy good) I gaue way to the Printing of this small Treatise: though (in regard of my owne weaknesse) I did not hope to liue so long as to reuiew and publish it my selfe. Pardon therefore I intreate thee the wants and failings thereof: Feed on the honey:  
supply

## To the Reader.

supply the rest with thine owne mounting  
more ample Meditations: and with the help of  
others of this nature, vse it by Gods blessing  
as a poore helpe to lift thee vp one step higher  
vpon *Jacobs* ladder (which is the end I aimed  
at) vntill some other of more learning, pietie,  
experience and wisdom e rect for thy sake a  
more excellent fabricke vpon this weake  
foundation, which hee heartily wishes:

*Thy seruant in Christ Iesus,*

IOHN SMITH.

The first of these is the  
 fact that the population  
 of the country has  
 increased very rapidly  
 since the year 1800.  
 This is due to a number  
 of causes, the most  
 important of which are  
 the increase in the  
 number of children born  
 to each family, and the  
 decrease in the number  
 of deaths. The former  
 is due to the fact that  
 the average number of  
 children born to each  
 family has increased  
 from about 4 in 1800  
 to about 6 in 1850.  
 The latter is due to the  
 fact that the average  
 number of deaths per  
 1000 has decreased  
 from about 25 in 1800  
 to about 15 in 1850.  
 These two causes have  
 together produced the  
 rapid increase in the  
 population of the country.  
 The second of the  
 causes mentioned above  
 is the fact that the  
 country has been  
 opened up to a large  
 extent since the year  
 1800. This has been  
 done by the discovery  
 of gold in California,  
 and the subsequent  
 migration of a large  
 number of people to  
 that country. This has  
 also produced a rapid  
 increase in the  
 population of the  
 country.

THE END

1851

1851





To the Christian  
Reader.

**G**entle Reader, I offer here vnto  
thy view a Treatise of Repen-  
tance, which I found in the stu-  
dy of the most worthie Author  
a little after his death: written  
in an extraordinarie small rug-  
ged blotted coppie: which since that time with ex-  
ceeding care and paines, was thus fitted for the  
publike good; hoping that thou wilt take it in good  
part as it is, though the exact curious hand of the  
Author was not to persite it, as hee intended, if he  
had liued a little longer. I know the diuers Bookes  
already extant vpon this subiect, might haue dis-  
couraged mee so, as to haue spared my paines here-  
in: but that as diuers meates diuersly cooked and  
dressed, fit best diuersitie of Palates and queasie  
stomacks: So I hoped that perhaps the plaine and  
vnusuall handling of this Treatise, might comfort,  
incourage, and stirre vpsome one or other, supply-  
ing

To the Christian Reader.

ing from the storehouse and fountaine of the ever  
abounding Spirit, somewhat not obserued, or at  
least not thus cooked by any other. For which cause,  
and that the memorie and paines of so learned, holy,  
& Iudicious a man of God, should not be altogether  
buried and forgot, it hath beene thus by Gods assi-  
stance published, Let mee therefore intreate thy  
charitable Censure of what is done for Gods glorie  
and thy good, for which, I promise some other way  
to strine how I may best shew my selfe,

Thine in the best bonds,

IO. HART.

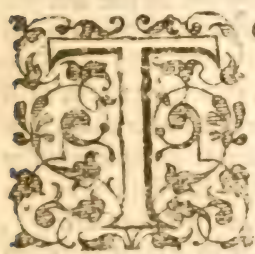


# A TREATISE OF Repentance.

GALATH. 3.19.24.

*Wherefore then serueth the Law ? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the Promise was made, and it was ordained by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.*

*Wherefore the Law was our Schoolemaster to bring vs vnto Christ, that wee might be Iustified by faith.*



To apply Christ vnto vs who is the meanes of Saluation giuen of God, there must be two workes ;

1. *A worke of the Law.*
2. *A worke of the Gospel.*

That the Law may effectually worke vpon vs, and bring vs vnto that for which it was appointed

of God, there must bee

1. *A knowledge of the Law.*
2. *An application of the Law.*

Of the knowledge of the Law wee haue already spoken, now are wee to intreat ; *How euery man may apply it to himselfe, and so thereby both measure his owne courses, and curbe his wicked life.* For euen as the man *Elisha*,

Bbb 2. King.



2. King. 4. 34.

2. King. 4. 34. applyed his body vnto the childes body; his eyes vnto his eyes; his hands vnto the childes hands; and his mouth vnto the childes mouth, &c. and then it appeared what difference there was betwixt the childes cold body, which began to receiue life from *Elisbaes* warme body: So when a man shall apply the law of God vnto himselfe vnto his heart, hee shall soone perceiue what a damnable estate hee is in, and how farre short hee comes of the meanes to auoide death and damnation. So then, the best course for euery man is, to apply the Law of God vnto himselfe, and measure his owne actions by it; for a man may haue a great deale of knowledge of the Law of God, and yet be neuer the better for it, if hee bee not wise to apply the knowledge vnto himselfe, and examine his owne courses and life by it, for this will discouer vnto him all his spots and blemishes: and leaue no corner of the soule vnranfacked. Euen as a workman comming to hewgh a peece of timber, hee takes a line or a threed, and applyes it vnto it, by and by hee sees where it is marked or chalked, or crooked, or strait, and so proceeds in his worke accordingly: So let a man apply the strait threeds and lines of the law of God vnto himselfe, and by and by hee sees his owne euill wayes: where hee performed too few duties, where hee profecuted too much his owne will, and how there remaineth vnto him a reward, according to his euill or good actions. So then euery Christian who taketh care to apply Christ vnto himselfe, must not onely know the Law of God, but know how to apply the same vnto his owne soule and conscience: that the Law may affright, wound, and bring him vnder, both to a sense of sinnes present venome and bitterness, as also to an vnfaigned and sound totall hatred thereof for the time to come. Now of the Law thus applyed, there is a double vse;

1. In the man Unregenerate.

2. In the man Regenerate.

In the the Unregenerate man, there is a fourefold vse thereof.

First,

Peece of Timber.

First, *It shewes him Generally what is sinne* : for a man by his owne light of his eyes and reason, is not able to discover his diseale vnto himselfe, *Rom. 3. 20. For by the Law commeth the knowledge of Sinne* : and *Chap. 7. 7. Nay, I knew not sinne but by the Law*. So then, the law of God discovers and displays sinne vnto vs. O, wee cannot see with the light of our owne eyes and vnderstanding, if God helpe vs nor to see. Wee are not by nature inspired to know good and bad. Na, vntill the law of God discover vnto vs what sinne is, it is impossible for vs to discerne our miserie. As a man that is brought into a darke roome cannot tell how it stands, whether moated, or towards a yard or Orchard, nor how it is adorned, and made handsome and fine, or otherwise lyes sluttish and beastly, but bring a candle into the roome, or tarry till the Sunne riseth, and by and by euery thing is apparant : So let a man looke vpon the light of his owne reason or vnderstanding, and he will quickly fall into euery ditch, and runne headlong into the by- wayes of frailtie, corruption and wickednesse. But let God light vp the candle of his law, and by and by we shall see what is good, what is not good : what is lawfull, and what is vnlawfull for vs. This is the first vse of the Law in the man unregenerate ; it shewes him generally what sinne is, that it is a sinne to lye, to sweare, to make our table-talke of filthy actions, to be disobedient to superiours, and that wee must bee disrobed of our owne filthy estate. The Law of God I say, can discover vs, whether wee offend in thoughts, words, or actions, and make it easily knowne what sinne and corruption dwelleth in vs. As the Lepers said vnto themselues, *2. King. 7. 9. Wee doe not well, this day is a day of good tidings* ; *Let vs rise, &c.* So the Law of God can make a man say vnto himselfe: I doe not well to lye, to sweare, to dice, to mispend the Sabbath : to riot in euill companie, to bee impatient, proud, couetous, a backbiter, &c. O let me rise and get me away speedily from this miserable condition lest euill befall me.

A darke  
Roome.

Lepers.  
2 King. 7. 9.

Vse 2.

Woman  
pained.

Dirtie face.

Isa. 7. 13.

The second vse of the Law to a man vnregenerate is, *To shew him the Fearfulnesse of sinne*, what a grieuous and fearfull thing sinne is: how dangerous for a simple man to offend so great a God, to incurre the indignation of so high a Maiestie. A woman hopeth she is with childe, when shee feeleth many stiches, longings, and other distemperatures of her body, but when her greatnesse and swelling wombe appeares, then is shee assured, and not onely findes it so, but ere her deliuerance feeles diuers violent pangs and grieuous convulsions: So when men runne on in sin, the Law of God at length makes their wickednesse apparant, not without perturbations, anguish and sorrow, till there bee a deliuerance from the same, and the hainousnesse of their transgressions; Againe, as a man hauing a foule bedurted, or bespotted face, doth neither know the same, nor seeke to wash or make it cleane, till some friend bring him a glasse, or he himselfe looke in one of purpose, then is his ouglinesse quickly discouered, and hee is ashamed of his former deformity; so fareth it with a man in sinne, hee knoweth nothing, nor feeleth his owne wretchednesse, till the law of God acquaint him with his miserie, and shew him the ougly and bespotted face of his transgressions: yea, to bee loathsome and abominable, foule as any vile Lepers vnder the Law. Yea, the law of God pleades as it were in Gods behalfe: and saith, as in *Isay 7. 13. Is it a small thing for you to grieve me, but you will also grieve my God?* This is the second vse of the Law, not onely to shew vs what sin is but also to discouer the greatnesse and hainousnesse of the sinne: and what a fearfull estate wee remaine in vnder the same, with the vengeance and punishments that must and will ensue vpon it, if wee continue in the fearefull estate thus presented before vs.

Vse 3.

The third vse of the Law of God is, that *It shewes in particular one to bee a sinner*; a great and grieuous sinner in the sight of God, so that the law of God doth not onely shew a man generally what is sinne, or how grieuous and contagious



contagious a thing sinne is, but it also shewes a man that he himselfe is a sinner, a great and manifest offender against the Maiestie of a great God, so that a man must not bee contented with the first or second dutie, but come particularly vnto himselfe, or else the Law will follow him at the heeles with *Tues homo*, and make him ashamed of his wickednesse, or vnwillingnesse to bee discouered. It will doe as *Nathan* did to *Dauid*, at first hee began with Parables, and layed open not onely a sinne, but the hainousnesse of the sinne: but at last hee came neerer, and in plain termes said, *Tues homo*, So doth the Law of God deale with all sinners, and neuer leaueth them till they apply it particularly to themselves, and be able or willing to say as *Dauid* saith, *Psal. 51. 3. Against thee, against thee onely haue I sinned, and done this euill in thy sight, &c.* *Psal. 51. 3.*

The fourth Vse of the Application of the Law of God Vse 4<sup>th</sup> is, That it shewes a man what a *Pisious estate* hee is in by reason of his sinne, and that hee is a grieuous transgressour in the sight of God, for the Law pleades and shewes Gods cause, that hee is present at all times, in all places, and hath no respect of persons; but reprooues all, shewing, that we are subiect to vengeance, but by the meanes of Christ, so that the Law of God workes these effects in a man.

First, *The feare of Damnation*, many a man can in a brauerie scorne death, and set little by any torture, but at last hee bursts out with an old saying in a Father: *Non mori sed Damnari metuo*, I am not affraid to die, but I am affraid to be damned; I am not affraid of the paines of death, but I am affraid of the paines of Hell.

Secondly, *Shame in a man*: for continuing in filchinesse, by committing such sinnes, whereby hee knowes he hath offended God, as *Rom. 6. 21.* the Apostle askes, *What fruit had you then of those things whereof you are now ashamed, &c.* so that the Law of God will bring great shame vpon

Luk. 18. 13.

vs for our sinnes, it will make a man loathe to be knowne, and affraid to looke vp to heauen as the Publican, *Luke 18. 13.* But the Publican standing a farre off, would not so much as lift up his eyes to heauen to pray: So the Law will shame vs and make vs affraid of God, and of our selues.

Lam. 5. 16.

Thirdly, *Griefe and sorrow for the losse of God by reason of our sinnes*: yea, the feare of this losse makes vs cry out as it is, *Lament. 5. 16.* The Crowne of our head is fallen, woe vnto vs that wee haue sinned; Oh how many passages are there in the Psalmes, of griefe, vexation of minde, and trouble of Conscience, yea, shedding of teares and such like, for the sinning against God, and this not onely in the person of *David*, but in the behalfe of the Church of God, and to shew euery Christian, what a dangerous estate hee is in, that continueth in his wickednesse against God, and offenderth him by his sinne.

Micah.

Fourthly, *Desire of Reconciliation*, for as *Micah, Iudg. 17. 2.* could not be quiet though hee had the money, and brought it; as long as hee thought his mothers curse lay heauy vpon him, but sought by all means to be reconciled, so fareth it with a man vnder sinne, after the Law hath told him what curse and vengeance hee is subiect vnto; O how can hee bee quiet or at peace, though hee bring all the sacrifices in the world, if hee be not reconciled to God and his Word. If the Law of God hath once wrought vpon a man, that hee may see in what a desperate estate hee stands, then of all other things in the world, hee most desires to be reconciled to Christ.

Thus the Law makes a man fit to receiue Christ, that before knew not what it meant, for by shewing a man his sin, the greatnesse and grieuousnesse of the same, by making a man accuse himselfe, and confesse in what an estate hee is in: as farre as damnation, feare to lose God, shame to be in so desperate an estate, and a longing after the quietnesse of his soule, and purchasing the peace of conscience: considering

dering the Law cries out vpon him with a loude voice, how hee hath incurred the wrath of God : then hath hee no other refuge, but to flie vnto Christ, and by his meanes to desire reconciliation with God, which must needs bee so, after the sight of his sinne: and this is the vse of the Law for the vnregenerate man.

Now in a Regenerate man there are three vses of the Law, in Application thereof. First, *To keepe downe his Pride*, that hee may not swell, nor bee any wise puffed vp with his speciall graces and gifts. So St. Paul confelles, *2. Cor. 12. 7. And lest I should be exalted out of measure, there was giuen vnto me a pricke in the flesh, &c.* for though wee be in the state of Grace, and may presume of many comforts and priuiledges belonging to our election, yet lest wee be puffed vp and ouer presumptuous with opinion of the state wee are in, the Law can keepe vs downe, and make vs looke vpon the blacke feet of our frailtie and corruption, as if wee were still vnder the curse of God. It is read of the Peacocke, that in the midst of her pride and spreading of her glorious tayle, all is suddenly abated vpon the casting her eyes vpon her blacke feet : So let the proudest boaster of his owne righteousness, or the priuiledges of a Christian, looke downe vpon his sinnes which the Law may shew him, and hee will quickly hang downe the head and bee deiected in countenance.

1  
Vse of the Law.

The second vse of the Law to a man Regenerate, is *To keepe him fast vnto Christ, as the onely meanes of his salvation*; for the Law doth not onely shew vs that wee bee seruants of sinne, and foes vnto Christ, but euen then when wee are in the state of Grace and subiect to many temptations, that yet wee are in a fearefull plight; yea, the Law shewes vs plainly, that wee are vnder sinne, and so sinners, and subiect to the condemnation of sinne, then is there no other refuge, but to flie vnto Christ, and keepe fast vnto his Promises and Passion, Merits and Redemption, that so

2  
Vse of the Law.



the soule may still from his high perfections fetch matter of supply continually vnto her owne imperfections.

3

Vse of the  
Law.

*Psal.* 119.

Obiect.

Answer.

A third vse of the Law is, *To bee a marke vnto vs for a godly life*, for Directions to liue according to the will of God: as the Prophet *Isaiah* in many places shewes: and *David*, *Psal.* 119. *Lux tua lucerna Pedibus: Thy Law is a lanterne to my feet, &c.* as if wee were to be lighted and directed in our way, But are wee not free from the Law? I answer, wee are free from the burden and vengeance of the Law, but not from the obedience, so farre forth as it is a patterne for our liues, and wee are bound in conscience to obserue the same, so neere as possibly all our indeauours can attaine vnto, wherein no man shall bee blamed of coming short of the marke, if his aime and leuell bee to hit it: So againe, wee are freed from Jewish Ceremonies, and not bound to *finish* them as they were a burden vnto vs, & onely a type of Christ, but where the Law tyes us to a holinelle and strietnesse of life, where it shewes vs what sinne is, and the deformitie of the same; or what is pertinent to saluation, wee are bound to obserue and make it a patterne for our liues, so then the Law not only driues vs to see our sinnes, but to acknowledge them, as *1. Iohn* 1:9. *If wee acknowledge our sinnes, hee is iust and faithfull to forgive vs our sinnes, and cleanse vs from all iniquitie.* There is then a necessitie of leading a holy life, for all such as looke for that blessednesse to come; this lesseon the Law must teach, and direct vs and guide vs in the way; For as a man who hath a long iourney to goe, and onely hath a generall knowledge of the place where hee must rest and abide, had need of particular directions to bring him thither, with more safetie and lesse perill and danger: So saith it with vs in this world, wee can all say, wee must goe to heaven, but cannot leade a holy life which must bring vs thither, nor know wherein it consists, vnlesse the Lawe teach vs, and shew the way to practise those excellent rules demon-

*1. Iohn* 1:19.

Man is a  
iourney.

strated

*To a Regenerate man.*

Strated for the rule and square of our life. Lo<sup>e</sup> then you  
haue seene of what an excellent vse the Law is, both to  
the man Regenerate and Vnregenerate : The next  
thing must bee to shew you the vse of  
the Gospell.

\*  
\*  
\*

---

L E C T. II.

---

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
LIBRARY  
540 EAST 57TH STREET  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60637  
U.S.A.

1972





## LECT. II.

# THE VSE OF THE Gospell.

ROM. I. 16.

*For I am not ashamed of the Gospell of Christ, for it is the power of God vnto saluation, to euery one that beleaueth, to the Iew first, and also to the Greeke.*



EE remembred you the last day, that to apply Christ vnto vs there must bee two workes ; First a worke of the Law, secondly, a worke of the Gospell, a worke of the Law to humble vs, and a worke of the Gospell to comfort vs, and to raise vs vp. Now because these two workes depend one vpon another, this is the order that the worke of the Law must alwayes goe before the worke of the Gospell : First, a man must be humbled by the Law, before hee bee fit to be comforted by the Gospell, and so whosoever thou bee, neuer looke to finde any true worke of the Gospell, till thou haue first felt the true worke of the Law, till thou hast beene humbled for thy sinnes, and searched thy owne estate by the bright shining lampe of the Law of God, neuer looke  
that

Luk. 4. 18.

that the Gospell will bring peace vnto thee vntill then, Christ himselfe saith, *Luk. 4. 18.* that hee was sent, *For to preach the Gospell to the poore, that hee should heale the broken-hearted, that hee should Preach deliuerance to the Captiues, &c.* So that you see the Gospell must be published to the poore, to the broken-hearted, for till a man bee poore in spirit, broken-hearted for his sinnes, Christ is not sent to proclaime comfort vnto him. It is a ground in Law, *Quod ante sententiam dasam non licet appellare*, a man may not appeale before sentence bee giuen, or that a man bee

Application.

condemned in open Court, so there is no appealing vnto the court of the Gospell vntill hee bee condemned in the Court of the Law: thus the worke of the law still goeth before the worke of the Gospell. As wee see in nature that

Sicke man.

a man must bee sicke, before hee bee healed, so before a man hath Christ to heale him, hee must be sicke, yea deadly sick of sinne, yea, of his owne sinne, and then Christ will come and put his body vpon his, and apply some plaister of his blood for curing of him. And so whatsoeuer thou bee, neuer looke for a worke of the Gospell, till first thou

Corrupt sore.

hast felt the worke of the Law. If a man haue a corrupt and dangerous sore in his flesh, if hee would bee cured, or preuent the mischiefe of a gangrene, hee must prepare himselfe to endure both trouble, paines, and many other inconueniences, hee must first indure the lancing of it, then the cutting and squising out the filthy matter and corruption, then diuers corrasives to cut out the Vlcer; and lastly, if need bee, searing and cauterising before the healing plaisters bee applyed; Euen so must a man doe in the healing of his sinnes; First, before hee obtaine a pardon, or be comforted with the hope of Redemption, the Law must take him in hand, search his frailtie and corruption, lance his sinnes, squise out the corruption of nature, make him roare and crye againe and againe with the smart of his wounds: and the gentle Cataplasmes of the Gospell, may be applyed, and the comforts of remission ministred vnto him from the Phylitian and Surgion of our soules Christ Iesus,

Iesus, and this is the worke of the Gospell. Now from the worke of the Gospell three things are to be found out:

1. *What the Gospell is.*
2. *What it workes in vs.*
3. *In what manner it workes.*

First then, the Gospell is, *That part of the word of God, which containeth a most happy and welcome message of two things:*

1. *That Mankinde is fully Redeemed by the death of Christ.*
2. *That all who will repent and beleene shall be partakers of it.*

This is the happy and glad tydings of the Gospell, by which wee vnderstand, that there is deliuerance and Redemption by meanes of Christ: and that wee may know who be thus pritiuledged; so that in the Gospell two things are to be considered;

1. *What is the benefite of the Gospell.*
2. *Vpon what Condition?*

Now the speciall and maine thing that is promised in the Gospell is, *Redemption*, that is, life and saluation by the meanes of Christ, this I say is the speciall worke of the Gospell. There are many comforts in the Gospell, many promises of God offered vnto vs: the conquest of sinne, death and hell, the forsaking of the world, but the speciall maine thing is Life, Saluation and Redemption by Christ, as St. Paul brings it, *Rom. 1. 16. For I am not ashamed of Rom. 1. 16. the Gospell of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto saluation, &c.* and *2. Tim. 1. 10.* hee sayes, *who hath abolished 2. Tim. 1. 10. death, and brought life and immortalitie to light through the Gospell:* and *Act. 6. 10.* sayes hee, *send for Peter, hee shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe*; so that you see the speciall and the maine thing in the Gospell is Life and Saluation.

This being so, two vses are so made of the Gospell, Vse 1.  
First, *To see what euery man ought, or is required to doe by*  
the



1. Thess. 4, 18.

1. Pet. 1, 8.

Wildernesse  
passage.

*the Gospell*, To renounce the world, and the vanities of life, and renew our estate by the benifite of Christs death, laying hold of him by Faith, whereby at last wee shall bee sure of our Redemption which bringeth life and saluation: as 1. *Thess.* 4. 18. the Apostle sayes, *Wherefore comfort your selues one another with these words*, What words? to bee exhorted to holineste, innocencie, loue, labour, moderate mourning for the dead, to know the end of the Resurrection, all which and many other, are comprised in the Gospell, and tend to saluation. So 1. *Pet.* 1. 8. *Wee* (saith hee) *Reioyce with ioy unspeakable and glorious, to bee in hope of eternall life*; So as I haue sayed, you see by this, the first vſe wee may make of it, is to labour and indeauour for life euerlasting and saluation, neuer regarding the afflictions and troubles of this life, which endure not, and are not comparable vnto that crowne, such shall receiue who strue as they ought; For though there bee paine and trouble in the way, yet there is much comfort and peace at the end of the journey. I make no question but the passing of the children of Israel through the Wildernesse into the land of *Canaan*, was a type of Celestial *Ierusalem*, for as they endured many troubles, wants, & distresses in that Wildernesse, famine, drought, heate, tedious and wearisome iourneys, not without repining and murmuring, before they came into the land of *Canaan*, yea, when they were ready to enter and take possession, there was warres, feare, Giants, Iron gates, and high walls in their way, &c. Euen so doe and must Gods children goe through the wildernesse of this world ere they come to heauen and life euerlasting, many afflictions, much sadnes of heart, pouertie, scornes, despights, weaknesse, passions, repining and many murmurings against God himselfe, yet at last the promises of the Gospell, and hope of eternall life, makes their ioy glorious and unspeakable, and they enter into this Celestial *Canaan*, maugre all the opposition of principalities and powers, and all their spirituall enemies: whilst hope beares them vp, and they beleue they shall haue a blessed issue of  
all

all their troubles and afflictions in the end. For as a man passing ouer a deepe and dangerous riuer into some delicate meadow full of varietie of good things, endureth all the stormes, and perillous blasts of winde, or threatening of the tempest, in hope of the possession of the pleasures of the place. so saith it with such who meane to make vse of the Gospell: the hope of eternall life and saluation, must extinguish all feares of our dangerous passages in this world, and overcome all difficulties for our better coming to heauen, and this bee said of the first vse, seeing life and saluation are thus proposed vnto vs by the Gospell of Iesus Christ. The other vse wee haue to make, or worke wee haue to doe, is to know how wee may compass this; and what wee must practise to attaine it, in brieft this must bee done by

### *Faith and Repentance.*

For the first of these, Faith is so excellent a thing, and so absolutely needfull to attaine the priuiledges of the Gospell, as without this wee can doe nothing: and vntill this be lost or weakened, wee are safe and comfortable in all estates. For, as though a man fall into the hands of theenes, *Man in feare,* although they rob and spoile him of all hee hath, yea, leaue him starke naked in a wilderness to winde and weather, yet if they take not away his life, there is some hope of recouerie, and a man may bee restored againe to a former estate, and labour to get more wealth, so saith it with Gods children in the wilderness of this world, although they are robbed, spoiled, and bereaued of earthly blessings, denied honour, riches, preferment; yea, left naked as it were in the Sunne, yet as long as faith remaines, and that they are constant in the beleefe of the promises of the Gospell, all other difficulties are overcome by this grace, and life euermlasting which surmounteth all the rest, attained vnto at the last: how should euery one of vs then labour to pray for it, to nurse and entertaine this so excellent and profitable

jewell

Heb. 11.

Jewell of faith: to liue by it, stand by it, walke by it, and doe and suffer all things in faith (as our forefathers of blessed memorie) many of them haue done. The commendation thereof, with the many rare effects thereof is excellently set downe, *Heb. 11.* all which being a depth beyond that compasse wee now intend to wade into: Wee will by your patience leaue to intreate of it now, and come to that wee especially intend, which is the second thing required of vs for the attaining of life and saluation through Iesus Christ, which is,

## Repentance.

2. King. 5. 3.  
Naamans  
Maide.

If you reade, 2. King. 5. 3. you shall finde what *Naamans* little maide said: *Would to God my Lord were with the Prophet that is in Samaria, hee would soone deliuer him of his leprosie*: so saith the Gospell vnto vs; Oh that you would come vnto Christ, seeke after him by a liuely faith and true repentance for your sinnes, hee would deliuer you from the threatning of the Law, and release you of those impossible conditions which there you are bound vnto; hee would conquer death and hell for your sake, and pay the ransom for your sinnes, and in the end by his Redemption bring you vnto life euerlasting. Thus must wee needs flie or refuge vnto the death and passion of Christ. I confesse that there is both life and death in the Law, as there is Saluation and Redemption in the Gospell; but the Law (as I said) bindes vs vnto conditions which wee can neuer performe, whereas the Gospell proposes life and saluation vpon more easie tearmes, *Then doe and liue*; or *Doe not, and perish*: onely to beleue and repent, and runne vnto Christ, and hee will heale vs of our leprosie.

This then is the difference betwixt the Law and Gospel; The Law proffers life and saluation vnto vs, if wee can keepe the Law and neuer sinne against God. The Gospell giues vs hope of Life and Saluation, though wee cannot performe



performe the Law, so wee belecue and repent, which are farre easier conditions then actuall holinesse, tying vs strictly to the obseruation of the commandement, according vnto the spirituall meaning of the same: so you see how the Gospell proffers vs life and saluation vpon farre more easie termes then the Law doth; which should make vs so much the more diligent to see into the mysteries of the Gospell, where so great priuiledges are granted vnto vs, and admire that depth of wisdom that hath thus tempered the seueritie of the Law towards vs, euen when death was in the pot.

*Of this there be two vses.*

*First, that euery Christian must indeauour to keepe Vse 1.*  
*himselfe from sinne, to liue well, and labour in the*  
*practise of a holy life; But if hee fall and sinne by weaknesse*  
*and frailtie, and faile in his course and race running, then*  
*hee must flie vnto Iesus Christ; Beleue the promises of*  
*the Gospell, bee of good comfort in the Redemption of*  
*his soule; and remember that which Saint Paul saith,*  
*Rom.7. The good which I would doe, I doe not; and the Rom.7.*  
*euill which I would not doe, that doe I.*

*Secondly, That wee must take heed that wee liue not Vse 2.*  
*in notorious knowne sinne, for the world is so full of wic-*  
*kednesse and impietie, that many dare say, what though*  
*I sinne thus and thus, yet by repentance I hope to bee ius-*  
*tified. Yea, many grosse swearers, lyers, adulterers, and*  
*such like, can prophane godlinesse in this manner; I hope*  
*for all this to goe to heauen as well as the best, Christ*  
*said hee came to save, not to destroy the world, and such*  
*like. But the true Christian onely hee may make a com-*  
*fortable vse of the Gospell, and apply these speeches to*  
*the comfort of his soule; not the other. And therefore*  
*in the name of God let vs apply our selues vnto the search*  
*of these things now whilst it is called to day: and whilst*  
*the time of saluation endure: for it now we neglect our*  
*time,*

Market  
cheapniage.

time, though wee should giue a thousand worlds for it, wee cannot haue it here after this life. If a man come to the market and cheapen such things as hee hath need of, and yet will not goe to the price of them, he must returne without them; euen so, seeing wee heare at what price God hath set life and saluation, that they are not to bee purchased, but at the price of Faith and Repentance; and that God will not let them goe at a lower rate, let vs resolve that they will not bee gotten otherwise, so that if wee meane not to come to the price; or cannot come vnto Faith and Repentance, wee must bee content to goe home againe without Life and Saluation. And thus much generally for the conditions of the Gospell.

Now for the Particulars in Repentance, there are many worthy heads to be considered: as,

1. *The Necessitie of it, wee cannot bee saued without it.*
2. *The Order of it with other Graces.*
3. *The Nature of it.*
4. *The Causes of Repentance.*
5. *The Time of it.*
6. *The Practise of it.*
7. *The Less of it.*
8. *The Cases of Repentance, &c.*
9. *Contraries vnto it.*
10. *Increase of it.*

## I. NECESSITIE OF Repentance.

First for the Necessitie thereof, *Repentance is such a necessary grace, as no man can bee saued without it, for there bee but two estates wherein euery man liuing may bee saued, the state of Innocencie, and the state of*

*Penitencie.*

*Penitencie*, vnto which belongs the Grace of Faith. Now no man liuing euer after the fall of *Adam* can be saued in the state of *Innocencie*, because wee bee all sinners and grieuous sinners before the Maiestie of God, so then hee that will bee saued must bee saued in the state of *Penitencie*.

There bee but two pleas that any man can make when hee shall stand before God in feare of Iudgement. Either *Non peccauit Domine*, Lord I haue not sinned: or *Domine peccauit*, Lord I haue sinned, *Sed poenitet peccasse*, it repents me that I haue sinned and offended. Now no man liuing can stand before God in the strength of this first plea, *Non peccauit*: Lord I haue not sinned: For *Iam. 3. 2.* it is written in many things wee sinne all, and *1. Iohn 1. 8.* If wee say wee haue no sinne wee deceive our selues: And *Salomon* in his prayer hath it thus, *1. King. 8. 46.* if they sinne against thee, for there is no man that sinneth not. So then, seeing no man liuing can lay hold on the former plea, *Non Peccauit*, let vs all lay hold on the latter, *Peccauit, sed poenitet peccasse*, we haue sinned and offended, but it repents vs that wee haue so done. And thus wee see that Repentance is such a sauing grace, as no man liuing can bee saued without it, and the Scriptures also agree to this thing, *Act. 11. 18.* Then hath God also granted Repentance vnto life, &c. whereby wee see that no man can come to life, but by Repentance, *2. Pet. 3. 9.* hee sayes, Not willing that any should perish, But that all should come to Repentance; so then if a man will not perisht in his sinnes, the onely way is, to come to Repentance when God willeth him, *2. Tim. 2. 25.* he sayes to this purpose: If God peradventure will giue them Repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; by all which is apparant, that no man can come out of the snares of Death, but by Repentance, and so wee may conclude that Repentance is a necessarie Grace, without which we cannot come to life and Saluation. Of this there be diuers

*Iam. 3. 2.*

*1. Iohn 1. 8.*

*1. King 8. 46.*

*Act. 11. 18.*

*2. Pet. 3. 9.*

*2. Tim. 2. 25.*



## Vses.

Vse 1.

First, seeing Repentance is such a necessarie Grace, *That wee renew our Repentance daily*, for so farre as a man is from Repentance, so farre hee is from the Grace of life. Now in Repentance wee must not take this libertie to suppose that some sober and sad thoughts (as wee tearme them) of Repentance will serue the turne: O what doe wee in such slight accounts, but euen cast away the saluation of our owne soules? For as we heare, Repentance is such a necessarie grace, that whosoever casts away Repentance, casts away the saluation of his owne soule. Wee reade *Ruth 4.5.6.* that when offer was made to the kinsman to redeeme the land, hee was contented till it came to the purchasing of *Ruth* the Moabitish woman at the hands of *Naomi*, then hee gaue ouer and resigned his interest to *Boas*: euen so it is with a number of men, they would willingly come to heauen to purchase the field, that is, come to the happy estate of saluation and the kingdome of God, but they will not haue it at the hands of Repentance, they will not be humbled for their sinnes, they will not forsake the world, this is the reason why a number will lose eternall life, rather then forsake the pleasures of the world, and these sinfull vanities which continue so short a time: and produce nothing but bitterneffe and vexation of minde in the end.

*Ruth. 4. 5, 6.**Ruth.*

Vse 2.

A second vse is, that seeing Repentance is such a necessarie grace without which none can be saued: *That all those who haue not alreadie repented, must now repent, if they desire to come vnto God to bee saued*: and behold God in his glorie, or looke to stand justified before Christ: seeing that without this Repentance, there is no promise that doth belong vnto thee. Indeed. if a man care not for these things, saluation and eternall life, if hee doe not desire to be saued, to see God on his glorie, stand before

before Christ, &c. then let him liue as hee list, and inioy the pleasures of this world. But if hee care for these things, looke after the glorie of the life to come, desire the benefice of Saluation, then let him repent, if hee haue not repented already, lest it come too late, and a worse thing befall him; for it is a dangerous thing to withstand and let slip the fit seasons of Repentance, when Gods extraordinary calls and mercies inuite vs thereunto: and when hee inlightens the eyes to see better things. As *Act. 17.30.* the holy Ghost shewes: *And the times of this ignorance God wincked at, but now commandeth all men euerywhere to repent*; The meaning of this is, that how-soeuer hee did lesse regard this in the times of Ignorance, when men tooke no care of these things, yet now that they know from the light of the Gospell, what is to be done, euery man must repent and come vnto God. It must be our care to prouoke our selues vnto Repentance for our sinnes, to pray God that wee may be healed and humbled, as wee shall heare hereafter. Euery sinne that wee commit in this world must haue a Repentance, for if wee repent not here on earth, wee shall not repent either in Heauen or hell; And therefore seeing Repentance is so necessarie, let vs now repent, if wee haue not repented already: for delayes are dangerous, and repentance is not in our power; besides that, diuers accidents may come which may hinder vs in this great worke of Grace.

A third vse is, seeing Repentance is so necessarie a vse 3.  
grace; *If a man haue not truly Repented, hee must seeke to mend it*; wee see in Nature, that if a bone be set awry, Bone awry.  
the Surgeon hath no way to helpe it, but to breake it againe, and to set it right: And euen so must a man doe by his Repentance; if hee haue not truly repented his sinnes, hee must renew his Repentance, conceiue new griefe, shed fresh teares, and practise all the good Rules of Penitencie. Wee see in reason, if a man come to a great ditch to leape ouer, if hee misse his life, yet hee will goe A Ditch.

backe againe and againe, and take his best aduantage, rather then hee will fall in the midst : Euen so must we doe, rather then fall into the midst of Hell, of eternall death, to be damned with the deuill and his angels ; Wee must be contented to set vpon our Repentance againe and againe, goe choose and practise new griefe, sorrow and compunction, rather then to perish for euer.

## II.

## THE ORDER OF REPENTANCE

with other Graces.

The second thing wee are to consider in the doctrine of Repentance, is, The Order of it compared with other Graces ; For this I conceiue, that in order of Nature, *Faith is before Repentance, but ordinarily, Repentance shews it selfe before Faith in the life of a Christian.* Euen as when a candle is brought into a roome, the candle light first shewes it selfe before the candle come into the roome ; though it bee true there was the candle before there was light : so it is with these two Graces, *Faith and Repentance*, first there must be Faith before there can bee Repentance, and yet commonly wee see the fruites of Repentance before wee can see the fruites of Faith. And so they are vsually so placed in the Scriptures, *Act. 20.21. Repentance towards God, and faith towards our Lord Iesus.* And *Heb.6.1.* saith hee ; *Not laying againe the foundation of Repentance from dead workes, and of Faith towards God.*

Now that Faith is before Repentance in order of Grace, it is made probable by this one Reason, in stead of many. Repentance, as wee know, is a sanctified Grace of God ; for no man can repent vnlesse hee hate sinne, and no man can hate sinne vnlesse hee be sanctified. But there can be no sanctified Graces in a Christian without Faith, *Heb. 11.6. But without faith it is impossible to please God, for hee that commeth to God, must beleue that hee is :*

and

Candle.

*Act. 20.21.*

*Heb. 6.1.*

Argument.

*Heb. 11.6.*



And that hee is a rewarder of those who diligently seek him. So then wee see that there can bee no Repentance without faith : and Faith in order of nature is before Repentance. So it may bee a generall comfort to a man, that howsoever hee doe not feele Faith in himselfe, yet hee may assure himselfe that hee hath Faith, if hee have Repentance for his sinnes, and a desire to reforme himselfe, from a sorrow and shame, that hee hath thus long offended God ; because there is no Repentance without Faith. Therefore be assured whosoever thou art, if there bee a Repentance and Humiliation for sinne, make no doubt of thy faith, ( though ( as I said ) thou dost not feele it ) seeing Faith goes before Repentance.

Now for the better consideration of this, wee must know, *The Difference betweene the workes of Faith and true Repentance.* First, the Act or worke of true Faith is generally to beleue the promises of the Gospell, that all men who repent and beleue shall bee saued. The second Act or worke of Faith is to beleue that the promises bee proposed, but with a condition, If I my selfe can beleue and repent, I shall bee saued. Now when a man hath this worke of Faith in himselfe, this makes him labour to repent his sinnes, to beleue in Christ, and when hee hath repented and beleued ; then followes the great act of Faith, whereby a man beleuees, that his sinnes are pardoned, and his soule shall bee saued : and so some acts of Faith goe before Repentance, and some follow after.

1  
Act of Faith.

2  
Act of Faith.

3  
Act of Faith.

Then, that Repentance shewes it selfe before Faith in the life of a Christian, is most euident and plaine. For first a man must needes bee humbled for his sinnes, hee must groane vnder the burden of them, and crie to heauen against them, before hee can lay hold by Faith, that they bee pardoned and remitted : So wee see *Dauid*, 2. *Sam.* 12. 13. hee was humbled for his sinne, before hee could perceiue and perswade himselfe that his sinne was

2. *Sam.* 12. 13.

pardoned, or receiue comfort. *I haue sinned against the Lord, and then follows, The Lord also hath put away thy sinne, thou shalt not die.* Many are the examples in the booke of God, where wee may see how the most part of the people of God were well and truly humbled by Repentance before Faith raised them. But here some may say, *How comes it to passe then that some haue bene comforted by Faith who were but slenderly if at all humbled by Repentance, as wee see in Lydia, Act. 16. 14. whose heart the Lord opened, that shee attended the things that were spoken?* And in the Eunuch, Act. 8. 39. of whom it is said presently vpon his hearing of the word from the mouth of Philip, *And hee went on his way reioycing.*

Obiect.

Act. 16. 14.

Answer.

I answer, this difference ariseth of this; First, in some there is apprehension of the ouglinesse of sinne so much, as nothing can fixe their conceits and imaginations another way: in which case though comfort come, it cannot so soone make impression. Secondly, some doe so exceedingly apprehend the Punishment due to sinne, that though Promises come, pardon be proclaimed, yet they remaine heavy and lumpish still, not being able to raise vp themselves, and set their Faith aworke to beleue so good newes; though they haue repented of their sinnes. Where againe, in the other; First, there is a strong apprehension of the greater, which is the mercie of God beyond all, and a lesser sight of their owne sinne, which makes their act of Faith so much the more easie. And secondly, there is in them a large apprehension of Gods offering of redemption in Christ, and saluation in his blood, which with good affection they receiue and so are comforted: So that the case is, according as it falleth out diuersly in the Conuersion of a sinner; In whom there are two apprehensions; first, apprehension of the greatnesse and guiltinesse of his sinnes; Secondly, an apprehension of the mercy of God offering of Redemption and Reconciliation in the death of Christ. Now because it falls out in the conuersion of a sinner, that sometimes

hee

hee apprehends more strongly the one, and sometimes the other : that so accordingly is his ioy or sorrow great or small. And therefore if a man in his first conuersion, haue a more strong apprehension of his owne sinnes, and all his thoughts is carried vpon the beholding of his miseries and wofull estate, this makes him to lament and mourne bitterly, many a day together : but if at his first conuersion, with a sight of sinne, a man behold such an infinite sea and depth of Gods mercies, as is farre beyond all his sinnes : and the infinite merit of the death and sufferings of the Sonne of God ; Euen as Flakes of fire falling into the Ocean sea, are quenched with the abundance of water : so all his sinnes falling into the maine sea and Ocean of Gods mercie in Christ, are all couered and put out : so as his heart is filled with ioy and gladnesse as it fell out with *Lydia* and the

Flakes of fire.

*Eunuch, Act. 8. and  
others.*

---

LECT. III.

---







# LECT. III.

## III.

# THE NATURE OF Repentance.

ISAIAH. I. 16.

*Wash yee, make you cleane, put away the Evill of your doings, from before mine eyes, Cease to doe evill, Learn to doe well, &c.*



Have read in the stories of this time, that they which travell into Virginia and Guiana, or among those savage and desolate countries, carry a Tinderboxe with them, and when night comes they make a fire, or light vp a candle, to see where to sleepe and rest the more safely. Euen so God hath left vs his holy Word, to bee as a tinderboxe vnto vs, to strike fire and light vp a candle, to direct vs through the darke wilderness of this world, so as they who will see the mercies of God, must

Tinder-boxe.

must take the booke of God into their hands, and as by striking of fire the trauellor is the safer, and hath the meanes of light to direct how, and when to rest, so must wee raise a light out of Gods word, to conuey vs home to heauen; Therefore of all other things, let vs take heed that wee doe not despise this kindnesse and goodnesse of the Lord, whose bountie leades vs vnto Repentance: of which I spake the last day. First, wee haue heard the Necessitie of it. Secondly, the Order of it with other graces: and now in the third place, wee are to treat of *The Nature of Repentance*; and of this the rather, because there is a kinde of Faith and Repentance which deceiues vs in their Nature, for there are a number of men and women, that haue a shew of Repentance, and thinke themselues in a good estate, and well enough, when indeed they are not, and haue but a meere shadow of Grace, so that wee may not bee deceived in a matter of such moment and weight, I haue thought it good to make it knowne vnto you, what is the true Nature of Repentance.

But before I shew you the true nature thereof, I will  
 I first rectifie the false account which the world hath of Repentance, some take repentance to bee but *some sorrow for sinne*, so that when the hand of God is vpon him, or that hee lies sicke, lame, or any way perplexed; if he then can vent some few sighes, and say, *Lord haue mercy vpon mee a sinner*: I am sorry that I haue offended, he supposeth it is Repentance: but this *Ahab* did and more: this *Judas* did with publike confession, yet neuer repented: so that if outward sorrow for sinne, or a sad looke, or a sigh or such like were true Repentance, what Reprobate is there almost in the world, but doth this and many a day? Yea, such as liue in grosse and knowne sinnes, can crie to God for mercie, and confesse their offences, and thinke they haue obtained a grace from God in so doing, seeming sorry for their sinnes, though yet they liue in knowne sinnes, as I said against their owne conscience,

and

1. King. 21. 17.  
 Math. 27. 9.



and continue presumptuously in their wickednesse ; Yea, how many thousands are there who neuer obtained any grace or mercy at all to bee sorry for their sinnes ? O how farre short are these men from Repentance ! to thinke that a little sorrow for sinne is it.

Againe, many thinke that the leaning of some notorious grosse sinne is Repentance, though the whole life bee still full of corruption and impietie. No, no, they are deceiued, for a man may leaue his grosse sinnes, and yet neuer repent ; yea, leaue them for a while, and yet returne to them againe : As you see how *Dauid* left his Adultery at the first, before God gaue him grace to repent, and desist a while from many sinnes after this : And yet was ouertaken againe foully in many things contriuing against *Uriah*. So then you see that a man may bee sorry for his sinne without repentance. 2

Againe, some thinke that every godly motion is Repentance, so that if a man haue but a thought of God, and desire of Grace, by and by it is Repentance : But this *Herod* had, and did many things after *Iohn Baptists* preaching gladly : This *Agrippa* had, when hee told *Paul*, *Thou almost persvadest mee to bee a Christian*. Thus many attaine vnto good motions, and haue a minde as it were to true Repentance, and yet come farre short of it : these be the counterfeites of Repentance. 3

Thus hauing heard Repentance what it is not ? let vs see Affirmatiuely what it is : *It is an absolute change of the whole man in purpose of heart and turning him to God and godlinesse, from his former courses and wicked life :* Definition of Repentance.  
So that it hath foure things in it ; First, it is a change of a man. Secondly, it is a change of the whole man. Thirdly, it is such a change as turneth him in purpose of heart from all sinnes. Fourthly, such a change as turneth a man from all sinnes vnto God.

First,

1

Rom. 12. 2.

Fire.

2. Tim.

1. Pet.

Jer. 3. 25.

First, *It is a change*, as wee may see *Rom. 12. 2.* And bee not conformed to this world, but bee you transformed by the renewing of your minde, And therefore where there is no change from the former naturall estate, there can be no Repentance; As bring fire into a roome, and it will make a change in the roome; it will make it light and warme, and sweet, &c. Euen so if a man truly repent, it will make a change in his heart, in his life, in his cariage, speeches and conuersation. It will make a proud man humbled, a Couetous man to bee liberall, a Drunkard to bee sober and temperate; and an Adulterer to bee chaste; stubbornnesse it will change into gentlenesse and affabilitie; to bee brieft, of impenitent, it will make one penitent: As *St. Paul* sayes of himselfe to *Timothie*, *I was a Blasphemer and a Persecuter*, but Lord thou shewest mercie, it is otherwise with mee now. So *1. Pet.* hee sayes, *Wee were as sheepe gone astray, but now wee are turned vnto the sheeheard and Bishop of our soules.* Therefore though men speake well, yet is this no true Repentance, vnlesse they be changed & renewed in their mindes, and in their liues. Wee see *Ierem. 3. 25.* There the people spake well, for they said, *Thou art my God and the guide of my youth*, and yet the Lord complaines of them: *Wee lye downe in our shame, and our confusion couereth vs; for wee haue sinned, wee and our fathers from our youth, euen to this day.* So that Repentance is a change.

2

Wine in a  
glasse.

Secondly, Repentance is not onely a change, but also *It is a change of the whole man*, not in one part, but in all and euery part, of the iudgement, will and affections, of the inward and of the outward man wholly diffused. As when one puts wine into a glasse where water is, it runnes into euery part thereof, and transformeth it selfe through all the water. So is it with the grace of Repentance, it doth not rest in one part, but it transferres it selfe into euery part of a man, it changeth the iudgement; it

changeneth

changeth the will, it changeth the affections, it changeth euery facultie both outward and inward, in all the parts and powers of soule and body. Wherefore if a man be changed in one part and not in another, it is not Repentance.

I but If a man must bee changed in euery part, then *Obiection.*  
there is a perfection in our Repentance, it may bee perfect.

To this I answer. There is a double or twofold perfection, First, *Of all the parts* to haue them changed: *Answer.*  
Secondly, *There is a perfection in euery part*; as we see in a childe, there is all the parts of a man in it: as hands, *A childe.*  
arines, legges and so forth, but there is not perfection in those parts, it is not come to the full strength and growth: onely this is attained by degrees through the nourishment it takes: So it is in the worke of Repentance, this makes a change in euery part, so that euery part is perfect in the part, though euery part be not come to perfection. *Augustine* makes it plaine, saith hee, when a man hath had sicknesse, and is recouered againe, there is health in all the parts, although hee be not so perfectly *Health.*  
recouered as to walke abroad, and haue not abilitie to doe this or that thing: and thus where there is true Repentance, there is a change in euery part, First, There is a change of the *Minde and Iudgement*, that whereas it *The change*  
did like well of sinne and approoue of it, and to say in *Repentance*  
defence thereof with *Ionas*, I did well to bee angry, I *workes*  
did well to sweare, I did well to lye, I did well to prophane the Sabboth, I did well to backbite my Neighbour, to deceiue and cozen, and such-like. When Repentance comes, it changeth all so, that whereas before one did like well of sinne, now one doth quite dislike and distaste it, and is ready to sling the first stone at it. See this in *Dauid*, *2.Sam. 24. 14.* hee thought hee had done *2.Sam. 24. 14.*  
well in causing to number the people. No body could haue perswaded him to the contrary: But when Repentance came, it made a change in his Iudgement, and  
made



made him confesse that *Hee had done very foolishly*. So *Paul* was of this minde, hee thought hee had done well in persecuting the *Saines*, and shutting them vp in Prison, in wasting and making a hauocke of the Church: doing of many things contrary to the *Saints*. But Repentance wrought a change in his iudgement: *Oh* (saith hee) *I did this ignorantly*: I did not know it was a sinne to doe so. Therefore where there is not a dislike of sin, but a delight in it, there is no true repentance; because Repentance so changes the iudgement, as it makes them say with the *Lepers*, *2. King.* *Wee doe not well to stay here so long, let vs goe and remooue, &c.* So Repentance will make men say, wee did not well to be angry, sweare, &c,

2. King.

2  
In the will.

1

So likewise *True Repentance makes a change in the Will*, both in regard of *sinnes past*, as likewise in respect of *sinnes to come*: First, for *sinnes past*, the will is so set against them, that if they were now to bee done, they would not for a world doe them. What would *David* haue giuen after his Repentance for his *Adulterie* and *murder*, that hee had neuer committed the same, yea any thing. What would not *Peter* haue giuen that hee had neuer denyed his Master? which made him shed so many teares. It is true, when sinne is once committed, all the powers in Heauen and Earth cannot vndoe it againe. Onely Repentance doth as much as may bee, to make sin no sinne in effect.

2

Secondly, *It makes a Change in regard of sinnes that are to come*, They would not doe any thing willingly that would offend God, or to grieue the holy Spirit: So wee see in *Iob 40.5.* *Once* (saith hee) *I haue spoken, but I will speake no more, yea twice, but I will proceed no further*, and *1. Pet. 4.3.* saith hee, *It is sufficient that we haue spent the time past after the lusts of the flesh*: and *Paul*, *Rom. 7.* sayes, *The good that I would doe that I doe not: and the euill I would not doe, that doe I.* As if he would say, I would not grieue the spirit: I would not offend God

Iob. 40.5.

1. Pet. 4.3.

Rom. 7.

God for a world, but my corruptions carry mee so vnto it, that I cannot choose: Therefore if there bee a willingness to sinne, there is no true repentance.

So likewise it makes a Change in the Affections. First, 3  
In the Affec-  
ons. whereas formerly sinne was our ioy and delight; Now wee sorrow for it, and it is grievous vnto vs. Secondly, 1  
2  
3 whereas before wee committed sinne with boldnesse, now wee are ashamed of it. Thirdly, whereas before we loued it, now wee hate it: So that it is cleere that there is a change made in the affections thereby: first to instance, whereas at first wee tooke delight and ioyed to sinne: now such does sorrow, mourne, and lament for it: as *Jerem. 31.* it is said, *I haue surely heard Ephraim lamenting, thou hast chastised mee and I was chastised.* And *Psal. 6.* David confesses that hee did water his couch with teares. *Chrysostome* on this place sayes well; If so Psal. 6. great a King did lament and weepe for his sinnes, so great a Prophet, and so holy a man did shed teares, and that not for an houre, but for a long time, not for a night, but many nights, not a drop or two, but he did water his bed with them: how much more ought wee to grieve and lament, and shed teares for our sinnes, that are a great many more. For the next, whereas before wee committed sinne with boldnesse, wee now become ashamed of it, and therefore if wee can sinne and not be ashamed of it, but beare it out with boldnesse of face, it is a signe our repentance is not true. By the contrarie, if when we haue committed sinne, wee are abashed and ashamed to looke any body in the face, so that wee could bee contented to liue in a Gaue or a dungeon, or some such secret place, after the fact, it is a good signe, saying, The time hath beene when I was so brutish and senslesse, that I cou'd haue beene contented to haue committed sinne in the sight of the Sunne with boldnesse, but now I shame to thinke of it, if it bee thus with vs, it is a signe of true repentance. As *Jeremie* in the person of the faithfull

Ddd

sayes,

Jer. 3. 23.

sayes, *Jerem. 3. 25. I lye downe in confusion, and wee conuer-  
our selues with shame.* So the *Publican* was ashamed,  
and durst not lift vp his eyes to heauen, but hee smote  
himselfe vpon the brest, and said, *The Lord bee mercifull  
to mee a sinner.* And lastly, whereas before wee tooke  
delight in sinne, now wee hate, detest, and abhorre it,  
whereas our delight was in the wayes of vanitie, and that  
the pleasures of sinne haue beene meate and drinke to vs,  
wee now begin to hate the delights of this life, euen as

2. Sam. 13. 13.

Ammon.

Thamar.

*Ammon, 2. Sam. 13. 13.* after hee had by inordinate  
loue desired his sister *Thamar*; did hate her after so much  
the more: So must wee deale with our best beloued sins,  
hate them as much or more, as euer wee formerly loued  
them. And therefore if so bee wee see in vs renewed and  
changed affections from that wee were, from euill to  
good, this is a signe of true Repentance, when such a  
change and alteration is wrought in our Inward Man.

2  
Change in the  
outward man.

Math. 21. 28.

Mary Magda-  
len.

Now, as Repentance makes a change in the Inward  
man: so doth it in the Outward also in our Actions: not  
onely renewing our heart, but our whole life, that wher-  
as in the best part thereof, wee haue done seruice vnto  
sinne, it maketh vs now doe seruice vnto Christ; yea,  
that wee neuer thought to doe: as in the Parable of the  
two sonnes: the one said, hee would not goe, yet after  
repentance hee went and did cleane contrary. So in the  
historic of *Mary Magdalen*, O Lord? how were all  
her actions changed, when shee was changed by repen-  
tance, shee that was wont to sit in glorie at sumptuous  
Feasts and banquets, leaues all now to sit downe at Iesus  
feete vpon the ground: Shee that was wont to clip and  
kisse her louers with wanton imbraces, left all to kisse the  
feet of her Saviour, shee that had curled her haire, and  
had dressed it with Pearle and costlinesse for wicked and  
incensing purposes, let it now hang loosely about her face  
and head to be a towell to wipe the feete of Iesus, shee that  
had wandring eyes, and thought vpon nothing but  
simples



smiles and pleasure, maketh them now a fountaine of teares to wash her Sauours feet. Her eares which were open to heare nothing but musicke and filthy talke, now are ready to heare Christ speaking vnto her : her feete which formerly carried her into vaine companie, are now the instruments to bring her into the house of God : and that tongue which before spake filthily, idly and loosely, is now imployed in the praises of God : and so forth for all her gesture and apparell, &c. O! what an alteration was here? what a change did Repentance worke, through soule and bodie in the inward & outward man. And thus must it worke vpon vs all, or else wee come not neere the nature of true Repentance. For true Repentance worketh vpon sinners in the same manner : The hands now take vp a Bible, and with as great delight reade the word of God, as they before followed their sports : the feete that carried the body to houses of iniquitie, are now as ready to carry them to the house of Christ : the Eares that were wont to hearken to lasciuious talke, and bee taken with amorous loue-songs, are now attentue to Sermons and the word of God. The eyes that were roulding about to meet with temptations, are now fixed on a Preacher, and haue a couenant made with them : In a word, the heart and affection that was fraughted with sinfull and idle fancies and motions, are now full of holy meditations, and busied with diuine exercises.

The third thing in the Nature of true Repentance is, *that wee must not onely bee changed in part, but wee must bee turned from all sinne* : as *Dauid saith, Psal. 119. Psal. 119 101. I haue refrained my feet from euery euill way : That I may keepe thy word* ; so that if wee turne from one sinne or from many sinnes, and not from all and euery sinne, it is not true repentance ; *Ahab and Indas* turned from one sinne, but not from all : hee repented of betraying his Master, but not of his other sinnes of couetousnesse, &c. therefore he fell into despaire. O but there is no man

3

Obiect.

James.

1. Iohn.

Answer.

1. Sam.

who liueth and sinneth not in some sinne or other: for St. James sayes: *In many things wee sinne all.* Vnto which it is added, 1. Iohn. *If wee say that wee haue no sinne in vs, wee doe but deceiue our selues, and the truth is not in vs.* How then can wee turne from euery sinne? I answer, *We must turne away from all sinne, though all sinne doe not turne away from vs:* but is ready to catch hold of and follow vs, so must wee deale with all sinne, as Samuel did with Saul. Samuel resolved to depart and went away from Saul: But Saul catcht hold of him and would not let him goe: So must wee depart from all sinne, in resolution and indeauour, part company, turne backe, look downe, and frowne vpon all: though it bee true that sin will pull vs backe, catch and lay hold vpon vs, stay vs against our will: this much is all wee can doe whilst wee dwell in these houses of clay.

4

Obiection.

Answer.

The fourth thing in the Nature of repentance is, That wee must not onely turne vnto God, as the Prophet Ieremie hath it; *O Israel! If thou returne, returne vnto me, saith the Lord.* I but how should wee turne vnto God? I answer, wee must not onely turne vnto God as our Sauour and our Redeemer, for so wee turne by faith, *but wee must turne to him as the guider and gouernour of our liues.* Because many are well contented to haue God their Sauour and Redeemer, who reiect him for the guide and gouernour of their liues.



## LECT. IIII.

### IIII.

# THE CAUSES OF Repentance.

ACT. 11.18.

*When they heard these things they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, then hath God also vnto the Gentiles granted Repentance vnto life.*



HE shewed vnto you the last day the true Nature of Repentance, lest any one should bee deceiued in a matter of so great moment, and thinke that hee hath this Grace, when indeed hee hath but a shew and shadow thereof: wherein wee considered foure things;

First, that Repentance was a change in a man. Secondly, that it was a change of the whole man. Thirdly, that it was such a change as made a man leaue and turne from all sinne. Fourthly, that it is such a change as turns a man from all sinne vnto God: As *Act. 26.20*, it is said, *That they should Repent and turne to God, and doe actes meete for Repentance.* So that repentance is a turning vnto God. By sinne a man is auerted and turned away from

*Act. 26.20.*



him, by Repentance a man turnes vnto God againe, as one willing to be gouerned and guided by him in all his courses: for vnlesse this bee, it can bee no true Repentance. The nature whereof is, as wee haue heard at large: It remaines in the next place that wee come to treat of *The causes of Repentance*, which are of three sorts.

1  
Cause of Re-  
pentance.

2.Tim.2.25.

Act.11.28.

Deut.4.29.

For the first, *The principall efficient cause is God*, for it is God onely who can make vs repent, no man can worke it, wee cannot compasse it our selues, but God must worke it by the graces of his holy Spirit: as *Paul* hath it, *2.Tim.2.25.* saith hee, *Proouing if God peradventure will giue them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.* Whereby hee prooues that God onely is the giuer of Repentance, and no good duty can bee performed vnlesse God stirre a man vp vnto the same: So acknowledged the Church of the Greekes, *Act.11.18.* *Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted Repentance vnto life,* And *Deut.4.29.* it is there said, in *Moses* exhortation, *Yet the Lord hath not giuen you an heart to perceiue, and eyes to see, and eares to heare vnto this day.* So that God is the principall cause of Repentance.

Phyicke.

Heb.12.17.

A number thinke that Repentance is a worke in a mans owne power, that it is like the Apothecaries Physick which a man may set in his window and take it as his stomacke serues him: So they thinke that Repentance may rest vpon a mans owne will; yea, many presume to say, that if they may haue but one houre to repent in before the day of death, it is as good as though they had had a whole yeare to thinke vpon it. But you see that Repentance is not in our power, it is a gift, a worke of God, so that wee cannot repent when wee will, but when God will: therefore it must bee our care to take repentance when God proffers it, and wills it. Looke in the story of *Esau*, *Heb.12.17.* hee once refused it, and sought it afterwards with teares, but could not obtaine his

his father to reuerse the blessing : much lesse could hee sue to God for mercy. So then, take heed of despising Gods mercy, for if a man will not take repentance when God offers it, hee may seeke it ; yea, seeke it with teares, and yet because he despised and neglected it, when it was offered vnto him, hee may goe without it. Therefore take notice, that the spirit is willing to worke life in thee, and breed good motions ; therefore doe thou take heed to cherish these good motions of repentance, holy thoughts and resolutions, lest when thou wouldest haue it, thou be refused.

The Papists who hold the doctrine of Free-will, say, P.P ? that if God make a motion of Repentance, it is in a mans owne power to repent, or not to repent, as if a man should shew a horse a bottle of Hay : that it is without doubt that by and by hee will runne after it ; so say they, let God make but the motion, by and by, man by the power of his owne Free-will, will runne to imbrace it, but the truth is, such is the estate of a sinner ; that hee is in a worse estate then a beast. For to come to their owne comparison of a Horse and Hay. First, hee must haue eyes to see the Hay, for if hee see it not, he cannot be hastie to runne after it, for *Caco nulla cupido*. Secondly, he must haue an appetite and stomacke to eate the Hay, which if hee haue not, hee will not bee hastie to runne after it, or haue a desire to eate it. Thirdly, besides his eyes and stomacke, hee must haue strength and iollitie, or else hee will neuer rise and runne after it, for although there bee eyes to see, and a desire to bee satisfied, yet if there be no strength to rise and catch it, hee is neuer the better. Now say that all these three bee in a horse, yet none of these are in a man, nor in a mans will, vntill God worke and fulfill them by his mightie power. For, first a man hath not eyes to see the good things of God, *Dent. Dent. 29.3.* 29.3. saith hee, *Yet the Lord hath not given you a heart to perceiue, and eyes to see, and eares to heare vnto this*

Bottle of Hay.

1

2

3

Phil. 2. 13.

Iohn 15. 5.

day. Secondly, man hath neither desire nor appetite till God worke it in him, as it is, *Phil. 2. 13. For it is God which worketh in you both the will and the deed,* (or to will and to doe) of his good pleasure. Thirdly, though wee had eyes to see good things, and will to delight in them, yet haue wee no strength and power to performe them vntill God will: as *Iohn 15. 5. For without mee you can doe nothing.* So then, this is the doctrine of Repentance, that if God worke not in a man these motions by his power, there is no repentance. Nay, we see God onely workes man vnto repentance by the power of his Spirit and Grace, so that hee is the first Cause of Repentance. Of which let this be

## The Vse.

Vse 1.

Iam. 1. 5.

That because the Efficient cause of Repentance is God onely, wee must say (as *St. Iames* saith) *If any man lacke wisdom, let him aske of God that giueth vnto all men liberally, &c.* So let vs say of Repentance, if any man lacke repentance, let him aske it of God, and hee will giue it him. It is said of the Rocke, *Psal. 78. 20. Behold hee smote the Rocke that the waters gushed out, and the streames ouerslowed, &c.* Euen so let vs pray God by the power of his Spirit, and grace to smite so hard vpon our rockie hearts, that by and by may gush out from vs floods of repentant teares.

Vse 2.

Secondly, let vs learne to take God at his offer, or else at another time wee may goe without it, and hauing it, let vs stirre vp our selues to be thankfull to God for it.

2

Cause of Repentance.

The Second Cause of Repentance, is called *The Instrumentall Cause*: and that is, the preaching of the Word as it is, *Luk. 24. 27.* saith hee, *And that Repentance and remission of sinnes should bee preached in his Name amongst all Nations,* so that preaching is the Instrumentall



tall cause thereof, for though God giue Repentance (it being wrought by him in vs) yet hee doth it by meanes, wee must not thinke that God will open the Cloudes and come downe from heauen, and poure Repentance into our hearts, or drop it in vs, but hee hath ordained that wee shall get it by the preaching of the Word, for thereby wee are made partakers of the graces of his holy Spirit. Now consider there are two things to effect this, The Preaching of the Law, and the preaching of the Gospell, the first that a man may see his sinne, and the fearefull estate hee is in by the same: The second, that he may finde there is a remedie, and that it is not in himselfe. The Law prepares a man for Repentance, shewes him all his sinnes, and his damnable estate before; yea, it terrifies the conscience euen to the very flinging of him downe to hell: and though this be not an infallible signe of grace to be thus terrified and restrained, yet it is the occasion of it, because it helps to prepare vs, and make vs willing to lay hold of Repentance as God workes in vs. As a man that makes choice of a tree to build with, *Trees.* first he cuts it downe with his axe, ere hee lay it flat vpon the ground, and when he hath done so, then hee applies his line and tooles vnto lopping the boughes, and so hewes it, and squares it to make it the fitter for his worke. Euen so doth the Lord; first hee beates a man flat downe with the sentence of the Law and horreur of his sinne, and then hee lifts him vp and restores him with the promises of the Gospell: And whereas many thinke that it is a strange worke of God to deale thus with a man, and that when God doth deale thus, that man is in a wofull and lamentable estate: the truth is, that then the Law (from God) is a fitting and working a man, to bee fit for eternall life, and thus though the Law cannot bring a man to Repentance, yet it is a meanes of preparation: And then after this commeth the Gospell, as a powerfull instrument, and workes Faith and other Graces in vs by a diuine assistance.

## The use is,

Vse.

Physicke.

Because then the preaching of the Word is thus a powerfull cause of Repentance, that wee make much of it and imbrace it, esteeming it a precious Iewell of Gods Treasure; yea, and to seeke and hunger for it by all meanes. If a man were grievously sicke vpon his bed, and that it were told him that in such a ground, such a herbe did grow which applyed would quickly ridde him of all his paine and grieffe; if hee had any meanes to come by it, sure hee would creepe thither vpon his hands and his feet to haue it, no paines would bee irksome vnto him, so hee might recouer his health againe, euen so when a man is deadly sicke of sinne (as wee should all bee) and it shall bee told him that in the preaching of the Gospell, there is such a herbe of Grace, the Flower of Repentance, that will cure him of his sinne, and restore him to the life of glorie, I hope no man is so desperate and carelesse, that will neglect the hearing of it. Now what shall wee doe in this case, but as it were to creepe on our hands and knees, that is, to vse all meanes to attaine the same, and bee partakers of the benefites of the Gospell, that wee may bee saued: O! shall wee bee more carefull in such a case of our bodyes then of our soules?

3  
Helping Causes  
of Repen-  
tance.

Sawe.

Now besides these two Causes, that may bring vs vnto Repentance: there bee other three causes, which are called *Cause adiuvantes*; Helping or furthering causes, because though they doe not worke Repentance in themselves, yet they doe exercise a man to the helping and furthering of this worke in him: I declare it by a similitude, when one would saw a Tree; three things are requisite vnto this worke. First, there must bee a saw which is the Instrument. Secondly, there must bee one to pull and mooue the saw, to apply it to the Tree; which is the  
Efficient

Efficient cause, Thirdly, there must bee a certaine oylie and liquide matter to make the Saw runne; which is *Causa adiuvans*: the Helping cause: which smoothes the Saw and makes it runne with ease: So it is in this great worke of Repentance: the Saw or Instrument to worke, is the preaching of the Gospell, which doth sawe and worke vpon the conscience, as the Instrument of God: and God himselfe is the effectuell puller or workeman to worke Repentance in vs. So that

Now the Helping  
Causes are especially  
three; 1. *The Mercie of God.*  
2. *The Iudgements of God.*  
3. *Our owne Considerations.*

The first furthering cause is, the *Mercies of God* and the remembrance of them, for when God puts vs in minde what hee hath done for vs, or wee our selues consider, what wee haue lost or hazarded, by reason of our sinnes, who cannot but relent and acknowledge the same? considering of Gods goodnesse: as it is *Rom. 2.* *Rom. 2.* *What dost thou not know O man! that the bountifullnesse of God and his goodnesse leadeth thee to Repentance:* for looke how many mercies God doth bestow vpon vs, so many strong motiues they are vnto Repentance! So *Ierem. 2.* *Ierem. 2.* God shewing his former kindnesse vnto them; expostulateth the matter to bring them vnto Repentance and Confession, *Ezek. 20. 43.* the Lord shewes for the other, *And there shall you remember your wayes and all your doings wherein you haue beene defiled, and yet shall loathe your selues in your owne sight, &c.* and *Iob. 10. 35.* *Iob. 10. 35.* Iob. hee complaineth, that none remembered the mercies of God, and therefore they were not heard in their prayers, because they wanted faith to repent. To vrge the point yet more, that the mercies of God, moue much to Repentance, see *Luke 5.* when *Peter* saw the great draught of fishes, *Lord (saith hee) depart from me a sinfull man:* Thus Gods mercies did bring *Peter* to the acknowledgement of his sinnes. Euen so the mercies of God



Wife.

God should bring vs to make this vse of it, to bring vs to the consideration of our sinnes and to repent for them, and to loue the Lord for his goodnesse, and for his mercy and fauour bestowed vpon vs. If a wicked wife should slip away from her husband, and commit many faults against him; If hee notwithstanding send her loue tokens from time to time, this kindnesse of her husband must needs bee a mighty meanes to drawe her backe againe in loue and obedience vnto him. Euen such is the kindnesse and goodnesse of God towards vs, that though wee slip and slide from him by our sinnes, yet hee sends to vs loue tokens, his mercies and his blessings euery day, from time to time to bring vs home by Repentance.

2

Helping cause  
of Repen-  
tance.

Gen. 42.12.

Luke 15.18.

Isa. 26.16.

Jer. 8.6.

Zeph. 3.5.

Amos 4.

A sheepe.

*The second Helping or furthering Cause is : The Iudgements of God, this is a principall cause in furthering of our Repentance: as wee may see Genesis 42.12. of Iosephs brethren when they were in trouble, then they confessed their sinnes being accused: Nay, but to see the Nakednesse of the land you are come. So the Prodigall sonne when hee was in miserie, then hee came home to his Father. So Isa. 26.16. Lord in trouble haue they visited thee: they poured out a Prayer when thy Chastisement was vpon them : so the Lord doth mightily conuince them of sinne: and neglecting his Iudgements, I hearkened and heard, but they spake not aright, no man repented him of his wickednesse, saying, what haue I done? euery man turned to his course, as the horse rusheth to the battell. and Zeph. 3.5. hee sayes, The iust Lord is in the midst thereof, hee will not doe iniquitie, euery morning doth hee bring his Iudgements to light, but the vnjust knoweth no shame. So Amos 4. the Lord there complaines of this, that hee sent his Iudgements from time to time, hee sent mildewes and blaitings, and many other Iudgements, and yet he complaines, (Tee returned not vnto mee.) If a sheepe goe astray from his sheeheard out of the*

the flocke, hee will set his dogge at him as if hee would kill him or worrie him, and yet hee hath no purpose to hurt him, but to driue him home to the fould againe, for when the sheepe is come home, hee rates and calls off his dogge. So the Lord doth by vs, if wee goe astray and turne from his sheepe-fold, then hee sets his dogge at vs, as if hee would kill vs, the dogge of pouertie, or the dogge of lamenesse, or of blindenesse, or of sicknesse, or some crosse, or some other iudgements, and yet hee hath no purpose to hurt vs, it is but onely to bring vs home vnto him; for if wee bee once brought home, hee calls off his dogge againe, and rates him, which is Gods end in all afflictions which hee from time to time sendeth.

*The third helping or furthering Cause is, our owne considerations: as 'Psal. 119. David saith, I considered my wayes, and turned my feete to thy testimonie, : So vntill wee come to consider our owne wayes, wee can neuer turne vnto God. Now this consideration must bee in foure things: First, of the strict account wee must giue vnto God at the day of Iudgement, for all those sinnes weedoe not repent of in this world. If wee repent, then the Lord will forgive vs, but if wee doe not repent, wee assured wee must answer for our sinnes, whereas vpon repentance, Christ will answer for vs, and wee may confidently put away the reaccount lying vpon Christ: vnto which the Apostle alludes, 2. Cor. 1.5. For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our Consolation also aboundeth through Christ. Secondly, of the fearefull estate wherein wee liue vntill wee haue repented: not being the friends of God but heires of hell, not hauing interest in any promise: but liable to the Curse of the Law, vpon which ensues death and torments. Which is the third thing: those vnspeakable tortures the soule for euer shall endure with the deuill and his angels*

4

angels for euermore. Fourthly, the consideration of foure other things.

1

A sicke man.

First, *The Necessitie of Repentance*, that it is such a necessarie grace that wee cannot bee saued without it, for there is but two wayes, either to Repent or else to perish, For if a man werelicke, and a Physitian should come to him and temper for him such a Potion, which if hee did not take, hee could not choose but dye, one would thinke a man could not choose but take it, though it were against his stomacke: Euen so wee are all sicke of the disease of sinne, and the Lord hath tempered a Potion for vs to drinke, and hee telleth vs, if wee doe not take it, we shall not escape condemnation. Now this Potion, which the Lord hath tempered for vs, is Repentance, therefore wee must bee contented to take it though it bee against our stomacke.

2

Isa. 1. 18.

The *Second* consideration is, *The utilitie and profite wee haue by it*, for if wee repent God will forgiue vs, but if wee repent not, God will make vs answer for it at the great day of Iudgement: here is our choice, Repent and bee forgiuen, Repent not and perish: so the Lord promisseth Forgiuenesse vpon Repentance, *Isa. 1. 18. Though your sinnes were red as scarlet, hee will make them white as snow, if you repent and obey*; that is, in Gods account it shall bee so.

3

The *Third* Consideration is: *The readinesse of God to receiue vs*; then hee will turne his frowning anger into louing fauour, his cursings into blessings, his iudgements into mercies; so soone as the Prodigall sonne came home to his Father, wee see how willing and how ready hee was to receiue him: So it is with euerie sinner so soone as hee returneth home to God, the Lord is presently readie to receiue him, and to forgiue all that is past.

The



The Fourth is, That one day wee shall dye, and know  
not how soone, when, if wee die without Repentance, wee  
must be damned for euer. Therefore, this should make  
vs repent and turne vnto God. I remember the medita-  
tion of a learned man: saith hee; The estate of a sinner  
is like a man travelling or going a iourney, and as hee  
went, hee fell into a pit full of snakes, roades and ser-  
pents, in the mouth of which pit there was a tree, a  
bough whereof ( as hee fell ) hee catcht hold of, and did  
hang thereby, at the roote whereof there was a leane and  
hunger-bitten beast, that euery day did gnaw to pull it  
downe, which beast is death: which seeing one day

One in a  
iourney.

it will gnaw the roote in peeces, it shewes

what need wee had of

Repentance.

\* \* \*

---

LECT. V.

---

W 7542.



# LECT. V.

## V.

# THE TIME OF Repentance.

HEB. 4.7.

*To day if you will heare his voice, harden not your hearts.*



WE spake the last day of the Causes of Repentance; First of the Efficient Cause which is God. Secondly of the Instrumentall cause, which is the preaching of the Word, or the Gospel. Thirdly of the Furthering or helping causes, which (I said) was, The

mercies of God, the Iudgements of God, our owne considerations.

Now the next thing wee are to speake of is, *The Time of Repentance*, for it is in vaine to know what wee haue to doe, if wee deferre to doe it in due time, or take ex-

Exc

ception



Hag. 1. 2.

House.

Math. 8. 29.

ception to the time, as you see the Jewes did, when they were called vpon to build the Temple after their returne from the captiuitie. *Hag. 1. 2. This people say the time is not come, the time that the Lords house should bee built:* So for vs to say, the time is not yet come wherein wee should repent: but if God tooke it ill, that they should put off the building of a materiall house, what will hee say vnto such as deny the building vp of their soules to life euerlasting? But such is the depraued nature of man, that when wee should seeke God and reforme our selues, wee take exception to the time, yea when wee are pressed vnto this dutie by a godly Minister, wee are readie to cry out with the deuills against Christ, *Math. 8. 29. Are thou come hither to torment vs before our time?* The reason of this delay is, because, if wee haue serious and sad thoughts of repentance, wee thinke and conceiue that we haue true repentance indeed. But wee must not so deceiue our selues to say, I haue thought so, I had a purpose to repent, and doe the duty, &c. But to come to *The time of Repentance*, it may be considered,

1. Generally.

2. Particularly.

II  
In this life.

The Generall time of Repentance, is *the Time of this life*; for there is no repenting when a man is dead. Therefore here are two rules in the Generall. First, that this whole life is the time of Repentance. Secondly, that after death it is a worke cannot be done. Therefore let no man presume of further mercy then he is able to call for, which is in the time of this life. All the Scripture is cleere for this: as *Iohn 9. 4. I must worke the worke of him that sent mee, while it is day, the night cometh when no man can worke.* So *Gal. 6. 20. As wee haue therefore opportunitie, let vs doe good vnto all,* and *Eccles. 9. 10. What soeuer thy hand findeth to doe, doe it with thy might, for there is no worke or deuice, nor knowledge, nor wisdom in the grane whither thou goest*; and this wee see that as the time of doing good is in this life, so is the time of Repen-

Iohn. 9. 4.

Gal. 6. 20.

Eccles. 9. 10.

tance

tance, and as wee can doe nothing being dead, no more  
 can wee repent being dead. For this purpose *Jeremie* *Jer. 13. 16.*  
 reasoneth with the people, *Give glorie to the Lord your*  
*God, before hee cause darkenesse, and before your feet*  
*stumble vpon the darke mountaines.* And *Danid* saith,  
*Psal. 39. ult. O spare mee that I may recouer strength, be-* *Chrysost. on*  
*fore I goe hence and bee no more:* So then if wee haue *Pf. 19. vide.*  
 any thing to doe, doe it with all thy might; if thou haue  
 to repent, repent earnestly; if thou haue to pray, pray  
 feruently: if thou haue to heare, heare diligently: if thou  
 haue to giue, giue cheerefully, for when thou art in the  
 graue, all opportunitie is gone, all time is taken away. I  
 remember a pretty meditation of a learned man, saith he;  
 As long as a murtherer is in the way to the Iudgement  
 seate, hee may make friends to compasse the matter, but if  
 the Iudge haue giuen sentence and hee bee condemned,  
 then hee may looke for the hangman, for the sword, and  
 for the halter, and for the darke dungeon. Euen so as *Murderer,*  
 long as wee are in the way to the Iudgement, that is, as  
 long as wee are in this life, wee may labour to compasse  
 the matter, wee may make friends with God, but if once  
 wee be dead and the sentence haue passed, wee may looke  
 for the diuell and hell, to seaze vpon vs, and therefore  
 (saith hee) *my good breshren, let not the time of your life*  
*pass without Repentance,* for death will come, and the  
 iudgement will come: therefore grieve and sorrow,  
 mourne and lament, whilst you haue time and liue  
 here.

It is true indeed, that all the wicked in Hell shall re-  
 pent euery veine in their hearts, when they shall see what  
 styes and stables they haue made of their bodies, by their  
 finnes of Idolatrie, Aduerie, Drunkennesse, Swearing  
 and prophanesse, they shall mourne and lament, and  
 waile for it: but they shall haue no benefite or profite  
 thereby, for this bond of Repentance shall be *Afflictive*  
 and *Panall*, it shall bee to their further increale of tor-  
 ment: therefore if wee would haue comfort by Repen-

cannot, wee must repent betimes in this life, for it is better to sorrow and mourne here where wee may haue comfort, then hereafter, when we can haue none. In worldly businelle, either planting, building, or purchasing, we make haiste whilst wee liue to see all things done betimes, and settled during our liues. nay. wee thinke it will not bee so well done, as when wee our selues ouersee it: And shall wee not much more regard the preparing and fitting of our selues for Heauen, which cannot bee done vnlesse wee faithfully repent in the time of this life so, as it was commanded to *Hezekiah*, to settle his house in order, for hee should die: so are wee pressed to the duty of Repentance, before wee die, that in our life. our soules may bee prepared for Heauen. Is it not then high time for all wicked men to prepare themselues to Repentance in this life, considering all hope is debarred them after death?

*Hezekiah.*

*Now there be diuers Reasons why this is so that Repentance must not be put off.*

First, *Because the delaying and putting off of Repentance is dangerous.*

Secondly, *Because the true time of Repentance is, to begin as soone as wee can, and the sooner the better, a man cannot begin to repent him too soone of his sinnes, because hee cannot leaue and forsake his sinnes too soone, this is vrged by the wise man, Eccles. 12. 1. Remember thy Creator now in the dayes of thy youth, while the euill dayes come not, nor the yeares draw nigh, when thou shalt say, I haue no pleasure in them, For then wee will bee vnfit, and many inconueniences depend vpon decrepidnesse, for such may be the distemper of the bodie, that the minde will haue small rest, and lesse list to make a sacrifice. Therefore begin as soone as may bee in the youth and strength of thy body, and as *Abraham* rose vp early in the morning to sacrifice vnto God, so rise thou vp early,*

*Eccl. 12. 1.*

*Abraham  
rising.*



early, and begin betimes to repent thee of thy sinnes: taking home the Apostles exhortation, *Heb. 3. 13. Whiles it is called to day, if yee will heare his voice, harden not your hearts, &c.* As a man that hath a long journey to goe will rise vp early in the morning, and prepare himselfe, so must wee remember that wee haue a long *Longiourney.* journey to goe when wee goe to Heauen, yea so long, as wee shall neuer returne againe, how had wee need then to prepare our selues to Repentance, and begin betimes, considering wee cannot come thither without it. But more distinctly,

*There bee five maine Reasons to  
mooue vs to speedy Repentance.*

The first is, *Because early Repentance is more certaine and sure, then that which is deferred,* for wee know not Reason to Re- if God will grant vs time, or not, to repent hereafter. pent betimes. Wee that are in the Church to day, may be in our graues to morrow; and though hee doe giue vs time, wee know not whether hee will giue vs the meanes or grace to repent, and if hee doe giue vs the meanes, wee doe not know whether hee will blesse the meanes vnto vs. Therefore it is good for vs to repent whilst it is to day, whilst it is offered vs. This was it which made *Isaac* resolve to blesse his children betimes, *Genes. 27. 3. Behold Gen. 27. 3.] now I am old, and know not the day of my death;* so because wee know not the day of our death, how soone we shall leaue the world, and lay downe our heads in the dust, it is good for vs to begin betimes, and leaue a blessing vpon our soules before wee die. *Augustine* saith well, hee that promised to forgiue thee if thou repent, did not promise thee that thou shouldst liue till to morrow: It is true God hath promised, that hee shall not die that doth repent him of his sinnes, and that in many places of Scripture. Now if wee will consider how iust God is in

his promises, and faithfull in his performances, who would not repent; but remember withall that these promises are either made or available vnto any, but vnto such as Repent.

2 Secondly, *Because early Repentance is more fruitfull* then late, for though late repentance may bee true, yet commonly it is not so fruitfull, comfortable, nor accompanied with so many graces as that which is early, the *Theefe* vpon the Crosse, had late Repentance, and yet it was true and sufficient for the saluation of his soule, but it was not accompanied with so many graces, nor brought that glorie to God as it might haue done being more early. Again, *Paul* was conuerted, and repented betimes, and we know how abundantly he was stored with graces, and brought glorie to God, and comfort to the people of God.

## Uses.

Use 1.

It is for the sicke to remember this in their health, and to provide betimes, because a man hath not power ouer himselfe to doe any good in his best health and memorie, much lesse when any impediments and hinderances come: when a man doth repent on his deathbed, it may bee the Lord will bee mercifull, but yet let vs deale more faithfully with our soules, then to trust or presume vpon that, remembring that early Deuotion is most fruitfull. Indeed if a man forsake sinne in the strength of his body, and repent, God hath the greater glorie in the Conuersion, though affliction worke it. Of the storie of the Prodigall, *Luke 15.* what sweet passages are there for timely repentances, and to personate a mercifull God, by a wise and mercifull Father, let the world say what it can, and men iudge as they list, hee that supposeth himselfe most righteous must repent, as it is in Christs inuēctiue against the too forward Iewes, *Luke 13.5.* Nay, but  
except

*Luke 15.*

*Luke 13.5.*

*except yee Repent, yee shall all likewise perish.*

A third reason is, *Because early Repentance is the more easie*; For the longer wee goe on and lue in sinne, the harder it will bee to repent, if thou findest it hard to day, it will bee harder to morrow, and if it bee hard this weeke, it will bee more difficult the next, and if it be hard this yeare, it will bee much more difficult the next: Therefore God makes no limitation, but sayes plainly, *Heb. 3. 13. To day, lest any of you bee hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sinne, and ver. 15. To day if you will heare his voice, then harden not your hearts, &c.* I remember the saying of a learned man, if presently after a great raine it be hard to get ouer a riuer, then it will bee much harder at noone, and worse at night, when all the streames are come into one course and current. Even so, if it be hard to repent presently after a sinne committed; It will be harder when one hath committed twentie sins, much more when he hath committed thousands of sins, when all the sinnes of his life come to one course or current. therefore timely repentance is the easier.

3  
It is the more  
easie.

High Riuer,

The fourth is, *Because the longer wee ly in our sinnes vnrepented of, the more sowre and harsh they will bee*: For the measure of our Repentance must in some sort be proportionable vnto the measure of our sinnes; If our sinnes bee great, our repentance must also be great; and if our sinnes bee small, our repentance may bee the lesler; for the more sinnes bee committed, the more sorrow, grieve & tears, there must be in our repentance for them, as wee see in nature, the stronger the sicknesse is, so much the stronger must the phylicke bee. The Iewes did temper for Christ a bitter Cup to drinke, but by our sinnes wee haue tempered a cup for our selues to drinke: for euery sinne wee commit, is as a drop of poyson to make this cuppe so much the more bitter vnto vs, wee see by experience, that if a man breake a legge or an arme, the longer it remaines vnset, the worse it is to bee ioyned, so

4  
Late Repen-  
tance attended  
with the more  
sowrenesse.

Sicknesse,

Bitter Cup.

Legge broken



*Psal. 139.*  
Physicke.

Great Burden.

the longer wee liue without Repentance, the worse it will be to repent : therefore the best is to crie vnto God betimes : *When our heart is overwhelmed.* As in diseases the physicke is alwayes tempered to the strength of the diseased, but the longer it is deferred, the more dangerous is the cure : So it is with vs for our sinnes, wee must haue the Physicke of Repentance cure vs, according to the measure of our sinnes, as I haue shewed. If a man haue made himselfe a great burden to carry, and should assay it on his backe, and so hee findes it vneasie, and to presse him very much, if he should then throw it downe and put a great deale more vnto it, and then begin to lift it againe, but vpon the second tryall finding it heauier then before, if hee should fall in a great rage, till hee adde twice as much strength and labour to carry it the lighter ; would wee not thinke such a one foolish, thus wilfully to increase his burden ? so is it with the children of this world ; because they finde Repentance somewhat vneasie at first, they cast it from them, and by that time they come againe ( hauing added more sinnes, and made their burden heauier ) they are compelled to their greater sorrow and greater Repentance, to wastle with so grievous a burden, at a wondrous great disaduantage.

5  
It is more  
pleasing.

Old seruant.

The *Fifth* Reason why early Repentance is better then late, is : *Because it is more pleasing vnto God :* for hee for the most part reckoneth more of an old disciple then of a new. As wee see in experience, vsually one will make more account of an old seruant then of a new, hee will commit more trust to him, and bee more familiar with him. Euen so the Lord makes more reckoning of an old Disciple, then of a new, wherefore by all these reasons wee may see, that early Repentance is better then late.

*2. Chron. 22. 16*

And therefore now let vs doe as it is said, *1. Chron. 22. 16.*  
*Arise therefore and bee doing, the Lord will be with thee :*  
So seeing wee haue so many sinnes to repent vs of, and that God must haue the temple of our soules new built,  
and

and re-edified; let vs vp betimes, and be doing with our Repentance. As *Pro. 3. 28. Say not vnto thy neighbour* *Pro. 3. 28.* *goe and come againe tomorrow: but giue when thou hast it by thee;* So say not vnto God, when he offers thee Repentance, goe and come againe; I will listen to this another time, but listen while it is time, and refuse not mercie when it is so neere thee. Wee see that in the practise of men, they cannot indure to bee put off from day to day in those things they desire to haue, but they will take it as an iniurie done vnto them: So the Lord takes it as a great iniurie and wrong done vnto him, when men put off their repentance from day to day. Putting off.

The common course of the world is to deferre Repentance vnto the day of death, thinking that to be the fittest time for it: But such are deceiued, for of all other times this is the worst for it, and that because of two impediments:

1. *One in Nature.*

2. *The other in Grace.*

The first impediment in Nature is, *The Dolour and paine wherein the partie at that time is*, for when paines bee vpon a man, how vnfit is he then to repent, when it is tedious and irksome to speake or heare any noyse; O how vnfit is a man then to set all his sinnes in order before him, to sorrow and mourne for them, and that hee hath offended, by them, so gracious and good a God? In this case, it befalls vnto many at such times, as it did with the Israelites, *Exod. 6. 9. Moses* told them, that the Lord would bring them out of *Egypt*, that hee would take away the burdens from their shoulders, and that hee would bring them into the land of *Canaan*, which hee had sworn vnto their Fathers, to giue vnto them: But the text shewes, *That they did not hearken vnto Moses, for the anguish of spirit, and because of the cruell bondage they were in.* So for the most part when paines and sickness are vpon one, hee is not fit, to listen vnto any good counsell: 1  
Impediment  
at the houre  
of death.  
  
Israelites.  
*Exod. 6. 9.*

counsell or admonition, that any one can bring him be it neuer so comfortable vnto others; therefore the time of death, is a most vsit time for the beginning of Repentance.

2

Impediment  
at the houre  
of Death.

Physitian.

Secondly, *Because the time of death to a naturall man* (vntill hee hath repented) *is of all other times the most terrible and fearfull: Vntill hee haue obtained the assurance of the forgiuenesse of sinnes, and that heaven and happinesse belongs vnto him.* If a Physitian should come to take away a legge or an arme from a man, what a fearfull thing would it bee? how much more fearefull to a naturall man is death, which comes not to take away a legge or an arme onely, but to rent body and soule asunder, to bee at last tormented for euer? So that when death comes with so dolefull an errand to sepearate two old friends, this time must needs bee a most vndisposed season to repent in.

3

Impediment  
at death.  
A Candle.

Thirdly, *Because of worldly Cogitations,* as the disposing of wife and children, house and lands, and other goods, all these must needs hinder the motions of Repentance. As if a man haue a candle lighted in a Mine vnder the earth, if it bee neere or vnder a dampe, this will come, and put out the candle; So when in the time of sicknesse there is a candle lighted of good motions and meditations of Repentance: then these new mutinous cogitations enter in, to thinke what shall become of wife and children, this and that friend, and how to bestow our goods: these like a dampe extinguish the good thoughts of Repentance.

4

Impediment  
in our death.  
Pro. 1.

The fourth is, *That God then ordinarily punishes our neglect of this duty in our health, with hardnesse of heart on our death-beds:* As it is Pro. 1. *Because hee called then to vs, and wee would not answer: therefore we call vnto him, and he will not answer vs, euen when our feares*  
come



comelike a whirlwinde, and our deuotion posteth vp-  
on vs. O saith Christ to *Ierusalem*; *Wouldest thou Math. 23. ult.*  
*hadst knowne in this thy day the things which belong vnto*  
*thy peace; but now they are hid from thine eyes: Worke* *Iohn 8.*  
*(saith our Saurour to the Iewes) whilst it is called to day,*  
*for the night commeth in which no man can worke: So*  
that this night time of sicknesse, is of all times the most  
vnfit to repent in; when God may iustly leaue vs com-  
fortlesse, because wee would not ere that time hearken to  
the words of instruction, and walke in new obedience.

2

## The Impediments of Grace

2

Impediments  
in Grace.

At that time may bee these; First, *God may deny vs the*  
*meanes to worke Faith and Repentance in vs; our com-*  
forters and helpers then shall be silent, tongue tyed or ab-  
sent, when wee most wish, desire, and languish for com-  
fort and helpe: then one of a thousand may be denyed vs.

1

Secondly, *Though hee doe giue vs meanes, yet, it may*  
*bee hee will not blesse them, or make them powerfull and*  
*effectuall vnto vs.* And though hee doe blesse the meanes,  
yet our comfort shall then be the lesse, for ordinarily hee  
doth more blesse the publike, then the private meanes vn-  
to vs: wherefore of all times, the time of death is the  
most vnable for Repentance, and the worst, wherefore  
now O yee my hearers! let my counsell this day bee ac-  
ceptable in your eyes and eares: *Remember now your Eccles. 12. 1.*  
*Creator in the dayes of your youth, healtb and strength:*  
the sooner it is done, the better, ealier, and more com-  
fortable will your life and death bee: doe therefore in  
this, as *Abraham* did when hee sacrificed *Isaac*, he rose *Genes.*  
vp early in the morning; so wee should rise vp early in *Abraham.*  
the morning of our age and youth to offer vp our selues,  
our soules and bodies vnto God, as a liuing sacrifice; our  
*Isaac* must at one time or other bee sacrificed: therefore

2

let

lee vs repent, and bewaile our sinnes betimes: for it is a speciall point of prudence, to doe that betimes which must needs be done. Thus of the Generall.

*Now for the Particular Time of  
Repentance, there bee fixe things  
Considerable.*

The first is, *When a man hath committed any new sinne,* then is a speciall time for him to renew his Repentance, as hee hath renewed his sinne. So *Dauid* did, *2.Sam.24.10.* where it is recorded, that *Dauids heart smote him after that hee had numbred the People.* Thus by and by hee renewed his Repentance, after that hee had confessed and seene his sinne. So *Peter*, *Math.26.73.* It is written of him, that after he had remembred the words of Christ, *Hee went out and wept bitterly.* Thus euery new act of sinne must haue a new act of Repentance, as I haue said.

*Arme out of ioynt.* If a man haue an arme or a legge out of ioynt, he can neuer be quiet vntill it bee set and put in order againe; so should it bee in our committing of sinne: for becauſe euery sinne setteth the soule out of ioynt, wee should neuer be quiet vntill Repentance haue put all in frame againe. Wee see by experience, that if a candle be blowne out, if a man by and by runne to the fire with it, the sooner he comes, the easier it will be lighted againe and the sooner: and the longer hee tarries, the longer it will bee ere it take fire; euen to when a man falls into any sinne, the sooner hee repents of it, the more easie and better it will be for him, and the longer hee deferres his Repentance, the harder it will be for him to bring his heart to the duty. Therefore it will be best for vs, to take the best courses which may bring vs vnto saluation, no sooner to haue sinned, but presently thereupon alio to renew our Repentance: As the wise mans couniell is, *My sonne if thou hast sinned, deferre not thy Repentance;*

Secondly,

Secondly, it is a speciall time of Repentance, *When any* 2  
*iudgement of God, either publike or private falls vpon vs ;*  
*as the Prophet shewes, Isa. 26. 16. Lord in trouble haue* *Isa. 26. 16.*  
*they visited thee, they poured out a prayer when thy cha-*  
*stening was vpon them. So Lament. 3. 40. saith the Church,* *Lam. 3. 40.*  
*Let vs search and try our waies, and turne vnto the Lord.*  
 When God sends sicknesse, blindnesse, or lamenesse, losse  
 in our goods friends, reputation, preternent, or such like,  
 then is a speciall time to repent vs of our sinnes. For it  
 is a sure thing that the iudgements of God come by rea-  
 son of our sinnes, and so questionlesse God will renew  
 his iudgements, if wee renew our sinnes ; which cannot  
 be remooued but by Repentance. If a mans house be on House on fire,  
 fire, he will carry out his Flaxe and Towe, Wood and  
 Straw, with euery thing else which is fit and likely to  
 augment the fire : and then doth hee cry for helpe and  
 poure on water to quench it ; euen so because our sinnes  
 doe nourish the fire of Gods wrath, and will consume our  
 soules, if wee doe not carry them out of sight by repen-  
 tance, therefore we should set about this worke : and take  
 away all that matter which may increase the fire of Gods  
 vengeance vpon vs : which is to put away our sinnes by  
 repentance ; as wee see *Deut. 9. 20. Moses did, for thus* Deut. 9. 20.  
*he records it, And the Lord was very angry with Aaron*  
*to haue destroyed him : and I prayed for Aaron the same*  
*time.* Here you see how a iudgement was remooued by  
*Aarons repentance, and Moyses prayer.* Wee see if the  
 Kings Writs be out against a man to attach him, Bayliffe  
 and Sherifes lying in wait for him in euery corner to ar-  
 rest him : such a man will presently labour to compasse  
 the matter, and bring it to agreement for feare of impris-  
 onment : So when the Writs of God are out against vs, Kings Writs,  
 and his Iudgements like Sergeants and Baylifes dogge  
 vs in euery corner : what should we doe in this case ? but  
 labour to compasse the matter betimes, to bee wiser for  
 our soules and immortalitie, then they are for a little tem-  
 porall punishment in this life : and to make a good vse of  
 Gods



*Reuel. 9. 20.* Gods iudgements vpon others : the omission whereof, made the Spirit of God complaine thus, *Reuel. 9. 20.* And the remnant of the people which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the workes of their hands, where the Lord complained of them, that they had no regard to his iudgements. So *Amos 4. 6.* And I also haue giuen you cleannesse of teeth in all your cities, and want of bread in all your places, yet haue yee not returned vnto mee, saith the Lord. The like we haue, *Ier. 5. 3.* Thou hast striken them, but they haue not grieved, thou hast consumed them, but they haue refused to receiue correction, &c. So that by these places you see, it is a speciall time for vs to call vpon God when his hand is vpon vs, and wee see apparently, that our sinnes doe pull his iudgements neerer and neerer vs.

3

Thirdly, When God affords vs any speciall meanes, then hee lookes for speciall actions and affections, in turning towards him : as at the comming of Iohn Baptist, *Math. 3. 10.* And now also the axe is layed vnto the roote of the tree : before the axe of God was layed to the boughes and branches, but now to the very roote, at which time there is no remedie, but that *Euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, must be hewen down and cast into the fire.* So it is said, *Act. 17. 30.* And the times of this ignorance God winked at, but now hee commandeth all men euery where to repent ; So that when God sends speciall meanes, this is a speciall time of Repentance. Ships that haue lyen long in the harbour, yet as soone as the winde blowes, by and by they set forward to their intended journey, as it is said, *Act. 27. 13.* And when the southwinde blew softly (supposing that they had obtained their purpose) they loosed thence. Euen so should we doe, when we haue lyen long in the harbour of sinne, done little good in Religion, or to the Church of God, yet when the winde blowes, when God offers gracious and good meanes, when we haue so faire an opportunitie, we should

lay hold vpon the good things that be for our saluation. So that this must needs be a fearefull abuse of Gods kindnesse and goodnesse; that when it is a speciall time of Repentance: through our corruptions wee make it a speciall time of wantonnesse and vncleannesse, and wee are so farre from being the better for all our speciall meanes, that wee become worse and worse: and so bring iudgement vpon vs. Our Sauiour Christ *Math. 11.* doth vpbraid those Cities wherein hee had done most of his great workes, because for all this they had not repented them of their sins, where he tells them *That it shall be easier for Sodome and for Gomorrah in the day of Iudgement, then for them*: So if wee doe not profite by the preaching of the Word, and the good meanes which are amongst vs at this day: the estate of *Sodome and Gomorrah* at that great day, shall be easier and better then ours. So let vs take heed it be not so with vs, for what a fearefull signe of damnation is this? when wee thus set open the gates of hell, by being no more carefull to come to Faith and Repentance, and other sauing graces, in the midst of such abundance of meanes?

Fourthly, it is a speciall Time of Repentance, *when wee goe about any great worke*: For many times in our honest labours, there are many crosses and troubles which doe befall vs, because we haue not repented. Therefore it must bee our wisdome, when wee goe about any great worke which wee would haue to prosper, then to repent, lest we incounter with great crosses. So *Ezra 8.21.* hee practised: So *Esther 4.16.* So *Iehoshaphat, 2. Chron. 20.12.* The omission of this dutie you see was dangerous, *Iosh. 7.11.12.* they could not stand before their enemies, saith God vnto *Ioshua, Vp, Israel hath sinned, and they haue transgressed my Couenant, therefore the children of Israel could not stand before their enemies*: Euen so it is with vs, wee cannot stand before our enemies, God doth not bleise our labours, indeauours, nor any thing wee take in hand, because

cause wee doe not prepare our selues vnto Repentance, therefore (as I said) when we haue a great work in hand, it is a speciall time of Repentance, and herein wee must imitate the seruants of God in their examples, when *Exra* had a great iourney to goe: first he fasted and prayed so many other of the Saints forenamed: this was their practise, and so must it bee ours, chiefly when wee come to heare the Word, or receiue the Sacraments, then we must be sure to haue repented soundly for our sinnes, or else, as wee cannot expect mercie: so wee depart away without comfort. As a man that would draw a riuer into his ground, he must first prepare the channell, cut downe the bankes, and stop the passages; so must men doe with their sinnes, that would haue the riuer of Gods mercie to runne through their hearts.

*3* The Fifth speciall time of Repentance is, *Euery morning when wee arise, and euery night when wee goe to bed.* For as wee sin daily, so must wee daily renew our repentance, let vs then repent euery morning before wee rise. The steward who hath but a short memorie, will be often casting vphis accounts and reckoning with his Master, he will neuer let them tarry too long without clearing and making euen, so becaule that our memorie is short, and that wee soone forget our sinnes, we should desire to haue often reckoning with the Lord. euery day to make euen with him. If we would thus often doe, wee should haue but a few sins to repent vs of when wee come to die.

*Steward.* Wee see by experience, if a man haue a little Brooke that runnes through his ground, as long as he keeps the channell cleane that the waters may still auoide, it will neuer annoy him, but if he suffer the gutters to be stopped with mudde and dirt, and weeds to stop the course and carrying of the water, by and by it will overflow his ground. And euen so, though a man haue some sinnes which annoy and trouble him, yet if he will be daily cleansing the channell of his heart, and make the channell open by Repentance,



Repentance, there will be the lesse danger to his soule, as wee see it was said of *Dauids* practise, *Psal. 6.* Hee talkes of a vexed soule, wearisome enelle with groaning, making his bed to swimme with teares, consuming of his eyes, and the like: so must our Repentance come with sighes, groanes, weeping and wringing of the heart (if it were possible) that so wee be the better assured, that it is vnfaigned and rightly bred; and that it is such vnto which God will haue respect.

Sixtly, the last speciall time of Repentance; is *at the* *houre of Death*; for then indeed is the Time to renew our Faith, Repentance and all other Graces, or neuer. Euen as a man that hath beene at great charges for the building of a ship to carrie himselte safely a very long journey, when hee is ready to put forth into the sea, then hee especially lookes, that all his Masts, Sayles, Anchors, and Tacklings be ready, fit and prepared; so howsoever a man deale with his Faith, Repentance, and other graces all his life time, yet now when at the houre of death, hee comes to lance forth into so rough a Sea, for his last journey; he must then looke all ouer againe, and see that nothing be wanting, but that his faith, prayers, penitencie, loue, and such like, be in a readinesse for to conduct him in peace and safetie vnto the end of his last journey. But commonly men doe by Repentance, as great men doe by Banquets, when a great Feast comes: they sit and gaze and admire, but their stomacks are gone; many in this case haue no stomacks to eate: So many men looke at these excellent things of God, admire them, but will not eate: will not repent, leaue their sinnes, &c. But let vs in the Name of God who know better things, and haue not thus learned Christ, goe on, resolute, labour and practise Repentance, ere it bee too late: which now is our next Point to be handled the next time.

2



## LECT. VI.

## VI.

THE PRACTISE OF  
Repentance.

IOEL. 2. 12.

*Therefore, also now (saith the Lord,) Turne yee even  
to mee with all your heart, and with fasting and with weep-  
ing, and with mourning;*

*And rent your heart, and not your garments, and  
turne unto the Lord your God; for hee is gracious and  
mercifull, slow to anger, and of great kindenesse, and re-  
pent him of the euill.*



WE spake the last day of the *Time  
of Repentance*, when we shewed,  
that for euery new sinne, there  
must bee a new act of Repen-  
tance, and so as wee sinne daily,  
wee must daily repent. For (as I  
then shewed) if a man haue a  
little Brook which runs through  
his ground, as long as hee keepes the channell cleane,  
pulls vp the weeds, and durt, and sand from stopping it  
vp, hee is sure it will not annoy him, nor overflowe his  
bankes: So as long as a man doth daily renew his repen-



tance, and pull vp the weedes of his sinnes from his heart, hee shall be sure that theriuier of Gods mercy will runne smoothly and currently into his soule, thus then you see Repentance is a daily duty, and onely in the time of this life to be performed: as wee commit daily sinnes, so had wee need of daily Repentance.

Now the next point we are to speake of, is of *The Practise of Repentance*, or manner how wee must Repent, for it may be some men will be readie to except and say, seeing Repentance is such a necessarie duty, as no man liuing can be saued without it, and seeing the time of this life is nothing else, but a time left of God to Repent; and so I am willing to performe this great worke, but alas, I know not how, nor in what manner I should repent: so that as the Disciples said vnto Christ, *Luk. 11. 1. Lord teach vs to pray*, so may wee say, Lord teach vs to repent, wee be willing to repent, but know not how nor in what manner.

Wherefore wee are to know that in the practise of Repentance, there must be foure seuerall things, that is, in the presenting of our selues before the Throne of Gods Maiestie, and attempting or performing this our duty of Repentance; for the acquisition of our saluation, there must be,

1. *Examination;*
2. *Humiliation;*
3. *Deprecation;*
4. *Resolution;*

Which be the foure things required in the Practise of Repentance.

**Examination.**

First, *there must be Examination*, for euery one that will repent, must first examine himselfe in the matter of Repentance, how to finde out his owne sinnes and offences, for how can a man repent him of his sinnes, if he doe not know them? so he that would repent, must first labour

hour to come to the knowledge of his sinnes, and he cannot know his sins, but by examining his heart, and his owne wayes, that he may finde out his owne strayings and wandrings from the Lord, by the righteous rule of the Law of God, the word of God must be the candle to light the minde, and to direct and shew what is good and what is bad, what is sin, and what is not sin, what is pleasing vnto God, and what is displeasing vnto him. As may be seene, *Lament. 3. 40.* saith the Church there; *Let vs search and trie our wayes, and turne againe vnto the Lord.* *Lam. 3. 40.* Meaning that vnlesse we will seeke and search into our owne hearts to finde out the things that are amisse; and so seeke and search, as a man looking diligently for a thing lost, who lighteth a candle and searcheth euery corner, till he hath found the thing, we shall neuer be able to finde out all our sinnes: So the Prophet sayes, *Psal. 119. 59.* *I considered my wayes and turned my feet vnto thy testimonies.* Seeing then it was the consideration of his owne wayes, which made him turne into the wayes of God, let vs practise the same. The likewise haue in the storie of the Prodigall sonne, *Luk. 13. 19.* *And when he came to himselfe, he said, I will returne to my father, &c.* *Luk. 13. 9.* When he had examined his owne state and condition, then it came into his minde to returne vnto his Father: so then the Point is, *That in the Practise of Repentance there must bee examination of our owne wayes,* which is a thing contrary to the course of the world, who are prone to looke into other mens wayes and neglect their owne. The beasts *Reuel. 4. 8.* were full of eyes within, but the most men haue eyes without to looke into other mens secrets, but not into their owne faults at home: such men may be likened vnto husbands, who because they haue vnquiet wiues at home, loue as much as may be to be abroad, because they can no sooner put their heads within the doores, but by and by their wiues are vpon them, euen so it is with him that hath a bad conscience, as with him that hath a bad wife, no sooner hee can come

1. Cor. 11. 31.

home into himselfe, but by and by his conscience is vpon him, ready to raile at him and rebuke him for his sinnes, so that he longs as much as may be to be abroad, and to deale with other mens sinnes, rather then his owne. But *Paul tells vs 1. Cor. 11. 31. That wee must iudge our selues, if wee would haue God not to iudge vs.* Therefore euery Christian man should set vp a Tribunall and Iudgement seate in his owne heart, and make a solemne arraignment of himselfe, that is to say, that he so set himselfe before God, that he first vndertake the triall of his owne wayes, and consider wherein he hath offended, and what sinnes he hath committed against him, then he must bring the bills of indictment against himselfe, make a presentment of his owne faults, where hee hath sinned, when offended, and how displeased so good a God. And thus euery man must iudge himselfe, that God doe not iudge him: for a iudgement must come. *St. Austen sayes well, That so often as a man remembers his sinnes, God forgets them.* If thou examine thy selfe, God will vrge no further; if thou iudge and condemne thy selfe, God will not iudge thee; if thou punish thy selfe, God will spare thee. So then this is the first Point, wee must examine our selues how wee haue offended. Now in this examination there are two things required:

1. *There must be a right Rule to examine by,*
2. *There bee certaine Heads, vpon which wee must examine.*

in  
False Rule.

First, for the Rule, There are certaine false Rules which we must remember neuer to take hold of. First, *That a man doe not examine himselfe by himselfe*, for a man may be in a better case then formerly, and yet in no good estate: he may haue left grosse sinnes, particular sinnes, and yet be deceiued infinitely short of true goodnesse: So that a man is but a false rule vnto himselfe, when he wil thinke all to be well, because he findes some better times then he was wont. To this effect *St. Paul sayes, 2. Cor. 10. 12.*

*Where-*



Wherefore let him who thinketh he standeth, take heed lest hee fall. And againe, 2. Cor. 11. 12. hee condemnes this rule, saying: Wee are not of that number who compare themselves with themselves. 2. Cor. 10. 12. 2. Cor. 11. 12.

The second false Rule is, when a man will examine himselfe by others: because hee sees others subiect to more grosse sinnes, or liue openly more licentiously then himselfe: As the Pharisee, Luk. 18. 11. deceiued himselfe, Lord I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, vnjust, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane; Luk 18. 11. you see he was better then a number of others, no extortioner, adulterer, oppressor, vnjust dealer, and yet hee could not be iustified of the Lord: all this could not excuse him: so you see this is but a false Rule to examine by, wee should rather doe as the Apostle commands, Gal. 6. 4. Let every man prooue his owne worke, &c. and then he shall haue reioycing in himselfe, not in another.

A third false Rule is, When a man will examine himselfe by the speech of people; and the account that the world makes of him. But wee may bee in much account with others, accounted a good Christian, and a good liuer, and yet all this be but as a shadow before God: and therefore the Apostle saith, Rom. 14. 4. Every man must stand or fall vnto his owne Master: for God is able to make him stand. And 2. Cor. 10. 18. hee shewes: no commendation ought to be built vpon, vnlesse it be of God; For not hee who commendeth himselfe is approoued, but whom the Lord commendeth. Wherefore euen as it was said of Belteshazzar, Dan. 3. Thou art weighed in the balance and found light; so if wee measure our selues by this Rule, wee shall be found too light in Gods balance. The true rule is a righteous Rule, therefore wee must examine our selues by the Law of God euery one who would haue a true triall of himselfe: and then as the Carpenter when he hath applied his threed and line vnto the timber,

timber, by and by hee sees where it was crooked. So when a man hath thus applyed himselfe vnto the Law of God, hee soone shall see wherein he hath beene sinfull and faultie. So this Rule God giues vnto his people, *Deut. 30. 2.* *Obey his voice, according vnto all that is commanded thee.*

Now for the heads which wee must examine all our sinnes by, they be,

1. *Inward.*

2. *Outward.*

False Iudge.

Tradsmen.

And God is the Iudge of all, that is, wee must examine our selues of all our sinnes committed against God, and against our Brethren. There is a corruption in nature in the examining of our sinnes, wee deale by our selues as a false Iudge doth by an offendor: examine him so slightly, that one may see he would willingly saue him: or that he is affraid to finde him faulty: euen so in the examining of our selues at the best, wee looke but at our outward sinnes; being loath to search into the inward secrets of our soules, to finde out the poyson and corruption of our hearts, for from the heart comineth all manner of wickednesses: so that the true examination must be of all our sinnes, so farre forth as by any meanes wee can come to the knowledge of them: both of sinnes against the first and second Table, secret or open what kinde soeuer they be. Tradf-men you know (especially in great Cities) vse to keepe a booke of all their expences, of their layings out and commings in, and so are often casting vp their accounts to see whether they gaine or lose in matters of the world, so we should take an account of all our actions, and keepe a register of them; euery night we should cast ouer our accounts, to see how wee haue sinned and offended God, and how often, how wee haue repented: if we finde things to be well; wee should blesse God for it, and if wee finde things to be amisse, we should be humbled in our soules for it: thus we must labour to view all

our actions: as wee see God did, *Gen. 1.* when God had *Gen. 1.* made an end of his first dayes worke, and so of the rest, it is said; *Hee beheld the same, and loe all that he had made was very good.* So should we from day to day take a view of our workes, speeches, and the like, to see whether they haue beene good or bad.

The second thing in the Practise of Repentance is *Humiliation*: for when a man hath seene that he is a sinner *Humiliation* and lyes in sinne, this is not enough, but then great care must be had also to be humbled for them; that is, bitterly to weepe and mourne for them, euen to the shedding of many teares if it bee possible: So *Peter* did, *Matt. 26. 75.* it is said, *And he went out and wept bitterly, &c.* So *Mary Magdalen*, *Luk. 7. 38.* it is said; *And shee stood behinde him weeping, and began to wash his feet with teares, and then to wipe them with the haire of her head.* So *Dauid* *Psal. 6. 6.* confesses of himselfe, *All the night I make my bed swimme, I water my couch with my teares.* So wee see it is a plaine case, when once we haue seene our sinnes, the next thing to be done is, to bee humbled for them, as I haue said euen to the shedding of teares, which in Gods sight are so pretious and acceptable, that hee gathers and puts them vp in his bottle, as *Psal. 56. 8.* *Thou sellest my wandrings, put thou my teares into thy bottle;* all other teares fall to the ground, and are to little purpose, but euery teare that a man sheds for sinne, that hee hath offended God: he gathers these vp. But alas, what shall I say? I doubt me not one of a 1000. of vs let tears fall in this kinde, and for this cause you goe mourning and want comfort, because you seeke it not the right way in godly sorrow first to be humbled, and then to reioyce. It is a lamentable thing that many of you be twentie, thirtie, and forty yeares old, and yet you haue neuer shed one teare for sinne: O what a lamentable case is this? that Christ may now come and say to you as hee did vnto those women, *Luk. 23. 28.* *O daughters of Hierusalem, Luk. 23. 28. weepe*



weepe not for mee, but weepe for your selues, &c. It is a good thing to weepe for Christ in regard of the paines and troubles which hee suffered, and did befall vnto him as our suretie; but it is a greater grace to weepe for sinne, and that thereby wee haue displeased so good a God. Which (I take it) made *St. Augustine* say, that *Mary Magdalen* brought two things to Christ, her oynment and her teares, and yet her teares exceeded her oynment in sweetnesse, &c.

1

Act. 2. 37.

Psal. 51.

Now this sorrow for sinne doth require five qualifications: First, there must be (*Dolor Cordis, or Contritio- nis,*) the sorrow of the heart or Contrition: as *Act. 2. 37.* it is said those three thousand who heard *Peter*; were pricked in their hearts: and *Psal. 51.* *A contrite and a broken heart, O God thou wilt not despise.* So that this sorrow must not be outward onely with the sadnesse of the face, but it must be a sorrow of the heart, as *Psal. 63.* the Prophet complaines, *my soule is vexed within mee, &c.* It is called other-where the pouring out of the heart; for this is most certaine, when the soule in good earnest sets to wraffle for heauen, then there is no time for vs to dissemble with God.

2

2. Cor. 7. 11.

2. King.

Secondly, it must be *Dolor secundum Deum*, Godly sorrow which is a sorrow for sinne, because it displeaseth and hath offended God, as wee may reade, *2. Cor. 7. 11.* *For behold this selfe-same thing that you sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulnesse it wrought in you, &c.* Many a man is sorry for his sinne, and peraduenture repents not for all this, or if he doe repent, it is not because it is sinne, but because it will bring their shame, losse, or discredite with men, or that Gods iudgements are ready to seize vpon him: as *Ahab* when it was told him that the dogges should licke his bloud in that place where hee had stoned *Naboth*, he wept and humbled himselfe, and went sadly, but it was not because he had displeased God,  
but

but in regard of the iudgement that should befall him. So *Iudas* was sorry for his sinne, not because of sinne, but by *Math.* reason it was so horrible a thing to betray his Master: this was it which made so horrible and incureable a rent in his conscience: others againe sorrow for sinne in an other kinde, because they would be well accounted of, by the best men and women: they would seeme to be religious: because this is a faire way to preferment and profite: when yet none of all this is godly sorrow: for this cries alwayes with holy *Dauid*, and laments most sins against God: *Against thee, against thee onely haue I sinned and Psal. 51. done euill in thy sight, that thou mayest be iust in thy iudgements, &c.*

Thirdly, it must be *Dolor particularis*: a man must be sorrowfull for his sinnes in particular, whereby hee hath offended God. It is not enough for a man to be sorrowfull generally because hee is a sinner, but hee must draw himselfe to more particulars, to an account, in what manner, and with what sinnes he hath displeased God, *Herr, herr, hodie, hodie*, yesterday, yesterday; to day to day: because as one sayes well; *Dolosus versatur in generalibus*, a deceiuer loues generalls: therefore let vs know, the duty consisteth in particulars, and we must come (so farre as it is possible) vnto the account of euery day, yea, euery houres sinne, and be so sorry for them. Thus the people confessed, *2. Sam. 12. 19. For wee haue added vnto all our 2. Sam. 12. 19. sinnes this euill, to aske for vs a King, &c.* So *Iudg. 10. 10. Iudg. 10. 10. 1* they say, *Wee haue sinned against thee, both because wee haue forsaken our God, and serued Baalim.* Now as concerning particular sorrow, we must doe as Physicians doe *Physicians* with diseased bodies, when they finde a generall distemperature in the body, they labour by all the art they can to draw the humour to another place, and then they break it, and bring out all the corruption that way: All which is done for the ease of the patient. Euen so we must doe when we haue a generall and confused sorrow for our sinnes

sinnes; labour as much as may be to draw them vnto particulars: as to say, in this, and in this, and at such and such a time, in such an occasion, and in such a place I haue sinned against my God.

4

Traine of  
gunpowder.

*Psal. 51.*

*Matt.*

The Fourth thing in godly sorrow is, *Dolor Reprehensivus*, a reprehensive sorrow, which is such a sorrow, that though it begin but in a few particulars, yet at length it drawes in all with it: euen as a traine of gun-powder, when one corne is set on fire, it will not leaue vntill all be fired and in a blaze, so true sorrow though it begin but with one or a few sinnes: yet it drawes in all the rest ere long, for which we haue not sorrowed. So *David* we see had no rest by reason of one sinne, *Psal. 51.* but at last it was not long ere it came into many heads, and set him a worke to complaine of more; yea, euen to looke backe to his originall corruption: euen so wee must not thinke it enough to repent of one speciall or particular sinne, and so cease; but our sorrow must extend it selfe vnto all: we must gather in with our particular sinnes: which shewes the great defect which for the most part is in the Repentance commonly vsed in the world: If they repent of one sinne, they thinke it is enough and rest in that: So *Iudas* did make a shew of Repentance for one offence: and so many other doe; yea, and with teares: who yet misse of repentance, because they neuer descend to search and trie their selues in particulars: for true sorrow so begins, as it at length drawes in all.

5

The Fift property in this sorrow is, that it be *Dolor Proportionalis*: that is, if our sinnes bee great, our sorrow for sin must be so much the greater: If sins bee few and little, our sorrow may bee the lesse, and sooner attaine peace of conscience: Therefore this must needs be a great corruption and selfe-deceite in the ordinarie repentance of the world: that what kinde of sinne so euer they commit, there is but one measure of sorrow for it. Wee may



may see of *Manasses*, his sinne was great, and his contrition was great, it is said, *That Mannasseth was humbled 2. Chron. 32. greatly*; So *Peter* in denying his Master, it was a great *Math.* sinne, and therefore his sorrow was proportionable; it is said, *Then Peter went out and wept bitterly*: So *Hezekiah 2. Chron.* committed a great sinne, in shewing his treasure, and hee was brought very low for it. So if we haue sinned greatly, it is certaine our sorrow must bee proportionable, as wee see by experience, he who falleth into the midst of *Riuer* fallen a riuer, must labour and take more paines to get out, in then he who slippeth in but at the brinke of it; euen so if wee fall into great sinnes, it must and will cost vs more sorrow and teares, then if we fall into lesser sinnes onely.

The Third maine thing I shewed in the practise of Repentance, is *Deprecation*: which is, a sending vp of *3* *Maine thing.* earnest and heartie petitions and requests vnto God for the pardon of sinnes, when once he hath seene himselfe to bee a wretched and agriuous sinner: then to begge humbly at the Throne of grace for Iesus Christs sake to haue them all pardoned and done away: In summe to haue good things giuen, and all euills they deserue removed: this is Deprecation. Holy *Danid* was exceeding frequent in this duty in many Psalmes; as *Psal. 51. Blot out all my offences, and wash mee from my sinnes*: So the *Publican, Luk. 18. O Lord bee mercifull to mee a sinner*: *Luk 18. Thus* in this case wee must not rest like *Indas* vpon a bitter, sowre and heauy remembrance of our sinne onely, *Indas.* but become humble suitors to the Throne of Grace for mercie, according to *Danids* experience. *Psal. 32. 6. For this shall every one that is godly, make his prayer vnto thee in an acceptable time, &c.* For what meanes he they should pray vnto God for? for houses or lands, or gold, or siluer; no, for no other thing, especially, then the forgiuenesse of sinnes: So in this case a man must behaue himselfe, as a poore prisoner at the barre, when the Iudge *Prisoner.* stands vp ready to giue sentence vpon him, he falls down vpon

Dan. 9. 20.

vp<sup>on</sup> his knees, and lifts vp his hands, lookes ruefully, speakes piteously, and begges for his life. He cannot misse to speed at Gods hand, as *Daniel* did, *Dan. 9. 20.* euen so, if a sinner can pierce the heauens with his cryes, and sollicite God earnestly, no question, he shall at length heare the voice of Christ say vnto him by his Spirit; *Go in peace, thy sinnes are forgiven thee.*

4

Psal. 119.

Psal. 29. 1.

Psal. 119.

The Fourth and last point in the *Practise of Repentance* is, *Resolution, to walke with God in newnesse of life,* as *Dauid* did, *Psal. 119. I haue sworne and will performe to keepe thy righteous law:* and *Psal. 39. 1. I said I will take heede to my wayes that I offend not with my tongue.* And againe, *Psal. 119. I considered my wayes, and turned my feet vnto thy Testimonies.* I made haste and delayed not; the time is now; not deferring till hereafter, now wee must resolute to leaue our sinnes, to walke with God with newnesse of life, and with all watchfulnesse ouer our owne hearts: then vnto resolution wee must ioyne a holy, constant indeauour, vsing all good meanes, and remoouing the lets and hinderances which stop and hinder our repentance, which is now the next thing wee are to speake of.

---

LECT. 7.

---



# LECT. VII.

## VII.

# THE IMPEDIMENTS of Repentance.

IOB. 15. 31.

*Let not him that is deceived trust in vanitie, for vanitie shall be his recompence.*



He Spirit of God by *Salomon* hath iustly taxed all things vnder the Sun to be vanitie and vexation of Spirit, All vanitie. so may I iustly now being to speake of the impediments of Repentance, censure all these lets and hinderances which detaine men from this so necessarie Grace, vnder the Name of vanitie, whatsoeuer they bee : and vanitie shall be their recompence. Wee spake the last day of the Practise of Repentance, wherein must bee foure things; First, a man must search out his sinnes by the bright candle of the word of God. Secondly, when he hath found out his sinnes, then he must bee sorry for them. Thirdly, then



Then hee must pray to God in Christ Iesus to forgive them. Fourthly, Then he must resolute against them, that is, renounce and remove them as farre as may be. Which practise of repentance must be not only once in an age, or a mans life: but as our sinnes be dayly, so our repentance must be every day performed so long as wee live in this life.

Stone.

Now in the next place we are to speake of the *Impediments of repentance*; and those deceits which hinder men and women from this dutie. Generall or vniuersall motion (as Schoolemen say) is caused two wayes: First, Either *Agendo*, by enforcing vp that which wee meane to mooue, as when a man flings a stone with his hand: Or *Remouendo prohibens quod impedit*, or remoouing of that which hinders the motion; as when a stone lieth vpon a shelve, when one pulles this away, then by and by downe falls the stone of his owne accord and yet hee who pulled away the shelve caused that motion of the stone. But how? Not *Agendo*, by flinging of the stone downe; but by *Remouendo prohibens*, remoouing of that which hindered the motion of it. Now as it is in vniuersall motions, so also it is in speciall motions of the mind; for they be caused, first either directly by an immediat impression made vpon the mind, as when a man is directly inuited to goodnesse or vertue. Secondly, or by remoouing the impediments which hinder vs from it. Of the first I haue spoken in the practise of repentance formerly. It shall not therefore be amisse now to speake of the impediments in the next place: wherein two things are required of euery one:

1. *Christian wisdom to finde out the let.*
2. *Christian care to remooue it.*

First, there must be Christian wisdom to finde out the lets; for in euerie man there is some speciall barre or let, which if he can finde out, or light vpon, there is the wisdom

wisedome, to be wise to finde out these pressing downe weights, as the Apostle calls them. They who haue water running home in pipes and conduits to their houses, as soone as they want that which they see their neighbors haue at their doores close by them, by and by they search into the causes, and run to the conduit or the pipes, to see wherethey be stoppt, or what is the defect: Euen so must euerie man do, when he findes that the grace of Repentance flowes into other mens hearts, and hath no recourse or access into his soule, by and by sit downe and search himselfe what the cause should be, where the rub lies which detaines the grace of Repentance from him, seeing they that liue (it may be) in the same house, sit at the same table, lie in the same bed, they can be penitent for their sinnes, forrie that they haue offended God, and so complaine in bitterness of soule for their sinnes: but hee that had the same meanes, the same occasions, more sinnes to be humbled for, more time to repent, and more motiues to draw him to the dutie, is not yet moued with the same, melted with griefe, nor come neere this dutie of contrition. Thus as I said, euery man must looke to himselfe, what that is which hinders his repentance. We see when Christ cast out the diuel, *Mat. 17. 19.* his disciples came vnto him saying, *Why could not wee cast him out?* So when we see others in the course of their life, and midst of their sinnes brought vnto repentance, mourning & weeping for sinnes wherby they haue offended God; let vs looke into our selues, and enquire at our owne hearts, why we doe not repent, why we cannot do as other good people doe. We haue the same meanes, the same preaching, the same exhortations, yea the same iudgements, the same punishments, the same afflictions. But alas, Where shall we find that man, or that woman, who are thus carefull to search into themselves? There is not one of a hundred, but they lie still in their sinnes without repentance: and few or none desires to search into the cause what it is which hinders their repentance, making them vnapt to

Diuel cast out.  
*Mat. 17. 19.*

Candle. So good a duty. Nee see in experience, let one come to light a candle, if it will not presently take fire, wee imagine and runne by and by to consider what should be the reason of it, and wee iudge that the wicke is wet, or something is amill. O how wise men can bee for the things of this life, and are careless for those things which concerne eternall happinesse.

Wee are to know then that the Impediments of Repentance be of two sorts ;

1. *Some bee in the Iudgement.*

2. *Some bee in the Affections.*

Sicke man.

Euen as when a man is sicke, and will not take the good physicke which would cure him, the defect is, either in his Iudgement or in his Affections. In his Iudgement, because either hee doth not feele himselfe to bee sicke, though hee be ill, hee hath no apprehension thereof, or if hee doe, yet hee doth not take it to be dangerous or deadly : or though hee thinke it dangerous, yet hee thinkes hee may remoue it without Physicke, or if he must haue physicke, yet he needs not such physicke, or in such qualitie as is there prescribed. Yet there may be for all this a storme in his Affections, though the Iudgement doe come on to yeeld : for either a man may be so busie in the world that hee cannot attend it, or spare time for it, or hee is so tender, that he cannot abide the least thing which may offend him, or thinke physicke to bee bitter as many doe. Yea, a number will choose to die, rather then meddle with it. Now these be the reasons partly in iudgement, and partly in the Affections, why such sicke patients will not admit of that physicke which might doe them good. As the case is in bodily sicknesse, so is it with those who are spiritually sicke with sinne. Repentance is that physicke which God hath appointed for the healing of them, and curing of their soules. which potion sinfull men refuse to take, the causes being as I haue shewed, partly in the Iudgement, and partly in the affections.



In the *Judgement*, there be foure impediments of Repentance; First, *because men doe not know or finde themselves to bee sicke of sinne*, nor would haue others to thinke them sicke, they presume therefore that all is well with them, for they know neither disease nor infirmities, and so because they live as others live, and doe as others doe, they thinke Repentance needlesse: and feeling no sicknesse, they neuer thinke of Physicke. This kinde of deceite is reprooued, *Iob 15. 3. 1. Let not him that is deceived trust in vanitie, for vanitie shall be his recompence.* So wee see *Mal. 3. 7.* when God bade the people returne from their sinnes vnto him, they answered stubbornly, *Wherein shall wee returne?* So doe the wicked men of this world answer God, wherein haue wee offended? wherefore should I repent? This is the first Impediment in iudgement, when men doe not finde themselves sicke in sinne.

Impediment;

*Iob 15. 3. 1.*

*Mal. 3. 7.*

The second is, *When men know themselves to bee sicke of sinne, but doe not thinke their sinnes to bee deadly;* They thinke indeed they haue some traillies, some imperfections, some pettie sins, some small sins: but in accusing themselves, they can say as the Pharisee, *Luke 18. I thanke God I am no Adulterer, Extortioner, &c.* And so they thinke themselves in no danger. As a man that in the eagernes of fighting, receiueth a small wound with a sword, and neuer lookes after it, or thinks it worth the curing; so men in the affaires of the world, adding sin to sin, neuer looke after them as needing Repentance, because they suppose them slight and small, &c.

Impediment.

One fighting.

The third Impediment is, *That though they take themselves to bee sinners, and their sinnes to be deadly; yet they thinke that God is mercifull, a gracious God, and they may bee saved without Repentance.* But *Deut. 29. The Lord thunders against such:* and plainly assures such presumptuous persons, that his wrath shall smooke against such

Impediment.

*Deut 29.*

*Math. 3. 9.*

such, and he would not be mercifull vnto them; but all the curses written in that Book should come vpon them, yea, this is that which *Iohn Baptist* exprobrateth the Iews for, *Math. 3. 9.* And thinke not to say with your selues, wee haue Abraham for our Father: for verily I say vnto you, that God is able euen of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

4  
Impediment.

*Exod.**1. Sam. 15. 24.*

The Fourth is, *That though wee thinke Repentance is needfull, yet wee need not (say some) so strict a kinde of Repentance as the Scripture speakes of?* If a man can say, Lord forgive mee, wee are all sinners, and such like, it is sufficient, it will serue the turne well enough. *Pharoah* thought Repentance was needfull, but it was a slight one, hee did not thinke so strict a one needfull as was prescribed. So *Saul* thought Repentance needfull when *Samuel* came and told him what hee had done, *Yet saith hee, Honour mee before the People*, hee cared not whether he had any honour before God or not, so the people might honour him. These be the foure Impediments in the Iudgement which hinder and keepe backe Repentance: either that wee doe not finde our selues to bee sinners, or though wee be sinners, yet not so great sinners to require Repentance, or though wee be sinners, yet God is mercifull, and can saue vs without our Repentance; Or, though wee must repent; yet that there is no need of so strict a Repentance.

Now as there be these impediments in the Iudgement, so there be also in the Affections diuers lets, for although a man findes himselfe to be a sinner against God and his owne conscience, and that there is no way of Reconciliation to come out of his sinne, but by Repentance; Yet he still findes impediments in his Affections to detain and hold him from this so necessarie dutie.

*The*

## The Impediments in the Affections,

Are first, *The loue of the world*, when men are so carried away with the loue thereof, that they cannot attend vnto Repentance, so taken vp with the cares of life, and the hopes of pleasures, profite, preferment, and such like, that they can neither come to this account & reckoning of the soule with Repentance, nor dare aduenture vpon it, for feare of losing the benefites of a present life. Such was the case of those who were invited to Christs Banquet, *Math. 22. 5*, Such also is our case, wee are all so intentiue to these worldly affaires, our Farmes, our wiuies, our oxen, &c. that we cannot come vnto Repentance, which is, the Banquet of our soules to attaine saluation. *Math. 22. 5.*

The next is, *The loue of our Pleasure*, that is, men cannot abide the sober and sad things that belong to Repentance, they must be merry, they must haue their delights, pastimes, and deuices, as *Esay 22. 13*. The Lord complaines, that when he called to sorrow and mourning, behold ioy and gladnesse, killing of oxen, eating of flesh, and drinking of wine. Thus pleasure is great a let.

The third is; *The loue of our own Ease*: for men cannot endure to take any paines in prayer, holy duties, thing appertaining to the sauing of their soules: they had rather lye warme in their soft beds, then rise to religious exercises, then goe to heauen in *Elias* fiery chariot. It is said, *Math. 2*. That when Christ was borne, all Israell was troubled, and why? they thought Christ could not come into his kingdome without a great deale of trouble, and it might be, cost many of their liues: so doe many now adayes shunne religion for their owne ease. It is said, *Psal*, *They despised the pleasant land*; and why did they



Good land; they despise it, for it was a pleasant land indeed : and a good land ? yea, such a place as they could haue beene contented to haue inioyed it ; but because it asked of them so much paine, trouble, and ( in their sight ) hazard to goe to it ; therefore they did despise it : euen so heauen it is a good thing, and men could be content with that, but because it will cost them such a deale of trouble and paines, therefore they care not for it.

4      The Fourth lett is, *The loue of their sinnes*, men and  
 Impediment. women are so intangled with them, that they cannot  
 leaue them for their liues, *Math. 2. 3.* how were all Ie-  
 Birth of Christ rusalem troubled, and the Priests for the birth of Christ :  
 and *Esa* he could not leaue his strange wiues, hee did so  
 Gen. 28. 9. dore vpon them, *Gen. 28. 9.* Although hereby he lost the  
 fauour of his Father. Euen so men doe dore vpon their  
 sinnes, and so loue them, that they had rather part with  
 Heauen and happinelle, and with Gods fauour then  
 with them.

5      The Fifth is, *The desire to keepe credite with the world* :  
 Impediment. to doe as other men doe ; for they thinke, if they repent  
 and take a new course of life, the world will then point  
 at them, they shall be accounted precise and pure men,  
 this is that which doth hinder many men in their Repen-  
 tance : So to this purpose the Iewes, Pharisees inquire.  
 Jobn. 4. 22. *But doe any of the Rulers beleue in him ?* and *Iohn 4. 22.*  
 it is said, *That many beleueed in him, but did not confesse  
 him because of the Iewes.* Now, this is the reason why  
 men liue in their sinnes without Repentance, because  
 they are not wise to finde out the speciall lett, which doth  
 hinder them. If I might be bold to make a secret questi-  
 on in the Church now, to know what is the reason wee  
 doe not repent and seeke Gods fauour ? seeing wee haue  
 heard, it is so needfull, so necessarie a Grace, without  
 which no man can be saued, why then doe wee not repent  
 and seeke Gods fauour, what is that which doth hinder  
 you ?

you? Is it not lets either in iudgements or in affections? Is it not because you thinke you are not sinners? or not great sinners? or that you thinke you may be saued without Repentance, or at least, if this may not bee, yet that you need not so serious, particular and strict a Repentance: as we teach you out of the word. If these let you not, are there not then lets in your Affections? that you so loue the world, and are so vigilant about the things of this life, that you haue no time to thinke of your sinnes: or is it not because yee loue your pleasures, and cannot abide the sad thoughts of Repentance; or, because you loue your owne ease, and cannot abide trouble; or is it not because you loue your sinnes and dote vpon them? or is it not because you would keepe credite with the world? How can you be able to answer to these things? I grant it is an easie matter to finde out the lett, and to lay the finger on the sore, and to say, this is the Barre which hindreth; but men are loath to deale so roundly with themselves, as to search out that which doth hinder their Repentance?

Now when we haue found out the Impediment, wee must remoue it; It was the care of the women when they came to the Sepulchre of Christ, to remoue the stone: so our care must be to remooue out of the way, what doth hinder and let vs in the course of Repentance. We reade *2. Sam. 20. 12.* That when all the people stood still at *Amasaes* dead corps, the men tooke it and drew it out of the way; and then the people ( who formerly stood still as they came ) followed their leaders. Euen so must wee doe, when our thoughts be at a stand, and will not suffer vs to goe on in the race of Repentance, by and by ridde them out of the way, remooue them when they hinder vs, pull them aside, cast a cloth ouer them, and let nothing hinder vs in our Christian course. To this purpose wee may obserue *Abrahams* wisdome and care, *Gen. 22. 5.* when he went to sacrifice his sonne, the text saith, that he

*Mark. 16.*  
Sepulchre,

*2. Sam. 20. 12.*  
*Amasaes* corps.

Servants left.

left his servant with the Asses, and why so? that his servants might not hinder him with their clamours and cries. *Abraham* in godly wisdom left them with the Asses; even so must wee doe in the case of Repentance, with whatsoever may hinder vs in our Christian course of seruice and holy duty: wee must leaue such things with the Asses; (that is,) we must renounce and remoue such things whatsoever they be, that wee bee not disappointed: and if it be defects of iudgement and affections which hinder vs, wee must pray vnto God to remoue the same. And wherefore all this? Because there are but two gates all men are to enter in at, there is a little Iron gate of repentance, which openeth to life and saluation, to heauen and happinesse, and to Gods fauour, and the great golden gate is that of worldly pleasure and profit, which openeth and leaeth to death and destruction, to hell and to torments for euer. Therefore at your choice be it (deare Brethren) which gate you will enter in at, the Iron gate of prayers and repentance in this life of Christianitie, which leades vnto the house of God, or the golden gate of worldly pleasures leading to Hell and destruction.

---

LECT. 8.

---





## LECT. VIII.

VIII.

# THE CASES OF Repentance.

First the case of Relapse:

REVEL. 25.

*Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and Repent, and doe the first workes: or else I will come unto thee quickly, and remooue the Candlesticke out of this place, vlesse thou repent.*



EE spake the last day of the Letts and Inpediments of Repentance, because as I said our way is made vnto Repentance by remoouing the Letts: Now the next thing we are to speake of is the *Cases of Repentance*; wherein the first shall be *The case of Relaps or Relapse*, as they tearme it, & that is, *Whether a man that hath once repented him of a sinne; may fall againe into the same sinne.* Quest.

I. Vnto

## I.

Answer.

Vnto which I answer, that *If a man haue not soundly repented him of his sinne, if hee haue failed in any one point of his repentance, in such case hee may fall easily againe into the same sinnes* : As for example, a man hath

Riotour.

beene a notorious riotour and cup-comparion, hee comes afterwards to looke into the hatefulnesse of his sinne, to condemne it in iudgement, to mislike it in affection, and yet because he could neuer bring his heart to resolute and fight against it, to sigh and be truly penitent ; to fashion himselfe to the vse of good exercises ; as Prayer, Meditation, and a solemn arraignment of himselfe, and such like, he may easily fall againe, because hee hath failed in some one point of his Repentance. So a man who hath

A Papist.

beene a Papist, and a worshipper of stocks and stones, he comes to see his sinne, to dislike it, to condemne and resolute against it ; thereupon hee turnes from Poperie, and yet because he is not truly turned into the obedience of the Gospell, to walke in holinesse before God, failing in some one or moe parts of his repentance, hee may fall to

Exed. 9. 27.

be a Papist againe. So *Pharaoh* did in some manner repent him of his sinne, yet because hee failed in the due practise and performance of the dutie, his heart being corrupted, hee remained obstinate. So the Lord complaines of the people, in the Prophecies of *Esay* and *Ieremie* 3. 3. *Thou hadst a whoores forehead, thou refusedst to bee ashamed* ; So that because of vnfound repentance,

Ier. 3. 3.

a man may easily fall into the same sinnes againe. *Indas* saw his sinnes and confessed them, but because he did not pray vnto God to forgiue them, nor resolute against them,

Math.

he fell away. Wee see in experience, if a man haue a Fel-  
lon or a soare vpon his hand, or a byle about him, if hee

A Fellow.

doe not draw out the corruption the better, but suffer it to rankle or swell againe, hauing stopt it too soone, it will breake out againe, and put him to further trouble and paine: Euen so it is in the nature of Repentance ; a number there be who haue not searcht their hearts the quick,

quicke, or suffered them to bleed out all the corruption ; And so hauing dealt partially and vnfoundly in their repentance, they finde it a matter of great difficultie to haue the heart perfectly sound : this is the first part of the Answer.

Yea, But if a man haue soundly repented him of his Obiect, sinnes, whether is it possible for that man to fall againe?

To this I answer, *There is a Generall, and there is a* Answ. *Particular Repentance.* Generall repentance is at a mans first conuersion, then he repents of all his sinnes ; Particular repentance is, when a man repents of some one particular sinne, which is committed after. Now a man may repent generally for all his sinnes, and yet hee may easily also fall into particuler sinnes againe, for *euery thing so workes* ( as they say in Philosophie ) *according to the propertie of his owne nature,* And so Generall repentance can but worke a generall dislike of sinne. Now therefore a man may millike sinne in generall, and yet fall into particuler sinnes of which he hath so generally repented.

I but if a man doe repent him of Particular sinnes, Queſt. 3. whether may hee fall into them againe or not ?

To this I answer, that if a man doe Repent truely of Answ. particular sinnes, such is the grace of God that hee doth not easily fall into them againe, and when he doth, it is seldome or very rare, and is much different from his former falls. First, not easily ; for the bitterneſſe and tartneſſe thereof is such, that it leaues such an impression behinde it, as they tremble to fall into the like sin againe. Wee reade, *Exod. 13. 17. 18.* that when God lead the *Exod. 13. 17. 18.* children of Israel out of *Aegypt*, he did not leade them the readiest and neereſt way, but hee led them through the wildernesse, a dangerous and fearfull way, full of fierie Serpents ; and why so ? *That they might be affraid to* *Israel's Peregrination.* *returne*



*returne to Egypt.* And euen so doth he deale by his seruants when hee brings them out of the bondage and thralldome of sinne, hee leades them a tedious and painfull way by many teares, by many sorrows; yea, the feare of Death and Hell; and all this, that they may be affraid to returne againe vnto *Egypt* to their former lusts and sins againe: By which meanes a number of Gods people and seruants haue beene preserued from their sinnes and haue repented.

Ans. 2.

Secondly, I say, *Though a man fall into the same sins after Repentance, yet hee very seldome so faileth,* There be some who thinke that if one haue truly repented of a particular sinne, he neuer falleth into it againe, but I dare not say so; For a man who repents him of the sinne of hastinesse and rash anger, and particularly of scolding and rash speeches, may fall againe into the same sinne that he hath repented, but this I say, if a man hath truly repented him of a sinne, hee shall very seldome fall into it, nor shall euer so often offend in that kinde: As wee see in a man that hath beene sicke of an Ague, and is recovered againe almost well, yet hee may haue some fits and grudgings of it, though not so often or extreame as before hee had. Euen so, though wee haue repented, wee may haue some falls and grudgings, but not so often, nor in those extreames as formerly.

Sicke Ague.

Ans. 3.

Thirdly, though men doe fall into the same sinne againe that they haue repented of: *Yet they fall not so evidently towards damnation, but with apparant difference from the former.*

Caution,  
They fall not  
damnably.

For first, all the falls of those that haue truly repented, *Be but particular falls, they bee not fallings away from all the graces of God, from all the loue of goodnessse, from all the conscience of duty, but onely from some particulars;* The wicked of the world when they fall into sinne, doe not stay themselues in some one particular sinne,

sinne, but let all goe at randome, and make a conscience of nothing. But the people of God, though they faile in some one dutie, yet they liue sincerely and carefully in all the rest, as *Reuel. 2.* The Churches are commended for many things, though discommended in some things: As *Asa* in Scripture, *1 King. 15. 14.* But the high places were not taken away, notwithstanding *Asa* his heart was perfect with the Lord all his dayes. So *Dauid* though a sinner in some things excuseth himselfe, *Psal. 18. 21.* For I haue kept the wayes of the Lord, and haue not wickedly departed from my God. Yea, it is further said of *Dauid*, that hee was a man after Gods owne heart, and kept all the commandements of God, sauing in the matter of *Vriah*, so howsoeuer the godly Fall, they fall not from all the duties of Religion, grace and goodnesse, but hold themselues to prayer and other holy duties. As a man in the climbing of a ladder, though his foote slip, yet if hee hold surely by his hands, hee will not let his hold goe: so it is with the people of God, though their feet slip through frailtie and weaknesse, yet they hold fast by the hands, and will not let goe their hold of Heauen which they haue by faith in God.

*Reuel. 2.*

*1. King. 15. 14.*

*Psal. 18. 21.*

Ladder-climbing.

Againe, If they fall, they fall with strife and resistance, there is a kinde of loathing and relictation in their falls; The motions of the spirit seeke to hinder the workes of the flesh: as *Gal. 5. 17.* For the flesh lusteth against the spirit, and the spirit against the flesh, so that you cannot doe those things which yee would. Thus though a man doe fall after Repentance, yet there is euer ioyn'd with it a certaine vnwillingnesse to fall, and follow the motions of the flesh: as a man that is loath to doe that which hee is drawne and forced to doe, as *St. Paul* sayes of himselfe, *Rom. 7. 15.* For that which I doe, I allow not: for what I would, that doe I not, but what I hate, that doe I. Wee see this also in *Peter*, hee denyed his Master fearefully, and very faintly, but yet presently got him in-

2

Caution with strife.

*Gal. 5. 16.*

*Rom 7 15.*

to

One dartie.

Exod. 32.2.

to the porch from the pretise of the people, and was indeed ashamed of what hee had done; as a man who by mischance is all beasty and durty, is loath to be seene by day; so after sinne men are ashamed to appeare before God, being confounded and stricken in their very conscience: So in *Exodus* in the storie of *Aaron*, *Exod. 32.2.* you may reade how faine would hee haue shifted off that sinne? what excuses did hee make, how loath was hee to doe it?

3  
They fall  
with feare.

Foure Lepers.

2. King. 7.

Going and  
falling in  
water.

Thirdly, *Cum formidine*, men sinne in this kinde fearfully, with a secret feare, they are affraid to sinne; they tremble and feare at Gods displeasure, whereas the world are euery way fearelesse, bold and venturous, and practise sinne as if they were neither affraid of Heauen or Hell, or the losse of Gods fauour, which though they haue heard of, yet they sinne still. But when the true Christian sinnes, it is *Cum formidine*, with feare, as the foure Lepers entred the Caimpe of the *Assyrians* and rob'd their tents, but with a kinde of feare and trembling, *2. King. 7. &c.* So it is with the people of God in their sinnes, the heart is stricke, and they are ashamed of what they doe, being affraid to bring Gods iudgements vpon them. Therefore there is a great difference in the falls of the one and the other; the one goes on in sin with boldnesse, the other are affraid, and tremble at Gods displeasure. There is (wee know) a great difference betwixt him that falls, and him that goes into a deepe dangerous water; hee that falls into a water, hee does it with feare; hee is dismayed at the perill and danger hee is in, but hee that goes in of himselfe hath a purpose to doe so, he doth it aduisedly, and is neuer affraid, but boldly aduentureth on the danger; so it is with the people of God, they fall into their sinnes with feare out of the frailtie of the flesh, against their owne mindes, to the displeasure of their hearts, but therest doe not so, but sinne purposely and aduisedly.

Fourthly,



Fourthly, *Though the godly fall, yet they desire to recover and to rise againe; as Iob 147. For there is hope of a tree, if it bee cut downe, that it will sproute againe, and that the tender branch thereof will not cease: Though the roote thereof waxe old in the earth, and the stocke die in the ground: Even so it is with the people of God, that howsoever the graces of God decay in them, and that they waxe drie in them, yet as long as there is life in the roote; and that the roote once comes to bee watered and renewed by the grace of the Spirit, they live againe by Repentance, comming vnto Reformation and newnelle of life: as you saw in David, Peter, Mary Magdalen, Mannaſſes: So David, Psal. 119. vlt. I haue gone astray like a lost sheepe; seeke thy seruant for I haue not forgotten thy commandements: David was lost as it were, but hee desired to come home againe. A sheepe you know when it is gone astray, and is out of the sheepfold from the fellows, is not at rest till it bee in the sheep-fold againe; so the people of God when they fall by their sins and corruptions, they are not at quiet or rest vntill they haue returned home to God, and are in the sheepfold againe.*

4

They desire to  
rise ag. inc.  
Iob 147.

Psal. 119. vlt.

A sheepe.

Now it may bee some man may be obiect, *If this be so that one may fall againe into the same sinnes after Repentance; what comfort can any man haue in this estate.*

Obiect.

I answer, there are two comforts belonging thereunto.

Ans.

First, that though men may fall so after Repentance, yet they neuer fall quite away, so long as they hold them to the use of good measures, attend to Prayer, reading, meditation, and other religious exercises, reading and hearing of the Word preached: the administring of the Sacraments, with watchfulnesse ouer our owne hearts; liues, and courses. David fell not when hee was constant in these courtes, but when hee began to bee loose and idle. So likewise *Indab* one of *Iacobs* sonnes, committed a great sinne, but when was it; when hee was constant in good

1

2 Sam.

Genes.

good courses, holding himselfe vnto good means : not, but it was when hee grew loose, and lett the societie of his brethren and neglected good meanes: but if wee hold our selues constantly to the meanes, wee shall not fall into grosse sinnes.

2

Rom. 8. 28.

Childe, fire,  
water.

The second comfort is, That although it come to passe that wee doerall, yet our falles shall turne to our good : as Saint *Paul* saith, *Rom. 8. 28.* *All things shall worke together for the best, vnto them that loue God.* And *Augustine* to this purpose saith, That it is good that the Lord let some men fall into sinne, that they the better may see what they are by nature, and bee yet more humbled for it : As we see if a childe be busie about the fire or water; the father will of purpose put the fire to his childs fingers, not with intent to hurt him, but to make him afraid: so when God sees his children too busie with sinne, he will bring them neere some punishment or iudgment to bring them vnto repentance, and at last comfort them.

Faire building

2. Chron. 3. 15.

A mine of  
gold.

This much might seeme to haue beene enough of this case of repentance: but becaute as in the goodly building of some faire house, the master pillars haue more workmanship and labour then any other particulars, as we read of the two maine pillars of *Salomons Temple*, *2. Chron. 3. 15.* So becaute that Faith and Repentance bee the maine pillars in building the spiritual house of God in our consciences. it is no maruell if they take vp more labour and time then all therest *Chrysostom* saith wel, That if one in digging do light vpon a mine of gold, he will digge still, and neuer giue ouer, till that veine doth faile; so becaute wee are lighted vpon a veine the Doctrine of Repentance, more precious than Gold; and Faith that will stand by vs in our death, when our gold will leaue vs: doe not blame me, if I digge still, labour still, as long as I may bring you aduantage.

Now hauing handled the first branch of this first case, come we to the second branch thereof.

Whether

II.

*Whether a man that thus falls into the same sinne againe, may bee renewed by repentance.*

2  
Branch.

I answer two wayes : First, *That a man may though* Answ.  
*with difficultie* ; that is, if a man fall often and appar-  
rantly into the same sinnes, it is so much the more hard  
and difficult to bee cured and renewed ; as wee see in the  
bodie, if a man fall into the Relapse of an Ague, or any Relapse of an  
dangerous disease, it may cost him his life, and his health Ague.  
will very hardly bee recovered : Euen so it is, after a  
man hath fallen into the same sinne againe. I doe not  
say hee may not recouer, or bee renewed by repentance,  
but it will the more hardly be done, and it will cost much  
terror, labour and sorrow. Wee may then see that in  
this case recouery is possible, and that vpon three  
grounds.

The first is taken, *From the generality of the Promise,* 1  
which in generall is made to pardon of all sinnes, except  
the sinne against the Holy Ghost : as *Math. 12. Verily* Math. 12. 31.  
*verily I say vnto you, that all sinne and blasphemie shall be*  
*forgiuen a man, except the blasphemie against the Holy*  
*Ghost.* But a man may fall into Relapses through weak-  
nesse, which is not the sinne against the Holy Ghost, and  
therefore may be forgien.

The second ground is taken *A comparatis : From the* 2  
*condition of the Promise, Luk. 17. 4.* Where Christ hath Luk. 17. 4.  
giuen vs a commandement that wee should forgieue our  
brother seuentie times seuen times a day, so often as hee  
repenteth and is sorrowfull : and *Math. 6. Christ threat-* Math. 6. 14.  
*neeth, If you doe not forgieue your brother his trespasses, no*  
*more will your heauenly Father forgieue you your trespas-*  
*ses.* So then, if a man must forgieue his trespasses that his  
brother trespasseth against him so often, all which is not  
a drop of mercie compared with Gods mercie ; how



much more wil Godforgiue them that sinne against him; againe, and againe, if they doe repent, seeing hee is the Ocean of mercie and goodnesse.

3

Judges.

The third ground is, *ab Exemplis*: from sanctified examples of holy Scripture, for wee see in the booke of *Judges*, when there were any bad Iudges in Israel, the people fell away from God vnto Idolatrie, and when there came good Iudges, the Prophets came and exhorted the people to returne againe vnto God and repent, and so they did recouer againe. So in the Booke of *Kings* wee see that when bad Kings came, they fell away from God, and yet when good Kings came againe, the Prophets preached and exhorted them; and they repented, and were receiued into fauour againe. Here therefore we haue to acknowledge the kindnesse and mercy of God. It is his mercie to forgiue vs, if wee doe sinne but once in our lifetime against him. But great and exceeding great is his mercie; that when wee haue sinned and sinned so exceeding oft against him, that (euen then) vpon repentance hee will receiue vs. Wee read the Lord declares this much, *Ier. 3. If a man put away his wife, and she become another mans: If shee returne againe to her husband, shall not this land bee polluted: but thou hast played the harlot with many louers, yet returne againe to me saith the Lord.* Thus there may bee forgiuenesse, euen after many relapses. It is the charitie of the Popish Church, if a man relapse into Heresie, though he doe repent, hee cannot bee forgiuen. The Pope and his Cardinals will not, may not forgiue him, but the kindnesse and tender-nesse of God is such, that though a man doe fall into the same sinne hee hath repented of, hee may bee forgiuen, and shall vpon Repentance bee forgiuen. Oh then, shall not the despisers of Gods kindenesse bee iudged of him.

Ierem. 3.

Answ. 2.

But yet I say, *Though Repentance be possible, yet it will*

be

bee very hard and difficult; and that in two respects;  
First in respect of God:

1. *God will not bee so easily intreated to forgive*, I do not say that he will not forgive, but that hee more hardly remits these sinnes, then others.

2. *In respect of our selves, we shall not finde our selves so readie, nor our hearts so apt to repent*, in this Relapie, as otherwise wee might haue done.

This then I say, that if wee prouoke the Lord too often with some sinnes, wee shall not finde him so readie to forgive as at other times, nor so easie to bee intreated: So saith our Sauour Christ, *John 5. 14. Behold thou art made whole, sinne no more, lest a worse thing come vnto thee.* And so if we doe sinne, *Deterius accidet*; a worse thing may befall vs. Looke into the tenth of *Judges*, *Judg. 10. 13. 14* and there you shall finde how the children of Israel had fallen into Apostasie concerning their Idolatrie, which they repented of, and so prayed vnto the Lord, but the Lord would not heare their prayers, but turned them off with scorne, deriding them: the words are these; *Yet yee haue forsaken mee and serued other gods, therefore I will deliuer you no more, goe and cry vnto the gods whom yee haue chosen, let them deliuer you in the time of your Tribulation.* So then, if wee make no conscience to fall into a sinne often which wee haue repented of; let vs not maruell if God doe not heare vs at the first; for if wee stand vpon tearmes with God for the hearing and helping of vs by and by, take heed hee say not vnto vs, goe away I will not helpe you, goe vnto your sinnes, and the worldly pleasures, proflites, honours that you haue serued, let them helpe you. It is true indeed, that all the Scriptures declare God to be a mercifull God; to bee full of compassion, and very ready to forgive, but when wee shall therefore imbolden our selves to sinne, and desperately come to aske Almighty God, how often

Hhh 2

wee

*Psal. 78. 40.**Psal. 95. 8.**Iob. 40. 5.**Math. 25.*

wee may sinne: if it bee but once or twice it is too much; but say it bee once or twice, and the Lord forbearcs vs with patience, then let vs beware wee doe not prouoke the Lord by falling backe vnto the same sinnes after wee haue repented, for when it comes to *Quoties peccavimus*, how often haue wee offended in the same sinne, the Lord no question will bee much displeased, hardly drawne to forgiue, and not easily appealed towards such offenders; for hee complaincs of such, *Psal. 78. 40. How often did they prouoke him in the wilderness and grieue him in the Desert? And Psal. 95. 8. To day if you will heare his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the 'Prouocation of the wilderness, when your fathers tempted mee. And Iob 40. 5. hee sayes, Once haue I spoken, but I will speak no more; yea twice, but I will proceed no further? Math. 25. How often saith God would I haue gathered thee together, as a henne gathereth her chickens, but yee would not. Fortie yeares long (saith hee of his owne people) was I vexed with you in the wilderness: If it had beene but for some few yeares, hee could haue borne the matter, but it was fortie yeares together; God is indeed very readie, and mercifull to forgiue, but when it is so often committed, this makes Gods cares bee heauie and stopt to our cries; yea, and our selues to bee so much the more vnfit for the businesse. I speake not this to cut off any man from the hope of pardon: God forbid that wee should take away mercy from the Lord, but to shew that men which fall into the Relapse of the same sinnes are in greater danger then before, and it makes God the lesse readie to forgiue them, and to bee intreated of them.*

2

Secondly, *In regard of our selues, it workes a difficultie in vs, wee being so much the harder hearted, and lesse readie to repent.* First, because of the nature of sinne, which is to leaue a promptnesse and readinesse in vs to the same sinne: leauing a stainc and a blot behinde it; as when by often liting vp a burden, wee finde it lighter and



and lighter, and passe away with it so much the more slightly ; so by often offending wee make our selues the readier to sinne, and so come to hardnesse of heart ; and backwards to repent. To this purpose is that speech of the Prophet, *Ier. 13. 23. Can the Ethiopian change his skinne, or the Leopard his spots, then may you also doe good who are accustomed to doe euill ?* Secondly, because as *Dionysius* hath it, *Consuetudo peccandi, tollit sensum peccandi* ; so that when a man falls into a sinne, by continuing in the same, hee becomes the lesse sensible and feeling of the same ; which makes him the hardlier to bee drawne to repentance. For as you see it is dangerous for a man to haue a bone broken often in some one place, for it may hardly be ioyned againe, or fester, or neuer come to its full strength : So when a man falls into the same sinne, he shall finde much adoe to rise and recall himselfe ; as a man that at the first goes away from the fire, it makes him the more chill and cold after, but after that hee hath bene a time in the cold, hee can the better indure it : So it is with sinne, when wee commit it at first, our iudgements are against it ; our reasons fight against it, and our consciences are checked and vnquiet for it : But if a man continue in it and sinne often, hee is neuer touched for it, but his heart becomes past feeling, secure, and hardened, and so the worke is more difficult in regard of our selues. And thus it appeares, that there is pardon for such who fall into the same sinne againe ; but it is very hard and difficult to attaine the sense and assurance of it.

Bone broken.

Chill from fire.

Now against this doctrine there bee two Obiections Obiect. 1.  
made, the first of them is out of *Heb. 6. 4. 5.* For it is impossible that they who were once enlightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and haue tasted of the good word of God, and of the powers of the world to come ; if they fall away should bee renewed by Repentance.

I answer, that if a man fall away from all grace and

Hhh 3

goodnesse

goodnesse, which is that *St. Paul* speaks of, then it is impossible to be renewed by repentance, because such can neuer repent; but if a man doe fall but from degrees of grace, hee may recouer againe, for mention is made onely of falling from all duties of Religion and grace, otherwise the Saints falling onely from degrees and some measures of Grace, may recouer againe and bee renewed by Repentance.

Obiect. 2.  
*Heb. 10. 26.*

The other Obiection is grounded vpon much like such another place of Scripture, *Heb. 10. 26.* *For if wee sinne willingly after wee haue receiued the knowledge of the truth, there remaines no more sacrifice for sinne, but a fearfull looking for of Iudgement, &c.*

Answ.

To this I answer, that the word *willingly*, signifies *wilfully* and *spitefully*, as it were of purpose to vexe and grieue the Spirit of God. Thus to doe (after a man hath receiued the knowledge of the truth) for such a one there remaines no more sacrifice for sinnes, because his hard heart shall neuer repent, whom God thus giues ouer: but for sinnes done otherwise willingly often; yea, against conscience and knowledge: there remaines alwayes Sacrifices euen after Repentance, knowledge of the truth and inlightned tasting of the heauenly gift; *For the Gospell must no where be stricter, but much more comfortable to miserable sinners then the Law was.* Now vnder the Law there was of purpose constant reiterated sacrifices for sinnes done euen willingly: as *Leuit. 6. 2.*

*Leuit. 6. 2, 3, 4.*

3. 4. Therefore much more it must be so vnder the state of Grace in the Gospell.



## LECT. IX.

### II.

# THE CASE OF ITERATION of Repentance.

DAN. 9.10.

*Neither haue wee obeyed the voice of the Lord our God, to walke in his lawes which hee set before vs by his seruants the Prophets.*

*Yea, all Israel haue transgressed thy Law, euen by departing, that they might not obey thy voyce, therefore the curse is poured upon vs, and the oath that is written in the law of Moses the seruant of God, because wee haue sinned against him, &c.*



**O**F the first case of Repentance wee haue already spoken, as also of the two branches thereof; First, whether a man that hath repented a sinne, may fall againe into the same sinne? Secondly, whether so falling, hee may bee renewed by Repentance.

The next case wee are now to come vnto is, *The case of Iteration of Repentance: which is, whether a man that hath truly Repented him of a sinne once, be bound to*

Object,



*Repent the same sinne over and over againe.*

**Answer.**

I answer, *The case is cleere, that a man is bound to repent one and the same sinne often: The answer is easie, but the explication is hard; but I will lay it downe affirmatiuely, A man can neuer too often repent him of a sin, but the more hee repents, the more comfortable shall bee his life, and his prayers more answering: Indeed if a mans repentance were perfect at first, then a man need but once repent a sinne. But because all our Repentance is defective, and that it is found a worke of great difficultie, therefore it must be often done, to assure that it is well done. So seeing our repentance doth still want somewhat*

**Rowe.**

*of waight, wee had need goe often and againe to renew the same. Wee see a man in rowing may lose more at a stroke, then hee can recouer at three or foure againe; so a man may lose more by one act of sinne, then hee can recouer by many acts of Repentance. So, this is the state of a Christian, sinne once, and repent often, by the sinne of an houre wee gather matter of mourning and heavinesse for many yeares after; so that the case is cleere, a man who hath repented truly of a sinne, is bound often to repent of the same sinne. A Painter when he makes a*

**Palmer.**

*goodly picture, he drawes line vpon line, and colour vpon colour, till hee haue perfected his picture; so must it be in Repentance, wee must renew our sorrow and grieue for sinne, till our repentance bee perfect; for if it were weighed at the best in the Ballance of the Sanctuarie, as*

**Dan. 5.**

*Balthazar was, it would bee found light. Wee see in Davids experience, how stood the case with him after he had committed that great sinne, 2.Sam.12.13. of murder and adulterie, vpon his Repentance the Prophet Nathan told him that his sinne was pardoned, that God had put away his sinne, and yet Daniel cast himselfe downe with great humiliation, would neuer haue done with his repentance, but lamented and mourned for it long after: So though wee haue repented of a sinne, wee must not thinke to buy our peace at so easie a rate, but*

**2.Sam.12.13.**

*humble*

humble our soules with sorrow and teares, renewing our repentance againe and againe, neuer leauing till we haue pacified the wrath of God: for how often doth this holy man plye this sute? So *Psal. 25* hee prayes God not to remember the sinnes of his youth: So you see *Dauid* did repent him of those sinnes hee had repented of before. *Chrysostome* sayes well, that *Dauid* still repented of sins done long before, as though they had beene done but yesterday.

Saint *Paul* did not onely repent of his sinne of persecuting the Church of God at his first conuersion, *Act. 9. 9.* but as oft as hee remembred it, as oft doth he speake of it with griefe and sorrow, *1. Tim. 1. 13.* *I was before a blasphemer, a persecutor, iniurious, &c.* So *1. Cor. 15. 9.* *I am not worthie (sayes hee) so bee called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God:* So that *St. Paul* you see doth often remember his sinnes past and confesses them. This much wee may well obserue when God cast *Adam* out of *Paradise*, hee sent him *è regione borti*, and set and placed him ouer against the garden in the very sight and view of the place which hee had lost through his sinne and offending God, and why was this? that so often as hee lookt into the garden, hee might remember his sinne and lament for it. Now that which *Adam* did in the beholding of the Garden, is that which wee must doe in the beholding of Heauen, hee saw from whence he was cast, throwne out of *Paradise* by reason of his sinne, and wee see what wee are sure to lose, euen heauen it selfe by reason of our sinne, if wee doe not repent and humble our soules, and that timely and daily. Thus you see it is cleere that a Christian is bound to repent one and the same sinne diuers times, and as oft as he lookes vpto heauen to sigh and groane for the losse of it, and not to bee satisfied, though he haue repented to day, and so is assured of pardon, but in the Name of God: to goe to it againe to morrow, and to morrow, and neuer giue ouer.

Against

Obiect.

Against this doctrine two things may bee objected,  
First, *If a mans sinnes upon his Repentance be pardoned,*  
*then what need is there upon this to repent any more? this*  
*appeares to bee labour lost.*

Answ. r.

Three causes  
of renewing  
Repentance.

I

I answer, that though a mans sinnes bee pardoned upon Repentance, yet there are three causes why a mans repentance must bee renewed; First, because, *Eadem manet obligatio*: the same Bond remaineth still, for though God out of his owne goodnesse and mercie forgieue our sinnes, yet neuerthelesse haue wee the same Cause to condemne our selues, to dislike and bee sorry for it, because the same bond or tye remaines still, though God haue graciously pardoned it, yet it is our duty to repent still: Nay to speake as the truth is; *Crescit obligatio*; our bond is the greater, for the more mercy and goodnesse God shewes vs in the pardoning of our sinnes, wee haue alwayes the more cause to be abased and ashamed that wee haue sinned against him. This (as wee see) made an exaggeration in *Dauids* grieve, *Inte solum peccavi*, I haue sinned against thee alone; what had *Danid* sinned against none but God? no question against *Uriah*, *Barsheba*, and the people, but that went to the heart of him most of all, and did more deeply touch him, that he had giuen God cause to bee angry with him, who was so ready to forgieue him, that had shewed him so great kindnesse and mercy in the pardoning and forgiuing of all his sinnes. So Gods mercie to vs in pardoning our sinnes, should not bee a meanes to abate our repentance, but rather to augment and increase it, because there remaines in vs still the same seeds of ougliness, vilenesse, deformitie and corruption as formerly, the pardon whereof being great, should continually augment and reiterate our Repentance with holy *Dauid*, *Psal. 103. Praise the Lord O my soule, praise the Lord, and forget not all his benefites: who forgives thee all thy sinnes, &c.* Thus Gods mercie in forgiuenesse of sinnes should not abate, but  
increase

Psal. 51.

Psal. 103.



increase our repentance; as wee see in the storie of the Prodigall sonne, *Luke 15.20.* hee had a purpose to confesse his sinne, when hee returned to his father: his Father could not containe himselfe for joy, but runne out to meet and imbrace him; yet this makes him not slacke in his former determination to humble himselfe, but rather spurs him to fall downe and humble himselfe vnto his Father, confessing his faults: So Gods readinesse to forgive vs, should bee so farre from abating our repentance, that it should rather prouoke vs vnto the same, so much the more to increase it. If a woman should commit wickednesse and folly against her husband, who puts her away for it, and afterwards should be bent not onely to receiue her and forgive her freely this lewd offence, but also welcome her, and bestow vpon her rich ornaments and iewels: this kindnesse of her husbands, (if any naturall affection be in her,) would make her the more to lament and grieue for hauing offended so kinde and mercifull a husband, and remember it to her dying day: so it is with Gods readinesse in pardoning our sinnes, it cannot choose but make vs the more ready vpon all occasions from time to time, to repent and bee sorry that wee had offended so good and gracious a God.

*Luke 15, 10. 21.*  
Prodigall.

Adulterer.

Secondly, though a mans sinnes bee pardoned vpon his repentance; *Yet the more a man repents, the more hee shall haue the sense and feeling of the pardon of them;* for a man may haue his sinne pardoned before God, and yet haue no sense and feeling in his owne conscience of the pardon of it, for there is still retained a feare of guilt, as wee see in *David, 1. Sam. 12.* his sinne was pardoned before God, and yet there remained (as commonly in such cases) such an impression of guilt, as hee had no comfort for all this, or as if there had beene no such matter. And so, though God forgive our sinnes vpon our first repentance, yet the more wee repent, the more sensible wee shall bee of the forgiuenesse and pardon of them.

2

*1. Sam 12.*

Doore.

them. In other cases wee can say, *Abundantia cautela non nocebit*, too much caution hurts not, as when a man comes to locke a chest or a doore wherein lyes his gold and treasure, he will turne the key againe and againe: fir (sayes his friend) the doore was fast before: yea but (sayes the other) in cases of this nature, it is good to bee sure, to make fast worke; as then couetous men say thus by their money and iewells; so let vs say of our saluation, in busineses of this nature, it is good to bee sure, a man cannot bee too cautelous in making and procuring a pardon for his sinnes: so that after repentance, a man is alwayes the better and readier to repent and comfort himselfe. It was the zealous and holy care of that good man *Iob, chap. 1. 5.* to say, *I will goe see my sonnes, for it may bee that my sonnes haue sinned and cursed God in their hearts.* So should euery Christian say in this matter; It may bee that I haue failed in my Repentance, and therefore I will to it againe to make sure worke.

*Iob. 1. 5.*  
*Iob.*

3

Iewes.

Thirdly, because though a mans sinnes bee pardoned vpon his Repentance, yet he is still bound to repent them, *Because repentance is required not onely to take away the guilt of sinne, but also to take away the corruption of it.* Wee see when Christ was dead and buried, the Iewes roiled a great stone vpon the mouth of his graue, and why? to make him fast that hee should not rise; now we must doe with our sinnes as the Iewes did by Christ, not onely bury them our selues and make a graue for them, but also wee must rowle a great stone vpon them, and seale them vp by repentance, euery day casting more mold and earth vpon them, that they neuer may rise against vs; *For often repenting of sinne abates the strength of the corruption of sinne in the roote.* As a man that hath his house on fire, hee will not onely quench the fire for the present, but poure water also in the cinders and ashes, for feare of some liuing sparkes or dissipating heate which may lye hidden therein: so must wee doe by our sinnes

Fire.

sinnes, when the diuell hath set our lusts on fire; it must bee our wisdom not onely to quench the motions for the present, but also as it were to poure water on them to quench the alhes of sinne.

The second Obiection is, *That if a man bee bound continually to renew his Repentance, and Repentance bee inioyned with griefe and sorrow, then it must needs follow that a Christian man must neuer bee merrie, because still the sense of his owne sinne will take him downe and make him sad and dejected.* Obiect. 2.

I answer, *That as a man is bound to renew his Repen-* Answ.  
*tance, so is he bound to renew his Faith too: Yea, the more*  
hee renewes his Repentance, the more hee is bound to re-  
new his Faith and ioy: thus as a mans sinnes giue him  
cause to mourne, so the Lords mercy in Christ Iesus, will  
giue him grace to reioyce: So that the renewing of Repen-  
tance, though it bring a man to griefe, yet it will not leaue  
him in sorrow, but set him in a most full possession of e-  
uerlasting comfort; as *Dauid* confesses, *Psal. 126, 5. They* *Psal. 126, 5.*  
*who sowe in teares shall reape in ioy.* So that there are  
some teares which will bring ioy: there is a kinde of  
mourning which ends in reioicing. It is obserued in na-  
ture, that there is some paine which brings a man ease, Paine.  
and a man can neuer haue ease, but by the meanes of this  
paine; As the paine of physicke, which doth not worke  
at first without some trouble, yet brings health at last.  
The paine also that a man feels in dressing of a soare Paine.  
(for there are none but I am sure will confesse it puts a  
man to paine) brings a man at last to more ease and re-  
freshing; so that we may well say, the paine is the cause  
of the Cure; Euen so the renewing of Repentance cau-  
seth a paine, no man can deny that, because it is accom-  
panied with griefe and sadnesse, sorrow and teares, but it  
is *Dolor & Tristitia sanitatis*, a healing and a healthfull  
paine, such a paine as will leaue many ioyes, and much  
peace



peace behinde it. Therefore let men neuer bee affraid to renew their Repentance for their sinnes, though they repented before; Let them vpon euery good occasion repent of them still, because though this course of Repentance bring a man sorrow, yet it will neuer leaue him long in heauinesse, but bring into a sweet and comfortable peace with God and his owne conscience; when though weeping and heauinesse may bee in the euening, yet ioy and cheerefulnesse commeth in the morning; such mourning and confessing, ransaking of the heart ends in blessednesse; euer the more spirituall mourning, the more cheerefull holy reioicing: they come from one roote and fountaine, the other shew it selfe first: yet all is swallowed vp into reioicing at last. Now follows the

## III.

*Case of Repentance.*

*Whether a man bee bound, and must repent of his sins, and confesse them vnto men?* That is, when a man hath repented him of his sinnes vnto God, whether hee must also repent of his sinnes vnto men such as himselfe is, and not onely to confesse all vnto God alone? Which case, (as the law speakes) hath a clouen hoofe; that is, it parts and diuides it selfe into two *Questions*.

1. *Whether a man bee bound to confesse his sinnes to men?*
2. *Whether a man bee bound to make satisfaction and Restitution?*

For the first, here be two extremities to bee shun'd: whether a man bee bound to confesse his sinnes vnto men? First, the Papists they thinke that a man is bound to confesse all his sinnes vnto man; that it is not enough, to confesse them vnto God, vnlesse they also confesse them vnto Priests: in this they are in one extreame; And

in the contrary are they that thinke that a man must confesse all his sinnes vnto God onely. Now both these extremes are erroneous, both the Papists who thinke wee are bound to confesse our sinnes vnto men, and some other carnall professors, who thinke that wee must confesse our sinnes vnto God onely; for the truth lyes in the middle way betwixt both: For a man is not bound to confesse all his sinnes vnto any man, and yet some sinnes there are which must be confessed to men, as well as some other that it is enough if wee confesse vnto God onely.

Now for the clearing of this point, we must remember that in the high Court of conscience sins be of two sorts:

1. Sinnes against God.
2. Sinnes against men.

As that of *1. Sam. 2. 25.* shewes, *If one man sinne against another, the Iudge shall iudge him; but if a man sinne against the Lord, who shall intreate for him?* The sinnes against God are either,

1. Knowne sinnes.
2. Unknowne sinnes.

As *Psal. 19. 12.* *Who can understand his errors; cleanse thou mee from my secret sinnes:* Now to apply this vnto the point: if they bee secret sinnes against God, then it is enough to confesse them vnto God onely, for God onely is offended, and so it is sufficient to confesse them vnto God: For it is a rule of Iustice, *Pœna non excedet culpam*; the punishment shall not exceed the fault, or goe no further then the trespass. So then, if our sinnes bee against God onely, it is enough to confesse them vnto God: and though the Papists say; No hope of pardon vnlesse wee confesse our secret sinnes vnto Priests: yet the Scriptures of God are cleere against them, as *Psal. 32. Psal. 35. 2.*  
5. I

Luke 18. 13. 14

5. *I acknowledge my sinnes vnto thee, and mine iniquitie haue I not hid: I said I will confesse my transgressions vnto the Lord, and thou forganest the iniquitie of my sin.* And so the poore Publican, that went into the Temple and knockt his brest, hee confessed his sinnes vnto God, and said, *God be mercifull vnto me a sinner*; I tell you (saith Christ) this man departed to his house iustified: and so wee see it by experience in the holy Scripture, That wee should confesse our sinnes vnto God onely. It is the saying of a learned man, That wee should confesse our sinnes vnto God, who onely can best wipe away our sins; for a man is many times ashamed to discouer his secrets to his best friends, much more to a stranger Priest: And so then (against the Papiſts) wee see that we are not to confesse all our sinne, vnto any, but vnto God onely: As in the storie of *Manasses*, wee see in his distresse it is written, *1. Chron. 33. 12.* *And when he was in affliction, he besought the Lord his God, and humbled himselfe greatly, before the God of his Fathers.* So then if they be secret sinnes, it is enough to confesse them vnto God onely. Whereby you may see that the Papiſts opinion is false; which inioynes a man vpon paine of damnation to confesse them vnto a Priest, all the Scripture being contrarie vnto them if rightly vnderstood.

Chrysost. on.  
Psal. 50.

1. Chron. 33. 12

Exception.

1. Tim. 5. 6.

But yet, *In one case wee are bound to confesse them vnto men*, that is in case of distresse, when wee are so burthened with them, as that we cannot rise vp vnder so great a load, nor can finde ease or comfort any other way. In this case there is a necessitie, and wee should and ought confesse them vnto men, as Saint *James* hath it, *Acknowledge your sinnes to one another, and pray for one another*: but yet wee must take heed vnto whom wee make our sinnes knowne. It must be such a one as wee thinke able to comfort vs in our distresses, and resolue our doubts; such a one as will conceale them, and pray for vs in al occasions, as if it were his owne case.

Now



Now the Papists goe further, and bring two places of Scripture against this doctrine, to maintaine their opinion. The first is out of *Matb. 8. 4.* where Christ saith to the Leper (*Ostende te Sacerdoti*) But go thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priest: so that euerie man though God heale him and cleanse him vpon his confession; yet he is also bound to shew himselfe vnto the Priest.

To this I answer, The Papists in this place do alledge Scripture against Christ, *Mat. 8. 4.* to peruert the sense of the Scripture; for the words say not, *Confitere te, Go and confesse thy selfe to the Priest*; but (*Ostende te*) *Shew thy selfe to the Priest*. Secondly, Christs meaning is, That he should therefore shew himselfe vnto the Priest, to let him know that he was cleansed and healed from his leprosie, and was now free from the pollution thereof: Christ sayes, *Ostende te, quia sanatus es, Shew thy selfe, because thou art made whole*: they doe wrest the meaning thus, *Shew thy selfe because thou art polluted*. Thirdly, Christ sent him to the Priest, only in case of leprosie, that is, of knowne pollution: but the Papists say, That Christ sent him to the Priest, for to confesse his sinnes whatsoeuer. Fourthly, Christ sent him vnto the Priest, because of the precept of *Moses, Leuit. 14. 2.* where God had enioyned it. Christ sent him, but they will haue him to performe an ordinarie dutie.

The second place they do alledge, is out of *S. Iames, 5. 16.* *Confesse your faults to one another, and pray one for another.* I answer, That the place doth not bind vs to confesse vnto a Priest; it as much bindes the Priest to confesse vnto vs; because this dutie spoken of by Saint Iames, is a reciprocall dutie, *Confesse your sinnes to one another.* Secondly, This confession Saint Iames speakes of, is onely in case of necessitie and distresse, without examination, and freely, and that in such a sinne onely, as cannot be healed by our selues. Thirdly, The healing that Saint Iames speakes of, is by Prayer: but the healing of the Priest is by substantiall Absolution, and to the Popish

confession cannot bee meant here in this place. So that this Argument stands good against them that our secret sinnes against God are not of necessitie to bee confessed, but vnto God onely.

But if they bee knowne sinnes against God, then it is not enough to repent of them before God, but wee are bound to repent of them before men also. So wee see the Prophet *Dauid* after his fall, hee did not onely repent of his sinne before God, but also he made, *Psal 51.* a penitentiall Psalm as the Fathers haue it, to bee a monument and Testimoniall to the whole Church. So likewise *St. Paul*, *1. Cor. 15.* hee saith, *I am not worthy to be called an Apostle, because I did persecute the Church of God.* So as his sin was made manifest in persecuting the Church of God, in like manner his repentance was made manifest and knowne vnto all. So then, this case is cleere, that knowne and open sins are to be confessed not onely vnto God, but also vnto men; that as they haue knowledge of our sins, so also they may haue of our repentance, and that we are changed into newnesse of life, and that for two reasons; First, because as men doe know of our sins, so also may they of our repentance: The second is, that as we haue done hurt to our brethren by our bad example in sinning against God, and drawing others by the same example to doe so' also; so farre we should by our outward example of outward confession and repentance draw men vnto God. Which was the reason why *Abimelech*, *Gen. 20. 8.* did tell his seruants that which God had in a dream reuealed vnto him, that as many as knew of his sinne in taking away *Abrahams* wife, might know of his repentance, because as he had done hurt by his bad example of sinning, so he might againe salue that sore by his repenting: he might haue carried the matter closely and secretly that none might haue knowne it, but wee see hee doth reueale it to the end it might be knowne.

Second sort of  
sinnes,

*The second sort of sinnes are against our brethren, and they are of two sorts.*

1. There

1. There are some sinnes which one may commit against a man which doe not hurt him, or indamage him : as to thinke an euill thought against him, these sinnes wee are to contesse vnto God onely, because hee onely knowes them and is offended for them.

2 Some sinnes againe there are that doe hurt them, and they doe receiue damage by them of which there bee two sorts :

First, some are such as we know not to be sins, and such as we haue forgotten, and cannot call to our mindes to remember them ; For which sinnes, a generall repentance or confession will serue the turne, but we must take heed that we doe not wilfully or willingly forget them: in such sinnes wherein a man either in body, word or goods, does hurt his neighbour, hauing no ill intent towards him, nor afterward knowing it, in this case generalitic will serue.

But secondly some are such sins as we doe know of, and such as in which we well vnderstand, and remember that wee haue wronged our neighbour. Now if they bee such sins as we doe not know of, as I said before. or be forgotten, or we doe not know to be sinnes ; then men are not bound to contesse them ; for else who could be saued, for a number of sins were committed against our brethren which we forget, and a number of sinnes there are, which we doe not know to be sins against them ; as 2. Sam. 21.3

2. Sam. 21.3.

David knew not how hee had offended the Gibeonites, But if they be such sinnes as one doth know, these wee are bound to contesse not onely vnto God, but vnto the persons wronged also. As Christs counsell is, Luke 17.3. Take heed to your selues, if thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him ; If he repent so giue him.

Luk. 17.3.

The second question is : whether a man is bound vpon his repentance to make restitution of that which is taken away by iniustice ? Quest. 2.

To this I answer, there are in this case two parties offended, proportionable to which must be our practise of Repentance. Answ.



1. God.

2. Our neighbour.

Nature of  
Repentance.

Note.

See Zacheus his  
Practise.

Matth. 7. 23.

Exod. 22. 5.

Numb. 5. 7. 8.

Obiect. 1.

And it being a rule in Iustice that the penalty must stretch as far as the fault; therefore it will follow because both God and man is offended in this case, that we should not only repent to God, but also to men, and make satisfaction for the hurt which we haue done to them. For, *It is the Nature of Repentance to bring all things as neere as may be vnto their former estate againe.* Now wee know that by the sin of iniustice God is offended, & our neighbour is hurt; wherefore, by our Repentance, we reconcile our selues to God; and by our restitution vnto men, we make satisfaction for the hurt wee haue done them; so that there must be restitution and satisfaction, that wherein we haue indamaged our brother: there may be addition vnto his owne. For if our brother haue ought against vs, God will not heare vs, vntill we be reconciled to our brother, by restitution and satisfaction; as Christs counsell is, *Matth. 7. 23. If thou bring thy gift to the Altar, and there remember that thy brother hath ought against thee: leaue there thine offering before the Altar, goe thy way and first bee reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy offering.* Whereby we may see that God will not accept of any duty which we shall doe; vntill wee bee reconciled to our brother. Thus *Exod. 22. 5.* God commands, that *If a man doe hurt to a field or a vineyard, hee shall recompence of the best of the field, or of the best of the vineyard.* So *Numb. 5. 7.* God sayes in such a case of trespassse; *And they shall confesse their sinne which they haue done; and hee shall recompence his trespassse with the principall thereof, and shall adde vnto it, a fift part also, and giue it vnto him against whom hee hath trespassed.*

Ob. 1. But what if a man bee not able?

Soll. Then doe what you can or may, 2. *Cor. 8. 12.*

Ob. 2. What if the parties be dead?

Soll. Then giue it to the next of kinne, *Numb. 5. 8.*

Ob. 3. What if one know none of the kindred or can finde none?

Soll. Then

*Soll.* Then giue it to the poore, or by aduice of the Minister dispose thereof.

And thus wee see the sin of iniustice to bee a grievous sin, wherein a man is bound to restitution, satisfaction and confession; If a man haue spoken ill of his neighbour, he must be sorry for it, and speake well of him again. If seruants steale or purloyne any thing of their Masters, they must make it good; confesse their fault, and restore it vnto them again, if euer God bring them home to himselfe: So if a man shall get away his neighbours goods by iniustice, or by deceit or fraud, or coufening of him: God will not accept of such a man, vntill hee haue made satisfaction: the like may be said in forgerie, oppression, subornation, false witnesses and the rest, there must follow repentance and satisfaction, or no forgiveness of sinnes. See then what a great sinne this of Iniustice is, and what a grievous burden a man pulls vpon himselfe, when he hath gathered together a great deale of ill gotten goods: For when hee comes to die, he is in hazard to be either a damned sinner, or a starke begger. And therefore it is a woollfull case, when Parents put and aduenture their children vpon any bad courses, not caring how, so they may enrich them. There are a number of Vsurers, which say they cannot liue otherwise, and therefore they put their stocke to vse to raise some profite to themselues. But let them know that these sins be sins of iniustice, and therefore they must not onely repent for them, but also they must make restitution and satisfaction. If a man doe sin against God, if hee confesse and repent, God will forgiue him; But if he doe sinne against men, hee must not onely confesse to God, but also vnto men, and make satisfaction for the offence: here also such are to bee reprooued, who at their death make Wills, committing their soules to God, and their ill-gotten goods to their friends and children, the high way to bring a curse vpon them; let Parents beware of this error. And so much for this third case.

... of the ...

... of the ...





## LECT. X.

III.

THE CASES OF  
Repentance:

## The case of Teares.

JOEL. 2. 12. 13.

*Therefore, also now, saith the Lord: turne yee even to mee with all your heart, and with fasting and with weeping and with mourning:*

*And rent your heart and not your garments, &c.*



hitherto wee haue spoken of Repentance, with some cases thereof, and some yet remaine to bee spoken of: The last day wee handled the Case of Confession to men. And now in the next place because the want of teares doth so perplexe many in this great work of Repentance: The Lord as in this text and many other places of Scripture

The state of  
the question.

So exhorting vnto the same; suitable vnto which is the Saints. practise now and in all ages: I haue therefore in the next place chosen to handle, *The Case of teares in Repentance*; that is, *whether euery man or woman who truly repents them of their sinnes, must and doe necessarily shed teares for them?* The answer whereof (by your patience) I will lay downe in five conclusions. The first Conclusion shall be this;

8  
Conclusion,

*A man may weepe for sinne, shed teares for it, and yet not truly repent; teares be not alwayes a true signe of true Repentance.*

Gen. 27. 34.

1. Sam. 24. 17.

Mal. 2. 13.

The reason whereof is, because the very naturall man wisheth well vnto himselfe, desires his owne peace and hearts ease as much as may bee. Therefore when hee apprehends the fearfull iudgements of God due vnto him for his sinne, euen the hatefulnesse of vile actions which hee hath committed, the very conscience and horror of these things will make him many times weepe, so that a naturall man may shed teares for sinne, and yet not repent him of it: as wee see in *Esau*, Gen. 27. 34. He wept for the losse of his Fathers blessing and his birth-right, and yet so farre from repenting of his sinne, that at that same instant, after his Fathers death hee resolved to kill his brother. So the Holy storie utimes of *Saul*, 1. Sam. 24. 17. that when *Dauid* had cut off the lap of his garment, when hee might haue killed him, and when he had made his innocencie knowne to him; *Saul* hee lift vp his voyce and wept, and made confession of his sinnes before God, and yet for all this chap. 26. wee see hee persecuted him againe, euen against his owne conscience; so we see hee wept for his sinne and yet neuer repented. Hee confessed hee had done ill, and that *Dauid* was more righteous then hee. So *Mal. 2. 13.* The people of *Israel* is said to haue couered the Altar of God with their teares, with weeping and mourning, and yet for all that liued in

in their finnes without Repentance, and said; *wherein shall wee returne?* So it is cleere, that teares are not alwayes a true signe of true Repentance. For the most part all the Religion of the world is this, that if a man can bring himselfe so farre, not onely to be touched for sinne, but also to weepe for it, to shed a few teares, by and by they thinke themselves to bee safe; yea, though they liue loosely and prophanely after, but this is to build vp their comfort vpon a safe ground, because as wee haue heard, a man may shed teares for sinne, and yet not repent it: so that teares bee not alwayes the true companions of true Repentance.

But here it may bee that some who are willing to repent, and ready to indeauour this way, may obiekt and say, *How can a poore Christian take any comfort in his Teares; If teares bee not alwayes a true signe of Repentance.*

I answer; for all this, that there bee two wayes where-  
by a Christian may finde comfort in his teares;

1. *He must looke into the causes of them.*

2. *Hee must looke into the Effect and fruit of them.*

*Hee must looke into the cause and fountaine from whence they flowe;* whether it bee for teare of damnation and of hell torments hee weepes or not, for these may make a wicked man much to be astonished for the time, and repent of his sinne: as *Act. 24. 26.* so the children of Israel when the Lord told them, that they should not enter into the land of *Canaan*, repented of their finnes, and did weepe before the Lord, but the cause was the iudgements and scourge of God vpon them, being chased by the *Amorites*, *Deut. 1. 45.* so that a man may weepe to no purpose for the iudgements and punishments that follow sinne; but when a man can weepe for sinne, because it is sinne (which indeed would bring him vnto Repentance,)



Luk. 15. 21.

Psal. 51. 4.

tance,) because hee hath offended so good a God; displeased so gracious, and so mercifull a Father, done that which is prophane and vnseemly in his sight, then wee may haue ioy and comfort in our teares. So wee see in the example of the *Prodigall sonne*, Luke 15. 21. he more lamented that he had offended so good and louing a Father then for the losse of his money; then for all the miserie which was vpon him, and hardnesse hee had sustained; yea, I say, all this did not so much grieve him, as that hee had offended his good Father. The like wee see by *David*, *Psal. 51. 4.* saith hee, *Against thee onely haue I sinned*: did hee sinne onely against God? hee had also sinned against *Vriah*, *Barsheba*, against the people, and against the peace of his owne soule. Yet about all, his greatest griefe was for offending his God; a God that had dealt so bountifullly with him in his aduancement, and mercifullly in his preservation, and so by the consideration of the cause, wee may receiue comfort in our teares, when wee consider from what motiues they proceed, and principally mouing Causes.

2

2. Cor. 7. 10. 11.

Secondly, a man that would haue comfort in his tears, *must looke vnto the Effect and fruit of them*, for if a man doe so weep for his sinnes, as that by and by hee be ready to fall into, and commit the same sinnes againe, and that as greedily and carelesly as hee did before; then it is to bee feared, that the watter teares shed here, is but a beginning of that euerlasting weeping and mourning in hell. But if a man doe so weep for sinne, as that thereby hee is made more watchfull ouer sinne, more to hate it, carefull to resist it, more willing to weaken the sudden power thereof in himselfe, then a man may haue comfort in his teares; as it is 2. Cor. 7. 10. 11. *For godly sorrow worketh Repentance to saluation not to bee repented of, &c. For behold this that yee haue beene godly sorrowfull what care is hath wrought in you, what cleering of your selues, &c.* So then you see there are two sorts of teares; First,

Tearcs

Tearcs of prophane men, for they haue their Tearcs too ; but there is small comfort in them, a man is neuer the better for such tearcs, they are seldome put home to the conscience, nor is the life reformed by them, they leaue no steps of goodnesse, nor prints of Grace behinde them. Secondly, the tearcs of the godly bee indeed sorrowfull tearcs, but they are mightie and quickning ( like *Aqua fortis* ) which make strong and lasting impressions of vertue and of grace, which leaue a seed and fruit behinde to worke vpon their soules and conscience. Thus much of the first Conclusion : the second is this :

Conclusion 2.

*Euery one that commits sinne hath iust cause about all things to shed tearcs for the same.*

2.  
Conclusion.

This is proued ; first *By Reason* ; Secondly, *By Example* : for there are three things which will make a man to shed tearcs :

1. *For the losse of some great good.*
2. *The feare of some great euill.*
3. *The sence and feeling of some grievous paine.*

Now in all these cases, a man hath cause to shed tearcs for sinne ; First, *In regard of the great losse that comes by sinne* : worldly men as wee know will weepe for the losse of children, goods, lands, and such like ; but all the losses of the world are not comparable vnto the losse which comes by sin ; for it is neither of children, goods, or lands, but by sinne we lose the fauour of God ; all our parts of that wee haue in Christ, heauen and happinesse ; yea, wee faile of Gods blessed presence for euer, and so of all losses the greatest comes by sinne : So that wee haue more cause to mourne for it, then for any worldly calamitie or miserie whatioeuer, looke in the storie of *Micah*, *Iudg. 18. 24.* *Yee haue taken away my Gods which I made*

## The fourth Case of Teares

*Micahs gods.*

made, and the Priest, and yee are gone away, and what haue I more? and what is this that yee say vnto mee, what ailest thou? Here you see that when the souldiers had taken away *Micahs* Gods, hee ranne after them crying and weeping, and was angry that they should aske, what ailest thou? Euen so must wee, if such as hee can so weepe for a false God, much more haue wee cause to weepe and mourne, when wee shall consider that our owne sinnes haue taken away our true God from vs, yea all the ioy, comfort, and peace that we had in God, and therefore about all things wee haue cause to shed teares and weepe for our sinnes.

2

Secondly, a man hath cause to weepe and mourne and shed teares about all things for sinne, *In regard of the great and intolerable euill which comes by sinne.* Whereof the finall euill is Hell and damnation, which is the greatest, most insupportable and mischieuous euill of all other; because all other euills are temporarie, this eternall: Wee see a man is sorry when he hath brought himselfe to lameness, blindness, and mutilation of any member, and how much more then when hee hath brought this vpon himselfe, and therewith the curse of God, and everlasting damnation; paines endlesse and restless for euer: Ohow much cause therefore hath a man to mourne and lament for his sinnes? which bring not temporarie (but as I said) everlasting punishments; The fire that came vpon *Sodom* lasted but for a day: The flood that came vpon the old world lasted but for a short time; the great famine of *Ægypt*, *Gen. 41. 49.* lasted but for seuen yeares, and the captiuitie of *Babylon* lasted but 70. yeares, but damnation in Hell shall be for euer and euer, no time shall end it, no meanes shall finish it, no policie shall escape it.

*Euills procured.*

*Fire of Sodom.  
Flood of  
Noah.  
Gen. 41. 49.*

2

Againe, all the euills that doe befall vs here are particular euills, either paine in the head, teeth, back, or belly,



or stomache, arme, legge, &c. but the paines of Hell are vniuersall in euery part, in all parts at once, which must much multiply paine, sorrow, and destruction in vs.

Againe, all other paines and euills haue their mitigations and limitations; If a man hath the gout, hee hath also a soft bed to lye in; if hee be feeble hee hath one to leade him; if hee be lame, hee hath somebody to moue him from place to place, but if a man bee in Hell there is no mitigation, no ease, no helpe left, not so much as a drop of cold water to coole the heate of the mouth, but all horror, griefe, torment, sorrow and vexation; so that if euer a man may haue cause to shed teares, and feare mischief that may happen, he hath reason to doe so for feare of hell and those gastly terrors of damnation to come, to last for euer.

3

Thirdly, a man hath reason and cause to shed teares for sinne, *in regard of the paines accompanying the same*: which are deadly, dangerous: For if one should wound a man in the legge, hee might recouer, but pricke him if it were but with a pinne at the heart, and the wound proues deadly: So it is in wounding of the soule, euery sinne proues deadly, and as a stabbe to the heart; for though wee doe not presently feele it, though our deadnesse and numnesse make vs insensible and carelesse. Yet in the day of Gods visitation, when Gods wrath shall fall vpon vs and open our wounds which sinne hath made, then shall wee roare and crie, and indure torment enough: thus if wee haue cause to weepe for any thing, wee haue cause to weepe for our sinnes that strike so deepe to our consciences and soules. Thus we haue againe to bewaile the hardnesse of our hearts, that in bodily cures can away with the cutting of a limbe, breaking of an arme or legge; and yet cannot away with the searching and lancing of our consciences.

Wounds.

3

Note.

Thus as it is by Reason, so the necessitie of mourning for

for sinne is proued by Example, for there was none of the holy men of God but they haue wept for sinne, and wee haue certainly as much and more cause to weepe then they had ; and yet how farre short doe wee come of this dutie ? shall I name *Dauid*, *Daniel*, *Peter*, and other holy men of God ? how feruent was holy *Luther* in mourning and weeping for his sinnes ? had *Dauid* cause to weepe abundantly and water his couch with teares, and haue not wee cause much more ? Had *Peter* cause to lament his fall bitterly ? and haue not wee more falls then hee had ? Had *Daniel* cause to bewaile his many trespasses, and are not we guiltie of many more iniquities ? shall *Mary Magdalen* weepe, and weepe for sinne in a manner a riuer of teares, and haue wee no cause or necessitie to weepe for our many transgressions ? O if wee could search our sinfull and corrupt liues, and see how we haue offended our God, wee could not choose but weepe for our sinnes : what not shed teares for sinne, when wee see our Sauiour shed blood in the Garden for our sins, and not for any of his ; hee being without sinne. but we are hard-hearted and neuer thinke vpon our Redemption : Nor shed a teare for that which wrought blood out of Christs body. O wonderfull and lamentable, what a pitious thing is this, that wee cannot let fall a drop of water for sinne, when hee poured out abundance of his blood for the same ; yea, he did sweate it out for grie'e and anguish ; a signe of small or no sorrow in vs ; when wee cannot wring out a few teares, much lesse poure out water before the Lord, as his people sometime did for their sinnes,

1. Sam 7.6. Thus much of the second Conclusion ; The third is this :

1. Sam 7.6.

## Conclusion 3.

*There is neuer a man liuing that is able to shed teares for euery sinne hee doth commit.*

Euery sinne it is certaine deserues teares, yea, and bitter  
teares

teares too; for every sinne is committed against God a holy Father; yea, Holinesse it selfe and an infinite Maies-  
tie; now we know it is no small matter to offend God,  
nor no great enforcement to shed teares for our sinnes,  
and yet wee are hardly brought to weepe for one sinne of  
ten thousand: It is so in the generall, though it bee true  
that there be some of more feeling and tender consciences  
then others: as it is said of St. *Hierome*, that hee wept for  
sinne, and was so tenderly affected, as if hee had killed a  
man; but o that it were so with vs; that wee could at-  
taine to this tendernes of heart: The hinderances and  
impediments I take to bee two:

1. *Blindnesse in Iudgements.*

2. *Hardnesse of heart.*

For many are so blinde, that they know not sinne to  
bee sinne in their iudgements: As *Mal. 1* when they  
were reprov'd of their sinnes, yet they say, wherein haue  
wee sinned? or if men know sinne to bee sinne, yet they  
mistake; they thinke great sinnes are but pettie ones; and  
small ones, they esteeme to bee nothing at all, not worth  
the grieuing at, because for the present they paine not: as  
a man hauing a bleeding wound hee sees not; passes it  
ouer vntill hee faints: it proouing deadly if not stop't  
and cured. Bleeding wound.

Againe, another cause is, *Hardnesse of heart*, which  
(for all the Regenerate are in part sanctified) we are sub-  
iect vnto, therefore though some in Repentance bring  
forth teares; yet a number for their lues cannot shed any  
one teare for sinne, vntill God by an especiall worke con-  
uert and turne the Heart vnto him, by an especiall ope-  
ration of his blessed Spirit and power of Grace. The  
want of this tendernes wee see made the Prophet in the  
name of the Church crie out, *Isa. 63. 17. O Lord why*  
*hast thou made vs to erre from thy wayes, and hardened*  
*Isa. 63. 7.*



*our hearts from thy feare?* Yet I must needs say, there is great difference betwixt that hardnes of heart in the godly, and in the wicked: for that of the former is sensible, full of paine, griefe, sorrow, mourning, yea there is a particular sorrow for that hardnesse felt, besides that of other sinnes: but that which is in the wicked is insensible, they are neuer thorowly touched or affected with a feeling of their sinnes, and so neuer weepe or sorrow for them. The fourth Conclusion is,

Conclus. 4.

*That a man may truly repent him of his sinnes, though he cannot weepe or shed a teare for them.*

Which I proouethus, *They that can mourne for their sinnes, and in compunction of soule make vse of the death and passion of Christ, may truly repent:* but a man may mourne for his sinne and do thus, and yet neuer shed a teare; therefore a man may truly repent without shedding of teares, for teares are not alwayes a signe of true repentance. As we see *Acts 2. 37.* where it is sayd, those Converts were pricked in their hearts, not pricked in their eyes; for a mans heart may be pricked and ouerwhelmed with griefe, and yet not weepe or shed any teares. So wee see the Publican, *Luke 18.* Hee could not weepe, but hee was humbled and cast downe in the sense and feeling of his sinnes; Lord (saith he) *be mercifull to me a sinner.* So in like manner, we doe not read that the Theefe vpon the Crosse did weepe or shed any teares, yet hee confessed his sinnes, and was inwardly grieved for them. So we see a man may truly repent who sheddeth no teares. For as a Wine vessell without vent is readie to burst; so the lesse weeping, many times the greater is the sorrow, and the heart so much the more ouerburthened. Teares are as a vent, which when they are not, and the heart this way allayed and eased, the inward griefe is so much the more excessive

*Acts 2. 37.*

Vine-vessell.

Conclus. 5.

This Conclusion I will first open, and then in time confirm it: yet assure your selves of this, That euery one cannot weepe in their repentance and first Calling, vntil it please God to infuse more grace, and smite the heart. Yet though at first they doe not, wait a while, and in continuance of time, or when God sends some great affliction or judgement vpon them, you shall see them come to teares, and weepe for their sinnes. As a man that is stricken with a sword, the blood doth not alwayes by and by follow; So it is with the smitten conscience of a wounded sinner; there is feare, astonishment, and amazement many times, before weeping; and yet afterwards teares may come abundantly, as blood after a wound.

One stricken  
with a sword.

But to my promise now, which was, first, To open the Conclusion: secondly, To explaine it. First then I say, *That hardly is there any man living, but he hath or shall shed teares for sinne, if God haue a purpose to saue him*: Therefore howe ouer one may goe away at the first rejoycing, like *Lydia* at her first conuersion; and like the *Eunuch* in the *Acts*: yet at one time or other they shall weepe and mourne for their sins: though I would haue you remember, that I do not exclude any from the hope of Heauen and state of true penitencie, that shed no tears for sinne; for so I haue shewed the case may be, though seldome heard of. *Dauid* sayes, *Psalme 37. 25. I haue*

Lydis.  
Eunuch.

Kkk

всего

Dauids Expe-  
rience.

beene young and now am old, yet haue I not seene the righte-  
eous forsaken, nor their seed begging bread: And yet  
poore Lazarus died a begger, and was carried by the  
hands of the Angels into *Abrahams* bosome: Now  
*Dauids* meaning is, not that there was none of the righte-  
eous, or of their seed that did begge their bread, but that  
it was a rare thing, that hee had not seene it in his dayes,  
or in an Age: So wee may say of this point; It may bee  
a man may bee truely conuerted, and yet neuer shedde a  
teare in his life: but it is a rare case, no ordinarie thing, it  
is that which seldome falls out one of a thousand, but  
that at one time or other they are so pressed with their  
sinnes.

2

*Zack* 12.10.

Againe, secondly I say, that true teares are not to bee  
commanded by vs, but are an effect of Gods grace,  
wrought in man: as *Zack* 12.10. *And I will poure vpon*  
*the house of Dauid, and vpon the Inhabitants of Ierusa-*  
*lem, the Spirit of Grace and supplication, and they shall*  
*weepe, &c.* That is, they shall mourne and lament as a man  
that mourneth for his owne sinnes; nature may make a  
man mourne for the losse of his children, friends, goods,  
wife and such like, but it is onely the Spirit of God, of  
Grace that can make a man shed teares for his sinnes, so  
that a man may bee a naturall man, an vnregenerate man,  
an vnconuerted man, and neuer shed a teare for his sinnes  
all his life long, though hee bee a most wicked liuer. But  
if the Spirit of Grace once worke vpon his heart, hardly  
but at one time or other, his heart will melt and lament  
that hee hath offended God.

3

Thirdly, I say, if God let him liue any time in this  
world ( for a man may bee taken away immediatly vpon  
his conuersion, as the cheefe vpon the crosse ) and then as  
hee wants time for other Christian duties, so for this also;  
but if God let a man continue any time, then one occasi-  
on or other will bring him backe to the beholding of his  
sinnes, cause him to afflict his thoughts, repent through-  
ly, and so worke teares out of him, yea bitterly to be-  
waile



waile his sinnes, because no man truly conuerted can thinke of his sins with pleasure but with griefe. *Iob* saith thou makest mee to possesse the sins of my youth; so wee may bee free and haue little sorrow and few or no scares for sinne at first, and yet this case of compassion may affect vs in our riper age, or old age, or in the time of sicknesse and death, at which time wee may come in bitterness of soule to bewaile them.

Fourthly, againe I say, that at one time or other wee shall shed teares for sinne, some doe mourne and weepe at their first conuersion, and lye a long time vnder the burden ere they can be comforted, As a many experiences of troubled consciences amongst vs doe shew. Some againe like to the Eunuch, *Act.* 8. 39. and *Lydia*, *Act.* 16. 14. when God opens their hearts, absents matter of terror, and representing full matter of ioy, depart away at first reioycing, not mourning as others: So that I say the case is different in this case, according to the representation and diuine impression vpon the soule of ioy or terrour in the present apprehension; or according to the former guiltinesse of the party conuerted: but this is most sure if we belong to the Lord, at one time or other, wee shall weepe and mourne for sinnes of our selues and others. See *Psal.* 25. 7. saith *Dauid*, Remember not O Lord the sinnes of my youth. And *2. King.* 22. 10. you shall finde how much good *Iesiah* was affected with the sinnes of the time, when *Holkiah* the Priest deliuered him a booke whereby hee apprehended how the people had offended God, so that whosoeuer of Gods children hath not yet felt conuersion throughly, hee shall feele it before this life leaue him: as I shewed formerly, a wound with a sword makes but a white stroke at first; but within a while the blood issues abundantly: So euery one doth not by and by bleed vpon his first conuersion, and feeling of sinne, when hee is smitten by the Law: but tarry awhile till some further working vpon

*Act.* 8. 39.

*Act.* 16. 14.

*Psal.* 25. 7.

*2. King.* 22. 10.

Wound.

his heart, and you shall see vnconcealed sorrow and teares issue forth againe.

## Now the Reason of this I thinke is,

Why some men mourne, and some doe not, but reioyce at their first conuersion; because it is with the motions of the minde, as it is with the motions of compounded bodies, Elements predominate tending still towards their proper orbe or place agreeable vnto them. So at that time of conuersion, looke what the soule is most possessed with at that time, thicker it is carryed. As fill a bladder with winde and throw it to the ground, it will not lye there but bend vpwards to the aire, because it is filled with ayre; but fill it with earth, and it will fall and lye on the earth, because of the earth that fills it: and our bodies being earthly fall to the earth againe: So it is in the minde of a man at his first conuersion, if hee apprehend the mercie of God in Christ, more then the fearefull iudgements of God for sinne, then hee is carryed with comfort, but on the other side apprehending iudgements most, then hee is cast downe and discouraged.

Fifthly I say, all that are truly conuerted shall shedde teares at one time or other, though not in a like measure, for some shed teares in a more abundant manner, as *Mary Magdalen* who sate at Christs feete and washed them with her teares, *Luk. 7.* So of *Peter*, *Math. 26.* who went out and wept bitterly: and of *David*, *Psal. 6.* who watered his couch with teares: whom though all cannot follow, yet all must wish to imitate in true sorrow for sinne, in one measure or other; for it is well obserued of a learned man that a man may let out the corruption of a byle, as well out of a little hole as out of a great one: as one may know that there is life in a man, as well by the stirring and wagging of a finger, as of the whole hand: so

may

A Bladder  
with winde.

Cause of feare  
or ioy.

*Luk. 7.*

Byle let out.

Life by stir-  
ring.

may the truth of Repentance as well bee discerned by a few teares as a great many. Thus wee haue scene the meaning of the conclusion. That there be very few who are truly conuerted, if they continue any time after conuersion but will shed teares for their sinnes at one time or other, in one measure or other. Now I come to confirme it diuersly ;

1. *By Reason.*
2. *By Authoritie.*
3. *By Example.*

*First by Reason thus,* hardly is there any man liuing be he neuer so stout hearted, and composed in himselfe, By Reason but there is one thing or other that will make him weepe prooued. though hee set neuer so good a face on the matter, the losse of wife, husband, children, or the vnkindnesse of friends, or some worldly calamitie ; but in those that bee truly conuerted, *the greatest griefe of all is the griefe for sinne*, all other griefes whatsoeuer are nothing so great or sensible ; If this bee thoroughly apprehended ; nothing so workes on the heart of a renewed man, as the heauie and sad remembrance of sinnes past, whereby hee hath offended God, and griued him to whom he oweth more seruice and duty then to all the world besides. And so seeing there is not any man liuing, but some extremitie will make him weepe, and the greatest extremitie in any mans conscience truly considered is sinne, or for sinne, hardly is there any man liuing but at one time or other the conscience of his sinnes will make him weepe and draw teares from him.

Secondly, *By Authoritie thus, Psal. 126. 5. They that sow in teares shall reape in ioy. Ierem. 50. 4. Then and in those dayes and at that time shall the children of Israel come, they and the children of Iudah going and weeping they shall goe and seeke the Lord their God. So Reuel.* 2  
By Authoritie.



21.4. it is promised, *And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes*, not onely the teares which they haue shed in regard of their miserie, but also those shed in regard of their sinnes: so it is most sure, that those who are humbled and shed teares for any thing, will especially mourne and weepe for sinne.

3  
By Example.

*Psal. 6. 6.*

*Judg. 2. 4.*

*Judg. 2. 4.*

*1. Sam. 7. 6.*

Thirdly, *By Example* of other holy people that haue beene before vs, they that could hardly weepe for all the things in the world did yet weepe for their sinnes; *David* a souldier, and so by consequence a stout-hearted man, much acquainted with blood, yet his sins made him shed abundance of teares, *Psal. 6. 6.* and so he addes *ver. 8. Hee hath heard the voice of my weeping*: And so *Mary Magdalen* sat her downe at the feet of Iesus, and washed them with her teares, *Luk. 7.* which though it bee no strange thing for a woman to weepe, yet for such a woman to weepe, a Lady, a gallant altogether, set vpon her pleasures, brauery and delights, it was as strange a thing as might be. The like may be said of the children of Israel, a proud insolent hard-hearted people, such as would not easily melt, yet when the Angel, *Judg. 2. 4.* came and set their sins before them, the text saith, *That they lift vp their voice and wept*: and in another case of sorrow, *1. Sam. 7. 6.* wee reade, *They poured out water before the Lord*: and therefore seeing such who of all others were most vnlikely to weepe, did shed teares for their sinnes, being prickt in conscience, what shall wee thinke of others a great deale more tender-hearted; what haue they done in secret before God? Thus the conclusion is made good.

## Use.

Oh then thinke of this yee merry people of the world, you that passe your dayes in ioy and pleasure, that if the best of Gods people and seruants at one time or other, haue and must shed teares and weepe for their sinnes; O how great cause haue you to lay aside your merriments, to  
bid

bid farwell to your sports, and to come downe into dust and ashes, and there in the bitterneſſe of your ſoules mournfully and heauily to lament your ſinnes before the Lord; It is time that you exclaime and ſay, *Peccatum eſt cauſa triſtitia & doloris*; Sinne will cauſe ſorrow, feare and lamentation, either in earth or in hell; and ſo better weepe and mourne for our ſinnes on earth, where you may haue comfort and pardon, eaſe and forgiuenelle, then in hell where you ſhall haue a continuall death, and yet a liuing torture: *Ibi erit fletus & aſſiduus terror*: they be Christs owne words as you know, *Luk. 13.28.* *Luk. 13.28.* When they ſhall ſee Abraham, Iſaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets and Saints in heauen, and themſelues ſhut out of doores: whilt they ſhall ſee other penitent ſinners goe to heauen, and themſelues meantime tormented in hell: Others goe to pleaſure, whilt theſe goe to paine; others to bee carried to eternall life, whilt theſe goe downe to eternall death. And ſo beloued of the Lord, iudge your ſelues for your ſins, that God may not iudge you: condemne your ſelues, and let your preſent teares preuent thoſe heauy endleſſe teares to come vpon you hereafter. And thus, let vs all goe forth with Chriſt into the Garden: and let vs nor ſleepe there as his Diſciples did, but ſeeing Chriſt fell flat vnder the burden of our ſinnes; let vs tall downe by him in conſideration of our manifold offences; where though wee cannot ſhed blood as hee did, yet let vs indeauour and pray to God that wee may ſhed teares of repentance: Yea as Chriſt in the daies of his fleſh did offer vp ſtrong cries and teares with ſup-  
*Heb. 5.7.* plications and prayers vnto him who was able to ſaue him from death; ſo let vs doe, and let vs be reſtleſſe, neuer to giue ouer our ſue, vntill we heare that comfortable voyce come vnto vs: Sonne bee of good cheere, thy ſins are pardoned, thy ſoule ſhall be ſaued; thy prayers and teares are come vp in remembrance before God. Thus much of the Caſe of Teares.







## LECT. XI.

V.

## THE CASE OF

comfort in death in

Repentance.

NUM. 23.10.

*Let mee die the death of the righteous, and let my la-  
and bee like his.*



S wee haue a care to liue to  
the Lord, so wee must haue a  
care to die to the Lord also.  
For as it is Rom. 14.7.8. Rom. 14.7.  
None of vs liueth to him-  
selfe, and no man dieth to  
himselfe, for whether we liue,  
wee liue vnto the Lord, or  
whether wee die, wee die vn-  
to the Lord; whether wee

liue therefore, or die, wee are the Lords. Accordingly is  
that rauish'd speech of Balaam here in my text; *Let mee Num. 23.10.*

die

*die the death of the Righteous, and let my last end bee like his. Which words, doe especially imply these three thing:*

1. *That there is a death of the righteous, that they must die as well as others.*
2. *That the death of the righteous is farre different from the death of the wicked.*
3. *That every man must desire to die as the righteous die.*

That is in peace of a good conscience, and feeling of the promises and comforts of God made in *Jesus Christ*, so that these words shew vs that there is great cause for vs to inquire after. The case of Repentance wee last spake of, *Whether every one that hath truly repented can shew him selfe comfortable and heauenly minded at the houre of Death?* Now the answer I will lay downe in two points:

1. *That a man may truly repent, and yet depart one of this world with little or no comfort at the houre of death.*
2. *That there is neuerthelesse a very hopefull and likely way, whereby true penitents may come boldly to die with comfort, if they doe not neglect the meanes.*

Concerning the first point, I say a man may truly repent him of his sinnes, and yet shew little or no comfort at the day of death. Yea the truth is, that the greatest part of Gods people as they liue well, so they die well and comfortably: as wee see *Steuens* did, *Acts 7. 16.* Hee saw a heauenly vision, heauen opened, and *Christ* standing at his right hand readie to helpe him, and euen so for the most in the day of death, the people of God see heauenly visions: So *Iacob* went downe to *Egypt* and died

died there comfortably and in peace : The like wee reade of *Ioseph*, who commaunded his bones to bee remooued, *Gen. 50. 25.* at their departure from *Ægypt*. So *Dauid*, *Moses*, and other of the Saints died, and had honourable buriall in the peace of a good conscience. This made *Baltham* say, *O that I might die the death of the righteous, and that my last end might bee like his* : Hee would not liue the like of the Saints, but hee would gladly haue so died : it was too strict, too precise a way for a naturall man like him : too much against the currant and streame of the world, though hee would haue dyed like the righteous, because hee knew the difference was great betwixt their death and that of wicked men. So it is written, *Heb. 11. 13.* of *Heb. 11. 13.* the Fathers of the faithfull ; *They all died in faith*, not all of lingring sicknettes, nor they died not all in their beds, nor amongst their trier ds, in bodily honour and pompe which may be taken away and debarred men to inioy : but in faith, in peace of conscience, in hope of heaven, in the comfortable application of the promises of Gods loue, in assurance of the pardon of sinne. So as I say, vsually and ordinarily, the people of God liue in this world with comfort, and depart out of this world as old *Simcon* did when hee had gotten *Christ* into his armes, *Luk. 2.* Yet sometimes it falls out by the wise dispensation of God that through their owne default, the most faithfull and beleeuing men haue very litle comfort, and poore fruits of their faith when they come to die, but either die without feeling ( which is grieuous ) or which is more fearefull with feare and horror ; which not onely daily experience confirmeth, but Scripture also : as *Eccles. 8. 9.* All things come alike to all : there is one euent *Eccles. 8. 9.* to the righteous and to the vnrighteous, to the good and the bad, to the pure and the polluted, to him that sacrificeth and to him that sacrificeth not, &c. the meaning of which place is, that all worldly things fall alike to all with the same condition and time, to the wicked as well as the good, to the lust, as to the vniust. Now if all things fall alike



Note

One on a  
Rocke.

1. John. 3. 9.

Psal. 32. 1.

3  
Causes why  
Gods people  
die without  
comfort.

alike in their liues, then may some men say, it may be also alike in their deaths, and so wee may not by and by condemne a man that shewes little comfort at his death; but if his life haue bene good, he hauing walked in the feare of God, shewed signes of his conuersion, wee are to iudge of him according to the whole course of his life, and not according to that one instance of his death: for as a man that sees his fellow sit vpon a high rocke a great way from him, though hee stirre neither hand nor foot, nor shew any motion of life, yet hee knowes there is life in him, because he sits vpright; there was life in him when he left him; and no body came since to take away his life; so in this case it is with a Christian, though wee see no motion or signe of spirituall life at the instant, yet because wee knew him when hee had the life of God, and grace, and no body since could take it from him, it cannot bee, wee may conclude, but that it remaines still with him; as 1. John. 3. 9. it is said, *Whosoever is borne of God doth not commit sinne, for his seed remaineth in him, neither can hee sinne because hee is borne of God.* The godly in this case are said not to sinne, because they are preserved from sinning totally or finally; a holy seed remaines in them which breakes forth into repentance for all and the least sinnes; and because the Lord imputeth not their sinnes vnto them; so as they shall doe nothing which shall impeach their saluation: So that if a man haue liued well, wee hauing seene the effects of Gods holy Spirit in him, wee are not by and by to condemne him, though hee expresse and feeble small or no comfort when hee comes to die.

Now there bee three Causes why the people of God, or a particular Christian may die with little or no comfort, feeling of Gods fauour; and yet haue truly repented.

1. The

1. *The cause may be in nature,* and then it is either by reason of  
 1. *The Complexion, or*  
 2. *By Reason of the Extremitie of the Disease.*  
 2. *For neglect of Grace.*  
 3. *Because of their indisposition at the time of Death.*

These be the three causes why many of Gods people finde little comfort in the houre of death: *First, by reason of their complexion*, for grace doth neuer abolish nature, but onely tempers and mortifies it. Indeed the nature of Grace is to abolish sinfull affection in man, but naturall affections it abolishes not, onely orders and keeps them within bounds and measure; as wee see in the two Kine who carried the Arke, there was a naturall affection in them which made them low as they went, *1. Sam. 16. 12.* and there was also a power of God seene ouermastering nature; which made them carry the Arke vnto the place which God had appointed, thus Grace orders onely, but destroys not nature, it qualifies and directs it, making it a seruant in all things. So obserue of what constitution a man is before Regeneration, and you shall finde him of the same after conuersion: If melancholie before, hee will bee melancholie after: if chollericke, the same after. Hence it is that the very best men may shew a great deale of difference betwixt what they were in life, and in the time of death: for if a man be chollericke by nature, if formerly hee haue beene hastie and rash, this man though a sanctified man, and the deare childe of God, may yet (vnlesse a great deale of grace with strength of iudgement ouermaster nature) shew much impatiencie, touchinesse, waywardnesse when hee comes to die. So if a man haue beene of a melancholie disposition, of a sad speech; or few words in his life, though excellent in grace, this man if not ouermastered by grace, for his life is not able to shew himselfe cheerefull and comfortable when hee comes to die. On the other side, if a man be of

1  
Cause of want  
of comfort in  
Death.

Kine carrying  
the Arke.

a fan-

a sanguine complexion, and so by consequence light and merry; this man although hee haue beene a vilde and a loose liuer, yet hee may thew himselfe comfortable at the day of death, when yet this comfort may be not a worke of grace but of meere nature. Thus when wee see a man distrust himselfe in the day of death, wee may set our selues from his owne disposition to comfort him; for in some complexions, one may come to die comfortably, though one want grace, and in somethere may be a lumpishnesse and discomfort, and yet haue a warrantable end: Therefore if wee would iudge rightly of any at the day of death, wee must consider of what complexion they are, and so deale iudiciously with our comforts and threatnings. As if wee pourea glaße of wine amongst wine, it tastes onely of wine, but if wee poure it into a glaße of water, then though the wine bee predominant, yet there will be a tange and taste of water; euen so when the grace of God is infused into our hearts, though that bee predominant, yet there will bee a tange and taste of nature in this life: which is one cause why Gods children die sometimes vncomfortably.

Wine.

2  
Cause why  
some Saints  
die vncom-  
fortably.  
Blow on the  
head.

*Psal.* 106. 33.

*Psal* 31. 22.

Secondly, another reason in Nature may bee, *Because of the violence of the Disease*; for there bee some diseases in nature which worke more furiously vpon the spirits then others doe, as a man hauing a great blow vpon the head, may bee so stonied and amazed with the same, that for the same time hee may not know what hee speaks or doth: euen so a holy man may be so diseased for the time, and distressed with the extremitie of his paine, that hee may breake forth into rage and passion, hee knoweth not what: as it is said of *Moses*, *Psal.* 106. 33. *That they did vex his spirit and prouoked him; so that hee spake vnadvisedly with his lipps.* So *Dauid* saith of himselfe, *Psal.* 31. 22. *For I said in mine haste I am cut off from before thine eyes, &c.* So that through extremitie and vehemencie of passion, a good man may breake out into things vnseemly,



vnseemly, all which tendeth to this, that a good Christian may die of so strange a disease, of the Fluxe, burning Ague, Stone, Conuulsion, when either the choller shooting vp into the head, or the disease working furiously vpon the tender vitall parts, the partie may die strangely: hee may talke idly, crie out through the extremitie of his paine; hee may haue his face and his mouth pulled awry, &c. and yet for all this bee the deare childe of God, and vndoubtedly saued. So one may die of an Apoplexie or dead Pallie, in which case a man shall haue all his senses benumbed so, as hee may die like a blocke without shew of iudgement or reason, and yet for all this bee in a blessed state, because though the state of his body bee changed, yet the state of his minde and soule remaines vntouched.

Yee I doe not maintaine so saying, as if all who died Exception. of these diseases died without comfort; or that one may not die comfortably being thus visited; yes it is most cleere, that if a man be not wanting to himselfe, and cast away the helpes which God giues him; hee may die with comfort of whatsoeuer sickness hee dies of. For of all deaths the most extreamely afflictive is by fire, this is accounted the sharpest and forest of all bodily deaths, and yet we see many of the Martyres haue shewed themselves very ioyfull and comfortable euen in the very flames. The reason whereof is this; *The power of grace is infinitely greater then the power of nature: as 1. Iohn 4. 4. Greater is hee that is in you, then hee that is in the world: as if* hee should say, the power of nature is the spirit of the creature, but the power of Grace is by the Spirit of God: now the spirit of God being greater then any created spirit whatsoeuer, it comes to passe that the power of Grace brings the power of Nature vnto subiection, and ouertopping those spirits and senses workes exceeding comfort, euen in the houre of death: as wee see Contrarie when contrarie windes blow vpon a ship, that which is windes. the.

the strongest carries the ship away : So because there is both nature and grace in vs, and both blowe vpon the ship, that is, worke vpon our soules, in this conflict, that which is the strongest, working most effectually, preuaileth at the houre of death ; carrying the soule with it.

The second  
generall cause  
of want of  
comfort in the  
houre of death

*The second Generall Cause of want of comfort in the day of death is, The decay of Grace*, for many times the people of God are negligent, growe secure, omit the meanes of growing in grace, grow loose, are not carefull to answer that expectation which is had of them, leaue off diligence in hearing the Word, and practise of holy duties : quench the good spirit with following vaine delights, giue way vnto temptations, suffering them to take hold vpon them ; thus they breake out some one way, and some another, whereby it comes to passe, that it is the good pleasure of God to correct this loosenesse ( though they thinke to shelter themselues vnder the Almighty as formerly ) but they cannot doe it ; wee see when *Sampson* had growne loose in his life, hauing played the wanton and gone a wheoring from God ; when after this the *Philistines* came vpon him, hee thought to haue done as at other times, but for his life hee could not, for his strength was departed from him : thus when some of Gods people runne out in their liues, and venture on sin, many times they smart for it at their deaths, ere the conflict with conscience be overcome, and peace in the assurance of the forgiveness of sinnes be settled : So *1. Cor. 1. 30.* the Apostle sheweth them, *For this cause many are weak and sicke amongst you, and many sleepe* ; so that oft times the cause of little comfort in death, is by reason that men liue loosely and carelessly when they bee well. So *S. Paul* saith, *1. Cor. 15. 56. The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sinne is the Law* ; It is sinne that makes the sting of death to bee so grievous, painfull, and bitter vnto vs : so that is plaine, the more loosely a man liues, the more licentiously hee giues himselfe over to the world,

the

*1. iudg. 16. 20.*

*Sampsons  
intent.*

*1. Cor. 11. 30.*

*1. Cor. 15. 56.*

the more will death grate and sting him when hee comes to die. Therefore if a man would lessen his owne paines in the day of death, hee must looke to lessen his owne sin in his life; because *Death in death hath no sting but by the worke of sinne*. If a man haue an apparant hot burning Feuer, the more hee drinckes hot Wines, and feedes on fierie spices, the stronger and more violent must his fitts bee; where by the contrary, the more sober and temperate hee is in diet, the weaker still will his fitts bee; euen so it is in death: Death is like a powerfull fitt of an Ague, if a man distemper himselfe before death, and liue loosely and licentiously, death will shake euery ioynt of him with mighty terrors, and threaten to bring him to the King of terrors, but if a man bee wise to weaken death by Repentance. Humiliation, holy prayer to God; then though death may come, yet the furie and strength of it shall bee much abated: and so wee may haue comfort in the houre of death, if we be carefull to watch ouer our liues.

Burning Feuer.

The *Third generall Reason* is, because of our *indisposition at the houre of Death*, or in Death, because men doe not then strīue with themselues to stirre vp their Faith, Zeale, and the graces of God in them, and prepare themselues with a good conscience to die; for a man may haue Faith and Repentance, and other graces of God in him, and yet because hee doth not stirre vp those graces in him, hee may die with little comfort. A man in this case is like waisting coales couered ouer with ashes, which must bee stirred, or else they will die suddenly; therefore when a man comes to die, hee must stirre vp his faith, hope, repentance, patience, care, loue, and all the graces of the spirit: euen as old *Jacob*, *Gen. 49.vlt.* when hee came to die, did reare vp himselfe, leaned on his staffe, and worshipped God, though an old decrepid man, and bedrid, yet hee gat him vp vpon his knees, turned himselfe, and renewed his repentance, so must a Christian

3  
Generall cause  
of our want of  
comfort in  
Death.

Dead coales.

*Gen. 49.vlt.*



*man doe at the time of death, stirre vp himsele and prepare to Humiliation and to die in the Lord, lest they want comfort in death, which otherwise they might attaineto. So wee see good Stephen amongst a shoure of stones that brayned him, yet lift vp his eyes to heauen, so as hee made all his persecutors amazed at his comfortable vision, and was not here a man prepared to die? Therefore let vs studie and pray in this case, that God would helpe vs to rouze vp our selues against that time.*

*Hitherto haue wee so proceeded in this Case of comfort in Death, that wee haue brought it thus farre; that a man may truly repent, and yet by occasions die with small comfort.*

Now come wee to the next point, the most obseruable of all the rest; namely that

*There is a hopefull and likely way whereby a man may come to die with comfort, if hee will not bee wanting to himsele, and neglect those meanes and helps which God affoerds him.*

Now in this case there are two things to bee declared vnto you:

1. *That there is such a way.*
2. *What that way is?*

*For the ground of the first I assume this, That a Christian man may bee so fortified and composed in himsele by the power of grace; that whatsoeuer sorrows come in death, they shall bee ioyfully welcome vnto him. See this composed estate of the Saints well set forth, Psal. 37. 37. Marke the perfect man, and behold the upright, for the end of that man is peace. So in the Hebrewes it is said of the Fathers, They were racked, stoned, hewen asunder, and would not bee deliuered, that they might receiue a better Resurrection.*

*Ground that wee die comfortably.*

*Psal. 37. 37.*

*Heb. 11. 35. 36. 37.*

*Resurrection.* So the Apostle saith of himselfe, *Act. 21. 13.* *23.* What doe yee mean to weepe and breake my heart, for I am ready not to bee bound onely, but euen to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus. So hee shewes, *Rom. 8. 36. 37.* As it is written, for thy sake are wee killed all the day long; wee are accounted as sheepe for the slaughter, &c. Thus you see a Christian may bee so composed in himselfe, that whensoever death commeth, it shall not moue him from that comfort and sweet apprehension hee hath in God. So *Maccab. 7. 5. 6.* the mother and her children vttered these speeches when they came to die; They exhorted one another with the mother to die manfully, and said, The Lord God looketh vpon vs, and in truth hath comfort in vs, &c. Another said, Thou like a fury takest vs out of this life, but the King of the world shall raise vs vp. The third said, being commanded to put forth his tongue, These haue I from heauen, but for his lawes I despise them. And so the three children in *Daniel 3. 7.* when a most exquisite death was set before them, they answered the King; O Nabuchadnezzar wee are not fearefull to answer thee in this matter; our God is able to deliuer vs, but if not, wee will neuer swerne from the holy lawes which hee hath giuen vs: So that wee see plainly by the worthy examples of these holy men, that a man may be so fortified and strengthened with the Spirit of Grace, that whatsoever death come, and whensoever, it shall not take away his heavenly comfort and peace. Very prophane men can say, that delectation will take away the sense and feeling of any paine, because in griefe and paines there are two things which concerne, first, *Nocivum*, a thing hatefull to nature and all the properties thereof. Secondly *Perceptio Nocui*, a sensible feeling and perceiuing of that which is hurtfull to nature; Now something may bee hurtfull to nature, when yet delectation more rauishing with the delight of another object, this hurt may bee insensible, not complained of at least: As a man being asleepe, there may bee some-

One asleepe,

*Aquin. 1.2. q. 78  
concl. 4.*

*James 1.2.*

thing hurtfull to nature, and yet hee hath no sense and feeling of it. So *Thomas Aquinas* on *Act. 4.* saith that *the feeling and apprehension of Gods love may be so great in a man, that it may make him reioyce in his spirit, as resolved against all mischiefe and affliction whatsoener which is cast vpon him.* As *James 1.2.* Count it exceeding ioy when you fall into diuers tentations, &c. so that one may haue ioy euen in dangerous trialls and temptations, so it is reported of a holy Martyr in the Primitiue Church, that when hee walked vpon the hot burning coales barefooted vttered these words, *O I walke vpon these hot burning coales as if I walked vpon a bed of Roses,* his delight in God, and a higher, mightier apprehension carrying away the more sensitiue powers of the soule, made that hee felt no paine; *Or who knowes but the violence of the fire might bee aswaged, as in the case of the three Children.*

*Man robbed.*

Now if a Christian may die thus comfortably in burning flames, in the greatest extremitie that can be, then it is more easie with diuine assistance to ouercome the lesser tentations; for if a heart be sanctified by the power of Gods grace, settled, composed in it selfe, there is no doubt but that hee may die in peace with heavenly comfort, though hee be in perplexitie vpon his sicke bed. Thus it is cleere, there is a very probable way, for a man to die in comfort. If a man as I haue shewed before, fall into the hands of theeues, and bee robd and spoyled of all his goods; yea, left naked and wounded in a wilderness, yet if he haue one jewell of great value vndiscovered, or in some sure friends hand, that at last hee hopes to enjoy and possesse the same: his griefe, sorrow and vexation for his wounds are quickly forgot and passed ouer, the comfort of that hee expects and hopes for, ouercomming the present affliction. So is it with the children of God, deprimed and robd of all worldly wealth, pleasures and preferment, vexed and tormented with diseases, griefes, tor-  
tures,



trials, persecutions; yea, and death it selfe. The hope of eternall life affords them such comfort, with the appurtenances thereof, that all the rest is either overcome, or  
 „ overpassed quickly. Yet in this case hee will say, Lord  
 „ I thanke thee I haue my jewell still, sicknesse hath ta- q.d.  
 „ ken away my strength, and afflictions my ease; theeves  
 „ haue taken away my goods: but Lord I thanke thee I  
 „ haue thee still: all these things haue not taken God from  
 „ mee, nor *Christ*, nor the hope of Heauen, nor the pro-  
 „ tection of Angels, the intercession of my Saviour, the  
 „ peace of conscience, and the like; thus in this case a  
 „ mans ioy remaines still.

But how shall wee doe when the disease is violent, and death it selfe so terrible, that wee cannot remember our consolation and comforts? what way in this case is there to die with comfort? Obiect.

This is a waightry point and difficult to answer, there- Answ.  
 fore I pray to God that as his Spirit in the house where they were met together, sate vpon the Disciples heads in clouen fiery tongues, that so it would please him to send his holy Spirit to sit vpon my tongue, that so I may reueale this great matter vnto you, and lay the burden as handsomly as I can vpon your shoulders; for the more handsome a thing is wrapped vp, the better it may be carried. Now in this way to die comfortably obserue two things required at the hands of euery Christian soule who would die in comfort.

1. *A constant continuall Preparation at all times for Death.*

2. *A holy disposition when wee come to die.*

If these things be practised, *A preparation to die*, and a sanctified heart at the houre of death: it is sure and certaine, wee shall die happily and well, whatsoeuer disease we die of.

I

A Preparation  
to death.

Iohn 19. 41.

Ioseph of Ari-  
mathea.

Exod. 12. 11.

Pascheuer.

First therefore, there must be a preparation to death, for a man shall hardly die well, if he do not prepare for death before death come: as it is written of *Ioseph of Arimathea*, Ioh. 19. 41. that hee made a tombe in his garden, and why in the garden, that in the midst of all his pleasures and delights, he might remember death, and so prepare himselfe for it: euen so must the rest of Gods people doe, prepare for death before it come. We reade that when the people of God were to celebrate the *Pascheuer*, Exod. 12. 11. the text saith; *And thus yee shall eate it, with your loines girded, your shoes on your feet, and your staffe in your hand, and yee shall eate it in haste, &c.* And why was this? that the people might be ready to passe out of *Egypt* whensoever God should call them vnto it. Euen so must euery man prepare himselfe for death, get his staffe into his hand, haue his loines girded, his shoes vpon his feet, that he may bee ready to depart out of this world, when God shall appoint him; but such is our corruption that a number haue a care onely to liue in iollity, neglecting altogether preparation for the day of death, how to lay themselves downe in rest and peace of conscience at that time.

3

Reasons to  
prepare for  
Death.

Reason 1.

Gen. 27. 1. 2.

Now there be *Three reasons that may moue a man to prepare himselfe for the day of death*; First because of the *uncertainty of Death*. Vncertaine I say, both in regard of time, place, manner, for though we all know that we must die, that no man can escape or auoide it: yet are these other circumstances of our death onely known vnto God. Wherefore because nothing more certaine then that wee must die, and nothing so vncertaine as Time, Place, and Manner; it stands vs in hand alwayes to bee prepared for it, doing and ordering of our affaires betimes, as good old *Isaac* said in this case to his sonne *Esau*, Gen. 27. 1. 2. *Behold now I am old, and know not the day of my Death, come therefore dresse me venison, &c. That my soule may blesse thee before I dye.* Euen so must wee doe, order all matters wisely, exhort one another daily whilest it is called

called to day : doe what good wee can ; repent vs of our sins, delay no good wee are able to doe to our selues or others, saying to friends, children and acquaintance, ô my time is vncertaine, therefore remember this and this, doe this and this, &c. Thus must wee prepare for death, there is none amongst vs I know, but if hee had an intent to build a house, would surely make preparation for it before hand, as Timber, bricke, morter, tyles, with other necessaries : So seeing wee are to make sure for our selues an eternall house not made with hands, let vs bee carefull to furnish our selues, to fit our selues for it, by earnest prayer, faith, patience, obedience, &c. because as I said we are vncertaine of the time, whether to day or to morrow, young or old, this yeare or the next ; whether in the day or the night ; whether in the house or the field ; whether amongst our friends or enemies : whether of a lingring or a sudden, a milde or a torturing disease : by land or water : by sword or famine, or pestilence, all is I say vncertaine : therefore wee must prepare for death, in regard of the certaine vncertaintie thereof.

House building.

A second Reason to mooue vs to this preparation is, Reason 2. *because wee can die but once : and that which can but once bee done, had need to bee well done.* So the Author to the Hebrews saith, *Heb. 9. 27. It is appointed for men once to die, and after that cometh iudgement.* So because wee can die but once, we should be very carefull to doe it wel, seeing if it be ill done, it can neuer be mended againe. In all other things if a man doe amisse at first, hee may re-  
 pare it afterwards, but onely in this matter of death, there is no amendment, no redemption afterwards. If a man shoote an arrow at a marke, if in the first aime, you tell him what his fault was ; that hee is ouer, or vnder, or wide, he may mend it the next time, or the next after that ; but in death it is not so, once amisse and euer vndone : therefore be carefull to die well, seeing it is but once to bee done.

Arrow shot.

The third Reason is, *The remedlesse state after Death,* Reason 3.



for looke how death leaues a man, so shall iudgement find him. As long as a man is aliue here vpon earth, there is hope that he may bee conuerted, repent of his sins, and be brought before the throne of Grace, but if a man bee once dead and laied in the dust, then he can neuer attaine to repentance for his sins, Faith in the promises, nor vnto one sanctified Grace of Gods Spirit, though he would giue a thousand worlds if he had them; therefore euery mans wisdom must be to prepare for death before it come, according to that counsell of Eccles. 9. 10. *Whatsoeuer thine hand findeth to doe, doe it with all thy might, for there is neither worke nor deuice, nor wisdom in the graue whither thou goest.*

*Eccles. 9. 10.*

## *Now this Preparation to Death stands in five Dutyes.*

I  
Duty of Pre-  
paration,

First, *A man of vnderstanding must furnish himselfe with those graces and duties that bee most needfull at the day of death; He must labour for Faith and Patience, and Obedience, with other holy graces of God; for he cannot then spare any grace, but these three a man shall find more especiall need of when he comes to die; Therefore as No-*  
*ah made an Arke to saue himselfe and his houthold from the flood before it came; so must euery man before death come, labour to saue and secure himselfe, that he may haue a place of shelter in the day of death. Wherefore if a man would die well, he must first come to liue well, for questionlesse as a man liues, so is he likely to die. If a man*  
*look vpon a tree when it is a felling he may giue a shrewd glimpse where it will fall; for looke where the greatest burden of boughes hang or grow, that way commonly the tree will fall, and euen so, looke which way a mans thoughts & affections carry him in the course of his life, the very same inclination will sway him at the houre of his death. Therefore a man must prepare to furnish himselfe with abundance of holy graces that they may ouer-*  
*sway*

*Noahs Arke.*

*Tree felling.*

sway him, in his loosing from earth to heaven when hee dies: Referring all vnto God and his good will and pleasure with holy *David*, saying, *I held my peace and said Psal. nothing because thou O Lord hast done it.*

Secondly, *A man must, that would die well, arme himselfe against the feare of death*, for a man cannot die well, if he be affraid to die, therefore he must be armed against it. If any aske, how must we be armed against the feare of death? I answer,

2  
Duty of Preparation.  
How to be armed against the feare of death.  
Answ.

First, *By perswading himselfe that it is Gods appointment that hee shall die*; yea, that the very time and manner of our death is appointed by him, yea every fit, pang, and trouble at the time of death: all particulars are appointed, as *Christ shewes, Math. 10. 30. But the very Math. 10. 30.*  
*haires of your head are all numbred* Secondly, we must

2

arme our selues against the feare of death, *by considering the comfortable state which followeth after Death*; For *Christ hath quite altered and changed the nature thereof*, so that whereas before death and hell by meanes of our sins were chained together to swallow vs vp, as it is *Rev. Reuel. 6. 8.*  
*6. 8. Death went before, and Hell followed after*: Now

*Christ hath dislinked and disioyned them, and hath made a new vnion*, so that now death goes before and heaven followes after to the godly and faithfull. And therefore as a man that is ready to passe ouer some great terrible Riuer Great Riuer  
into some delicate garden, must not so much looke vpon passage.  
the deepe waters, as thinke vpon the place whither hee is a going, so must wee doe in our iourney to heaven, wee must not so much be terrified with the obstacles in our way: as the benefites wee shall haue by dissolution, freed from sin, and to inioy the felicitie of the blessed for evermore; yea, and to consider, that as the Angels stood ready to carry *Lazarus* his soule into *Abrahams* bosome, so stand the Angels round about the beds of the faithfull to carry their soules into heaven, which is a maine benefite wee now haue by death; for it is made to be the great Note.  
*enemie of sinne, although by sinne it came into the world*; yet

One sent for  
to Court.

3

yet God hath so altered the former course, as he hath made death the onely meanes to abolish sinne in his seruants; *this should make vs reioyce* in the day of death, considering whether death brings a soule fitted for heauen. If a man should be sent for vnto the court to liue there, and to receiue honour from the King, if as hee entered there should stand a terrible grim Porter at the gate, this man would not much feare the Porter being sent for to come to the King, but cast his eyes on the Pallace, and busie himselfe with the hopes of his entertainment at hand: So, when God sends for vs to liue with him in heauen, though death be like a terrible grim Porter, yet let vs not looke vpon his vgly face, but cast our eyes to heauen and beyond that, by considering the comforts of that place. Thirdly, wee must arme our selues against the feare of Death, *by considering, that by death wee die to sinne*: and that death is the very accomplishing of our saluation: Sinne brings all to death, and God hath made death (as I said) a meanes to abolish sinne, so that first death is the messenger of God. Secondly, it is the doore to let vs into heauen. Thirdly, it is the death of sinne. Fourthly, Death is a consumation of our sanctification here in this world, therefore a true penitent soule hath no cause to bee affraid of death. Indeed the wicked worldling, whose hope and God is his wealth, hath great cause to be affraid of it, because in a moment it snatches away from him all that he hath beene a gathering and drudging for so many yeares together, leauing him nothing of all his hundreds and thousands, but a poore wooden coffin to lye in: this makes him affraid of death. And againe, he is affraid of death, because it is not a doore to let him into heauen, but an open wide gate to set him into hell where hee must lye eternally tormented with the Deuill and his angels for euer. But a godly soule who hath his place made, his sins repented of, who hath liued a watchfull life ouer his heart and wayes, hath now no cause to be terrified, but rather as Christ speaks; *To lift up his head and reioyce, knowing*  
! *that*



that his Redemption drawes neere : and that his saluation is now neerer then when he first beleueed: So that a Christian vntill death come may truely say, *Morior dum non morior, I die whilst I doe not die.*

Thurldly, a man that would die well, must labour to weaken death betimes ; If a man were to fight a combat with an enemy for his life, hauing the dycting of him a weeke before the combat or more, I hope no man thinks but that it were good policie, to make his enemy so feeble and poore, that hee should not be able to strike a stroke to hurt him : So euery man and woman liuing must haue a combat with death ; and yet this is a great mercie of God shewed vs, that wee haue the dicting of death, so that we may weaken it if hee will, and abate his strength. Our good life weakens him, and our sins giue strength vnto him. Therefore if we haue any care of our estate, let vs prouide to weaken him before wee come to the combat, that hee doe not foile and overcome vs. Let vs deale with him as the *Philistims* did with *Sampson*, Iudg. 16. 21. Sampson. when they perceiued that his strength lay in his haire, by and by they cut off his haire, and made him as feeble and weake as other men : So must wee doe, intending to weaken the great strength of death ; wee must labour to finde wherein his strength consists, and finding that it lyes in our sinnes, wee must then as *Daniel* speakes, Dan. 4. 27. breake off our sinnes by righteousness, indeauour to remooue them as soone as may be. Wherefore I exhort euery one of you who hope for the fauour of God, to repent you of your sinnes, and set aworke the power of grace, that so you may attaine for your comfort to finde  
Death weakened in the day  
of Death.





## LECT. XII.

V.

THE CASE OF REPENTANCE, OF COMFORT  
in Death.

NUM. 23.10.

*Let mee die the death of the righteous, and let my last  
end bee like his.*



It is one thing to stand a mile off and shew a man a towne or a countrey, and another thing to take him by the hand, and bring him into the gates, and so carry him from street to street, from place to place, not onely shewing the thing a farre off, but a part of the glorie of the same; so in this present Treatise which wee haue in hand, it is one thing to tell you that there is a way, whereby the righteous may obtaine to die well (if they will not neglect it) and another thing to take you by the hand and goe with you from field to field, from particulars to particulars, till wee haue put you into the gates of heauen; The one wee haue done out of the abilitie God gaue; and now wee desire to performe the other.

The duties of Preparation I shew, consisted of five  
seucrall



seuerall heads ; First, that a man of vnderstanding must furnish himselfe with those graces and duties that bee most needfull at the day of death. Secondly, that a man in this case must arme himselfe against the feare of death, Thirdly, that a man must learne to weaken death be- times. Now wee goe on.

4  
Duty of Pre-  
paration,

Quest.  
Answ.

Legs and arms  
tyed.

Burden car-  
ryed.

*Ier. 12. 5.*

Fourthly, *Hee who would die well, must begin to die betimes* ; hee must die daily, as the Apostle professeth of his owne practise, *1. Cor. 15. 31. I protest by our reioycing which wee haue in Christ Iesus, I die daily.* So must wee doe, wee must bee a dying daily, inuring our selues to death before death come. But how shall this be done ? I answer, by mortifying our flesh, and newnesse of life ; euery affection must bee humbled and receiue a little death ; *This world must bee the schoole wherein wee must learne to die* ; for it must teach vs by the word of God, to set the lesse by this world, and all worldly things. Surge-  
ons when they come to cut off armes or legges, they first tie them hard many dayes before, and so stop the course of the blood, that what they take away, may put the Pa-  
tient to no paine, euen so must a man doe, first stop the course of these worldly pleasures, whereby hee may bee inabled with comfort to leaue them all when God calls him. Secondly, it must teach vs patiently and fitly to carry this great crosse of death, for a man that would in-  
ure himselfe to carry a great burden, hee must first inure himselfe to carry the lesser ; so it is in death to go through this coragiously and well, one must first accustome him-  
selfe to beare the lesser crosses, and smaller troubles inci-  
dent in this our fraile life : for if hee cannot indure the smaller crosses, and as *Jeremiah* speakes, runne with the footmen, how shall one be able to indure the greater af-  
flictions and runne with horses, in terrible ouerflowings ? Thus hee who would die well, must die daily, euery crosse, trouble, or change, must bee as a day of death vn-  
to him.

Fiftly,

Fiftly, in this case one must often pray vnto God to take away the bitterneſſe of death; as the Author to the Hebrewes ſpeakes, Chriſts praſtiſe was, *Heb. 5.7. Who in the dayes of his fleſh, when hee had offered up prayers and ſupplications with ſtrong cries and teares vnto him that was able to ſaue him from death, and was alſo heard in that which hee feared.* If then Chriſt with many cries and ſtrong teares prayed God inſtantly and earneſtly to take away that cup from him, ſo muſt euery true Chriſtian be content to goe into his chamber or cloſet, there heartily and earneſtly to pray vnto God, to take away, leſſen, and mitigate the bitterneſſe of the paines of death; If one thus doe conſtantly beleue it, hee ſhall finde great comfort in the houre of death. When the people had light vpon the bitter waters of *Marah*, yea ſo bitter, that they could not drinke them, *Exod. 15. 15.* as *Moses* ſaw the people in this extremitie, God ſhewed him a tree, which when *Moses* had caſt a little of it in the water, by and by it became ſweet, euen ſo muſt wee pray vnto God that into the bitter cup of our death, hee would caſt in a little of the ſweet wood of the croſſe of Chriſt: I meane a little ſpirituall comfort in and through his gracious promiſes, and then as hee endured his ſorrow and ſweates, ſo the ſoureſt death ſhall become moſt eaſie vnto vs.

<sup>5</sup>  
Duty of our Preparation.  
*Heb. 5.7.*

*Exod. 15. 15.*  
Bitter waters.

Thus hauing declared vnto you the duties of Preparation for death, it remaines I ſhew you how to praſtiſe the ſame. Wee reade, *Math. 19. 22.* when the rich man came to Chriſt, deſirous to know how hee might attaine eternall life, and Chriſt had told him, that for attaining thereof hee muſt ſell all hee had and giue to the poore, he went away ſorrowfull. So it may be that many who come hither to learne how to die, when they heare that it muſt coſt them ſo deare, that there is ſo much adoe about it, and muſt indure a great deale of labour and paine, will bee content neuer to goe about it. And yet as the wiſe men tooke a long iourney, with a great deale of trauell

*Math. 19. 22.*

Wiſemens iourney.

and

and paines to finde out Christ, *Mt. 2. 10.* whom hauing found, they were exceeding glad and joyfull: so whosoever he be that labours and takes much paines to die well, hauing once attained the same, the joy of so comfortable a passage at such a pinch, wil make him rejoyce and think all his labour and paines well spent. The next thing to be considered, is,

Secondly, *That there must be a holy disposition at the time of death.*

Cure of  
qualms.

For though a man haue made preparation for it, yet if he doe not holily dispose himselfe when he comes to die, he may want the blessing of a comfortable and quiet death. As when qualmes come ouer or vpon a man, if he haue *Aquavita, Rosafolis*, or other comfortable waters by him, he may be refreshed and reuiued; but if because of some couetous humor or neglect, he let the bottles hang by, neither tasting or applying any remedie, it is all one as if he had beene without them. So it may be with a man at the time of death, he may haue the waters of good wishes by him, prepare himselfe for God, and pretend before hand to receiue comfort in his sicknesse; yet if hee let them lie by, and applie them not, that is, stir them not vp in himselfe, for all his preparation, he may find little or no comfort at death. Therefore there must be a spiritual excitation and stirring vp of the graces of God at that time; the rather because that is the last act of our life, the last part we shall play vpon the stage of this world. Saint Paul, *1. Cor. 15. 26.* calls it, *The last enemy that shall be subdued, is Death, &c.* Therefore because Death is the last of our life, we should haue a speciall care to act & performe that well. A good Mariner who hath carried a ship well two or three yeres through the raging seas, will especially double his care for her safe landing; that she do not miscarrie when she is readie to enter into the Harbour. Euen so a man who hath well disposed of the little barke of

*1. Cor. 15. 26.*

Mariners care.



of his body fiftie or sixtie yeares through the troublesome seas of this world, must haue a great care to lay it downe well at the day of death, or else he shall staine all his former cunning and knowledge. Thus you see there must bee a holy disposition in Death; which consists in six things.

First, *That a man bee willing to die, when the time is come*; that one doe not then hang after the world, and desire to tarry longer, when God would haue him depart by appointment. As a marchant who sends his factor beyond seas to traffique for him, hee must be contented to tarry there or returne at his masters pleasure: So must wee doe, because wee be all seruants of almightie God, sent hither into this world to bee imployed about his businesse, as long as hee will haue vs: Therefore when he sends for vs, wee must bee willing and readie to come home and giue vp our accompts, though wee leaue all behinde vs. Thus our blessed Sauour many a time deliuered himselfe from death and danger, he went into Ægypt, he fled into the wildernesse, and many times auoided his enemies. But when the time was come, as wee see *Iohn 18.4.* then he went out willingly to meet with death: So *Moyse* desired that he might goe ouer Iordan, and tread vpon the Land of Promise: But when God had denyed him this request, and told him he must die in the wildernesse, hee went as willingly vnto the place of his death, as wee doe to a feast or banquet: So old *Simeon*, when he had once gotten Christ into his armes, became most willing to die, *Luke 2.* singing that Song, *Now Lord let thou thy seru-  
nant depart in peace, for mine eyes haue seen thy saluation;* this is the first thing in this holy disposition, to be willing to die: Wherefore it is a lamentable case, that a number professing Christianitie should so hang vpon the world at that time, like naturall men, mentioned *Psal. 17. 14.* *Which haue their portion in this life whose bellie thou fillest with thy hid treasure, &c.* It is wonderfull that world-

Thing in a holy disposition.

A factors patience.

*Iohn 18.4.*

*Luke 2.*

*Psal. 17. 14.*

Numb. 13.  
Grapes incou-  
ragement.

lings doe thus, but that Christians should doe so who haue layed vp their hope in God, the comforts of saluation in Christ, and expect this as the chiefest happinelle, it is a wofull thing. The good people, *Numb. 13.* when they saw the cluisters of grapes which were brought vp-on a barre betweene two men, they made hast towards the land of promise, and encouraged one another to rise vp and enter: euen so when God hath giuen vs some first fruites of the Spirit, some taste of the ioyes of the life to come; some little grapes of our heavenly countrey, what should we doe, but make haste and dispatch speedily to enter into the full possession of the same.

2-  
Thing in a ho-  
ly disposition.

Secondly, *One must then let all goe and apply himselfe wholly to the saluation of his soule;* So wee see the good theefe did when hee came to die, all his care was for the saluation of his soule; though hee hung in paine and torment, yet hee prayes to Christ, not for reliefe from death, or to ease his paine, but onely that Christ would remember him when hee came into his kingdome; Euen so must wee doe, when we come to die, wee must not looke after our paines, nor after our ease or worldly accounts, but that our soules may bee saued, how wee may stand before God with an vpright conscience. If a mans house be on fire and hee cannot in this danger saue all his goods, hee will yet apply himselfe to saue his best things, carry out his jewells, plate and money, with some of his best household stufte, that if any perish, the worst may burne first. Thus must a man doe at the day of death, when hee sees that he cannot saue all, because he must lose his soule or his goods; the best way then is to let all goe, and wholly to apply ones selfe to saue his soule at the day of death.

Best things!  
saued.

3  
Thing in a  
holy dispositi-  
on.  
*Heb. 11. 13.*

Thirdly, *One must labour to die in faith,* as hee hath liued therein, as *Heb. 11. 13.* It is said of the Fathers, all these died in faith; They died not all in their beds, nor of a lingring sicknelse, nor amongst their friends, for  
some

Some were sawen asunder, some stoned, but all died in faith. And our Sauour Christ wee know when hee came to die, and his very greatest extremities of death vpon him: in the very agonie of death hee did wholly rest vpon God, crying out, *My God, my God*: so must wee doe in the greatest paines and calamities of death, yea in torments, wholly cast our selues vpon Gods loue and fauour as our surest hold; wee should shut vp our eyes, and cast our selues on his mercie, with full perswasion that though wee shall dwell in the dens of death for a little while, yet one day he will raise vs vp, and make vs partakers of Heauen, where wee shall haue the comfortable presence of God and his holy Angels and blessed Saints for euer. It is obserued, that when a man is in danger of drowning, looke what they haue in their hands they hold fast, and neuer part with it, no not when life leaues them, so must a Christian soule doe in the time of death, cast vp his armes and lay hold vpon Christ, neuer part with him, no not when the last breath leaues him.

*The Faith a Christian must die in, consists  
in three things.*

First, *He must die in the faith of his owne Reconciliation with God*; that God is at peace with him, and become his good Father by the meanes of Iesus Christ, and therefore boldly to go vnto God as vnto our Father, knowing that no childe can be so welcome to his father, as we shall be vnto the Lord our God, which is the comfort that the Church hath left vnto her by Christ, *Ioh. 20. 17. Goe vnto my brethren and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and your Father, and vnto my God and your God*; As if hee should say, Let it be your comfort, that God is your Father, heauen is your home, he is not a stranger vnto you, but your God is more compassionate, then any earthly father can be. This way onely the Prodigall sonne took for mercie, when his case was desperate, *Luk. 15. 18*. For hee thus disputed with himselfe, whatsoeuer I haue beene, or

1  
Thing a man  
must die in.

*Ioh. 20. 17.*

*Luk. 15. 18.*



Psal 23.

wherefoeuer I haue liued, it is no matter, yet because he is my Father I will goe home and craue pardon in hope of mercie: So must a man thus by the meanes of faith say, I will goe to God as to my Father; *Though I walke in the midst of the valley of the shadow of death, yet will I feare none euill*: for my Father will haue a care of me in all estates: I am his, this man may depart with comfort, and finde ioy and peace accompany his passage.

2

Faith of his  
happy estate  
to come.  
Luk. 9. 31.

Secondly, *A man must die in the faith of his owne happie and comfortable estate after death*, that being a true penitent, death shall be nothing else but a doore to let him into euerlasting life: So that as Christs death, Luk. 9. 31. is tearmed *Transitus*, a departing, a passage onely, a passing from one place to another: so death is but a departing, a passing from earth to heauen, from sinfull men to be with God, Saints, and Angels, and with the spirits of iust men come to perfection, from things transitorie, to things euerlasting. To this effect *Iob* speakes, *Iob. 14. 14. If a man die shall hee liue againe, and all the dayes of my appointed time will I waite vntill my change come*. So *Paul*, *Philip. 1. 23. I desire to bee dissolued and to bee with Christ*. Again, *For wee know that if our earthly house of this Tabernacle bee dissolued, wee haue a building of God, an house not made with hands, which is eternall in the heauens*. Whereby is signified the state of eternall glorie and life euerlasting: and therefore as old *Iacob* reuiued, when hee saw the Chariots and horses come, which should carry him into *Egypt*, so because death is the fierie chariot of Almighty God, whereby all his children and chosen are carried home vnto eternall life, let vs comfortably lay hold vpon faith, when wee see the chariots of Almighty God stand ready at our doores, and reioyce that death will doe as much for vs, as these fierie chariots did for *Elias* which carried him into heauen, and be no more affraid of death then he was of that fierie chariot and horses which carried him into heauen, both having alike commission, though not in the same manner.

Iob. 14. 14.

Phil. 1. 23.

1. Cor. 5. 1

Genes.

Iacobs Chariot.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, *We must die in the perswasion of our own blessed and ioyfull resurrection*, that howsoever our bodies shal be dissolued into dust, and die as others, yet that one day we shal arise & liue again. Thus *Iob* fortified himselfe against all his miseries with hope of the resurrection, as *Iob* 19. *Iob*, 19. 25. *I know that my Redeemer liueth, and hee shall stand the last on the earth, and though wormes destroy this body, yet shall I see him in my flesh, &c.* This also supported the Prophet *Dauid*, *Psal.* 16. 9. *Wherefore my heart was glad, and my tongue reioyced, and my flesh rested in hope, for thou wilt not leaue my soule in the graue, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy one to see corruption.* This was the faith of *Dauid* that hee was perswaded that God would bring this bodie out of the graue at the time appointed, and herewith *Christ* doth also comfort himselfe in the dayes of his flesh, *Math.* 15. 21. That although he should suffer many things at the hands of the Elders, and of the high Priests and Scribes being slaine; yet that the third day hee should rise againe. Now that which was the stay of *Christ*, of *Iob*, of *Dauid*, that must bee the stay of euery faithfull soule, in all troubles and afflictions.

3  
In perswasion  
of a Resurre-  
ction.

*Psal.* 16. 9.

*Math.* 15. 21.

4  
In our patient  
suffering.  
*Heb.* 10. 36.

*Act* 8. 32.

*1. Pet.* 2. 21.

Fourthly, *Wee must shew forth especiall patience at the houre of death*, for though wee haue need of patience in the whole course of our life; yet at that time most of all: So the Author to the Hebrewes shewes: *For yee haue need of patience, that when yee haue done the will of God yee might receiue the promise, so all had need of patience.* This much was our Sauours practise mentioned, *Act* 8. 32. *Hee was led as a sheepe to the slaughter, and like a lambe dumbe before the shearers, so opened hee not his mouth.* Now *Peter* shewes vs, that *Christ* hath suffered, leauing vs an example, that wee should also suffer with him, *1. Pet.* 2. 21. *Because (saith he) Christ also suffered for vs, leauing vs an example that we should follow his steps,* therefore as *Christ* shewed extraordinary patience at the

houre of death, so must wee meekly and patiently submit our selues vnder the mightie hand of God when wee come to die.

*For our helpe in this case, obserue  
three things which may make vs patient  
in the day of death.*

**1**  
Consideration  
to make vs pa-  
tient in death.  
*Mic. 7.9.*

*First, To consider that our paines be alwayes lesse then our sinnes; and that wee feele not the thousand part of that which wee deserue to suffer: as the Church acknowledgeth, Mic. 7.9. I will beare the indignation of the Lord, because I haue sinned against him, untill hee pleade my cause and bring mee forth to the light, then shall I see his righteousness, &c. So the Theefe vpon the crosse confessed, Luk. 23. 40. saying to his fellow, Dost thou not feare God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation: and we indeed iustly suffer, for wee receiue the due reward for our deeds. So Ierem. 10. 19. Woe is mee for my hurt, my wound is grievous, but I said, truly, this is my burden and I must beare it. So must euery one say, this and this affliction, crosse or miserie is for my sinnes; all this trouble and vexation is nothing in regard of that which I haue deserued by reason of my sinnes, which God might haue imposed vpon me.*

*Luk. 23. 40.*

*Mr. 10. 19.*

**2**  
Consideration

*Secondly, to consider, That our paines are nothing to the paines of Christ, which hee suffered for vs. Hee died on the Crosse, wee for the most part die in our beds, hee died among soldiers; wee for the most part die amongst our friends, hee was put to all extremitie at his death, and wee for the most part depart of a long lingering disease. Augustine to this purpose saith well; Let man suffer what hee will, and let his paines be neuer so great, yet hee cannot come neerer the reproches, the crowne of thornes, sweates of blood, buffetings, reuilings which our Saviour suffered: though he was God, and we but sinfull men, he our Lord,*

*and*



and wee his seruants, hee cleane, wee polluted ; hee innocent and wee guiltie and vnrighteous. Therefore seeing our paines in death ( at worst ) are so farre short of his, we should be patient.

Thirdly, *To consider these paines are finite, not lasting, and that they bring vs to euerlasting ease.* So wee haue it, *Reu. 13. 14. Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from hencefoorth, for they rest from their labours, &c.* So *Isa. 57. 2.* it is said of a righteous man, *Hee shall enter in to peace : They shall rest in their beds, each one walking in his uprightness.* Thus all good men shall be at rest with him when death comes, vntill afterwards that they come to eternall, full, and euerlasting ease ; therefore this should make vs patient at the day of death, because after a little paine, we come to a great deale of ease. We know when a Tayler knocks off a prisoners bolts, fetters and Irons ; it may bee the wearing of the Irons, puts him to a great deale lesse paine then the knocking them off doth, yet though euery blow goe to the heart of him, hee is content to bee patient and still, because he knowes that paine will bring him more ease afterwards. So all men lye here fettered and griued with the bolts and irons of mortallitie and sinne, in which case it may be when God comes to knocke off those irons by death, that wee feele more paines and extremitie then before: yet because this brings to ease, and euerlasting peace and rest, therefore it should make vs patient hauing thereby these fetters of mortallitie and sinne loosed by death.

<sup>3</sup> Consideration  
*Reu. 14. 13.*

*Isa. 57. 2.*

Prisoners  
bolts,

Fiftly, a maine dutie is, *That wee must then indeauour that our speeches bee gracious and heauenly at the time of Death ;* That there bee sweet exhortations, sauourie, experimentall speeches to the beholders, questions of puritie, courage, and incouragement: as grapes shewed vnto them of that countrie whither we are a remouing to, as a light shining forth vnto them, euen from the confines

The fift thing  
in a holy  
disposition.

Grapes.

Prints of  
going.

of Death, that the beholders our friends may bee, as instructed, so comforted in our happy and blessed departure. Wee finde (as a learned man well obserues) that a man cannot goe so softly in moist grounds, but hee will leaue prints and markes behinde him of his foot-steps, so that though hee bee gone by, yet one may know which way hee went: So a man should not goe hence so softly to heauen, but he ought to leaue some markes and prints of his footsteps, in his good life, good speeches, heauenly meditations, ioyfull excitations, and praetise of holy graces, contempt of the world, &c. which shewes whether wee are a going, euen home to our Fathers house; So Christ the Patterne of all Humilitie, holinesse, patience and meeknesse: what a deale of holy and heauenly speeches did hee vse before his death, which are euer memorable, chiefly his seuen last words; So *Iacob, Gen. 47.* what a many gracious sweet words came from him ere his departure, to his sonnes and family. So *Dauid* before his death blessed and instructed his sonne *Salomon*, saying, *And thou Salomon my sonne, feare thou the Lord God of thy Fathers, &c.* The like we haue of *S. Paul, Tim.*

*I haue fought a good fight, I haue finished my course, and henceforth is layed vp for mee a crowne, &c.* *Steuens* also called vpon the Lord Iesus towards his end, and *Moses* blessed the twelue Tribes of Israel; more instances I might giue, but these may suffice to shew, that euery man must indeuour that his last words may bee gracious and seemly when hee comes to die.

The sixth  
thing in a ho-  
ly disposition.

Act. 7.

Children  
dying.

The sixth and last Dutie at the time of death is, *Holily to resigne ones selfe into the hands of God, as wee see our Saviour Christ did, Luke 23. 46. Father into thy hands I commend my spirit:* So *Steuens* when he was in the greatest perturbation that might bee, in the agonie of death said, *Lord Iesus into thy hands I commend my spirit*, euen when there was a showre of stones about his eares. Little children for the most part desire to die in their Fathers bosome, or vpon their mothers lap, euen so must a Christian

Christian in the houre of death lay downe his head vpon the sweet brest and bosome of Iesus Christ, so rendring vp vp his soule into the hands of the Lord. If a man had a most pretious jewell which hee did esteeme aboute all his wealth, valuing the same at some high rate: in time of danger hee would surely make choice of his best and chiefest friend to commit it in keeping. So seeing every Christian hath a most pretious jewell, his soule which doth farre exceede all other his wealth: therefore howsoeuer wee trust friends with our lands and goods, we must onely trust the Lord with our bodies and soules, that hee may restore them safe againe at the last day. So this is the last dutie a Christian hath to doe at the day of death, to shut vp his owne eyes, and to rest vpon the sweet mercie of Iesus Christ to receiue him into glorie.

If a man doe thus prepare himselfe for death beforehand, and then holily dispose of himselfe at the time of death, there is no doubt but hee shall die well and comfortably what death so euer hee die; no man can assure himselfe when hee shall die, where; or of what death; onely wee know if wee go on with these helps shewed, whensoever or wheresoeuer, or howsoeuer, wee shall die the seruants of God, Saints in heauen, in peace of a quiet conscience, so as they may write vpon our tombes and graues such godly Epitaphes, as the Holy Ghost doth vpon *Moses*, So *Moses the seruant of the Lord* died there in the land of Moab according to the word of the Lord.



*[The page contains faint, illegible handwriting.]*



## LECT. XIII. OF THE CONTRA- ries to Repentance.

JEREM. 18.12.

*And they said there is no hope, but wee will walke after our owne denices, and wee will every one doe the imagination of his wicked heart.*



Having spoken of the Cases of Repentance, especially of that great case of Comfort in Death, we are now to speak of the contraries of it. For euen as Marriners Mariners when they goe to Sea, they must at Sea. onely not haue their course described before them in a Map, but they must also haue speciall

notice, of rocks, and shelves & sands, that they may auoide them; Euen so must the Christian man not onely know the way of the nature, parts, and properties of true repentance, but also euen the Contraries and opposites thereof; to decline them as dangerous rocks in his spirituall passage

Ezek. 39. 15.

Signes &amp;c. vp.

sage towards his heavenly home. If you look into the Prophecie of Ezekiel, you shall finde it thus written, Chap. 39. 15. *And the Passenger which passeth through the land, when any seeth a mans bone, then shall he set a signe vp by it, &c.* So must wee set vp signes and tokens in this passage of our life, that wee may auoide these and these places of danger. The ministers of God are such searchers to finde out dead bones, that is mens sinnes, and when they haue found them they giue vs speciall notice of them, and markes that wee may euery one looke into our selues by repentance; for many times wee are hindered in our repentance and newnelle of life, for want of discouerie and apparant markes to be directed by. Now these contraries vnto it are two:

1. *Impenitencie.*2. *Unsound Repentance.*Impenitencie  
whar?

Rom. 2. 5.

2. Pet. 2. 14.

Gen. 25. 24.

First, *Impenitencie is a certaine blocke layed in our way by the deuill, when a man hath no touch or feeling of his sinnes, but against his conscience and knowledge, and iudgement, liues in knowne sinnes, which for his life hee cannot lament nor leaue, or set himselfe against:* And is that Impenitencie mentioned, Rom. 2. 5. *But after thy hardnesse and impenitent heart treasurest vp vnto thy selfe wrath, against the day of wrath and reuelation of the righteous iudgement of God.* This is impenitencie, when a man hath sinned, to bee as merry as if hee had not sinned, and neuer trouble his rest for it. Such as are mentioned, 2. Pet. 2. 14. *who cannot cease from sinne, eate and drinke, are jolly and braue in companie, as if no such matter, like vnto Esau, who when he had committed that hainous sinne in selling of his birth-right, Gen. 25. 34. was no whit dismayed, for saith the text: Then Iacob gaue Esau bread and pottage of lentiles, and hee did eate and drinke, and rose vp and went his way: Thus Esau despised his birth-right.* So Iosephs Brethren when they had seized vpon him,



him, stript him of his garments, and cast him into a pit, with an intent to destroy him, they were neuer a whit moued with the matter, but in a manner added sinne to sinne, and sold him to the *Ismaelites*, *Gen. 37. 25.* and sate *Gen. 37. 25.* downe to eate and drinke vntill they saw the *Ismaelites vnto whom they sold him.* So *Ierem. 8. 12.* It is said, *Were* *17. 8. 12.* they ashamed when they had committed abominations, nay they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush. So wee see when wee are not touched for the committing of sinne, but can be quiet and merrie contented to eate and drinke, and sleepe as well as if there were no such matter, this is the impenitent and hard heart spoken of, when one is insensible of sinne, for as in some diseases insensibilitie is a great signe of danger, a man being most fearfully sicke, when he doth not teele his sicknesse; so it is in the state of sinne, a man is in the most danger, when he doth not see or feele it. So *Ierem. 8. 6.* *I hearkened and heard, and no man spake aright, no man repented of his wickednesse, saying, what haue I done?* And *Isa. 9. 13* *For the people turne not to them that smite them, neither doe they seeke the Lord of Hosts:* So *Ezek. 33. 31.* *And they come to thee as thy people commeth, and they sit before thee as thy people, they heare thy words, but they will not doe them, for with the mouth they shew much loue, but their hearts goe after their conuetsnesse.* Now there bee

Insensible  
sicknesse.

### Three causes why the state of impenitencie is such a fearefull state to liue in.

First, Because it bindes vs fast vnder damnation, and brings vs vnto hell, and in a manner shuts the doore of hell and death vpon vs being once there. As we reade *Reu. 20.* *3.* *That the Angell layd hold on the Dragon that old serpent which is the diuel and Satan, & bound him a thousand years, and cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him vp,* *and*

1  
Cause.

*Reu. 20. 3.*

Dragon shut  
vp.

and set a seale vpon him; euen so doth impenitencie deale with vs, our sinnes sling vs into hell, and when wee are there, then comes Impenitencie and shuts downe the doore vpon vs, ties vs in chaines, makes all so fast, that we haue no power or way to get out of the fearefull estate wee bein. Therefore 2.Tim.2.26. in deauour and exhortation in this case is appointed. Proouing if at any time God will giue them repentance, that they may recouer themselves out of the snare of the diuell, who are taken captiue by him at his will: So there is a promise that if at any time a man doe come out of the snares of the deuill, and repent, he shall haue mercie; but it is very hard to be done, Impenitencie being such a sinne as the Lord euery where cries out on: as *Amos 3.* and *Ier.3.3.* *And thou hast a whores forehead, thou refusest to bee ashamed: So chap.8.6. No man repented him of his wickednesse, saying, what haue I done? euery one returned to his course as the horse rusheth into the battell.* And *Isa.9.13.* *For the people turneth not vnto him that smiteth them, neither doe they seeke the Lord of Hosts: So Ezek.33.11. As I line saith the Lord God, I haue no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turne from his wicked wayes and line, Turne yee, turne yee from your euill wayes, for why will you die, o house of Israel?*

2.Tim.2.26.

Ier.3.3.

Isa.9.13.

Ezek.33.11.

2  
Cause.

Sun shut out.

Secondly, *Because it makes void and frustrates all the meanes of grace and Life:* As a man dwelling in some poore house comfortably with his wife and his children, the Sun with his bright beames shining and breaking in vpon them: if one stop vp the window and shut out all the comfortable beams; there comfort is gone: euen so it is when God brings the sweet beames of grace to shine in vpon the conscience of a sinner, impenitencie puts a barre against them, and shuts out all the light of the Lord and of grace that shines into our hearts, so making all the meanes of Grace and of Eternall Life vnprofitable and fruitlesse vnto vs; wherfore with the holy Prophet *Dauid,*

wee

wee must beware of this peacefull estate, that we may haue boldnesse to say with him, *Psal. 66. 18. If I regard iniquitie in my heart, the Lord will not heare me.* This makes one shamelesse and obstinate, as *Math. 23. 37. How often would I (saith Christ) haue gathered thy children together, euen as a Henne gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, and yee would not;* Thus Impenitencie shuts out all-thriuing in Grace.

Thirdly, *Because Impenitencie brings the guilt of all our sinnes vpon vs:* It is true if we repent, as it is, *Micah Cause. 7. 19. God will pardon all our sinnes and cast them in the bottome of the Sea.* But if wee liue in sinne without repentance, this impenitencie will turne all our sins vpon vs at the day of Iudgement. Thus doth it heape vp wrath vpon wrath against the day of Gods fierce indignation: euen as a man heapes vp gold and siluer that is euery day adding and increasing it till it be a great heape; so an impenitent hard heart, doth euery day heape vp and gather together by heaping of sinnes, wrath vpon wrath against the day of wrath: So that I may truly say with a learned man, *Better be the greatest sinner in the world, and to repent it, then to bee the least sinner and die in Impenitencie.* Which is the worst and most fearefull estate that may bee. The vses of all which may be these:

First, seeing the state of impenitencie is so dangerous, *Vse 1. Let vs pray to God often to deliuer vs from it,* that though through the corruption of our nature wee cannot choosẽ but sinne, yet we may see our sinnes, bewaile and mourne for them, and that wee may neuer come to that insensibilitie and deadnesse of spirit, neuer to lament or bee sorry for them, but to haue strength to remoue from this estate, and rise vp as soone as may bee: praying with the Prophet, *Psal. 119. I haue gone astray like a lost sheepe, seeke thy seruant for I doe not forget thy Commandements.* Here you see was a going astray like a lost sheepe; but this was such a straying as might be found out againe.

Second-



Vſe :

Stone Sepulchre.

Secondly, Seeing this estate is ſo dangerous, *Let vs labour to get out of it as ſoone as may be*; for howſoeuer our finnes are multiplied by our corruption, yet this ſinne of impenitencie is more dangerous than all the reſt, and brings at laſt a fearefull deſpaire of mercie vpon vs. Therefore as the women going to the Sepulchre of our Sauior, were careful who ſhould roule away the great ſtone which lay at the mouth thereof. So let euerie one of vs now ſay and bethinke our ſelues, who ſhall roule away this great ſtone, this hardneſſe of heart, this impenitencie, this deadneſſe and dulneſſe of Spirit. Therefore as *Ierem. 31. 18.* The Church prayes and confeſſes her failings; ſo let vs pray, *Conuert vs, o Lord, and we ſhall be conuerted*: and let vs uſe the meanes diligently, whereby our hearts may be touched and ſubdued to a true remorse and ſenſe of ſinne, and the Maieſtie offended.

*The ſecond thing contrary to true repentance, is Vnſound repentance.*

2

Vnſound Repentance, what?

This kind of repentance is, *When a man ſhewes a kinde of repentance, but he does it not in ſuch ſort and manner as God requires it, as Iſa. 58. 5.* Is it ſuch a faſt as I haue choſen, a day for a man to afflict his ſoule? Is it to bow down his head like a bulruſh, and to ſpread ſackecloth & aſhes under him? Wilt thou call this a faſt and an acceptable day to the Lord? It is Gods expoſtulation with his people: as if he ſhould ſay, *Is this ſuch a Faſt as I haue choſen? I haue choſen faſting, indeed, and commanded it, but you failed in the true meaning and manner of it: I care for no outward ſhewes, ſo much as the inward humiliation.* So the Lord hath choſen repentance, and commanded it, but we muſt looke for ſuch a kind & manner as the Lord hath choſen. Now there be two ſorts of vnſound repentance.

1. Hypocriticall Repentance.
2. Deſperate Repentance.

OF

Of the first, there be foure markes or notes to discover hypocriticall Repentance, *1. When it is in shew, and not in the heart*, when a man seemes to repent of his sinne, and vndertaketh an outward shew of sorrow & sadnesse, without any inward compunction of spirit: of which the Lord complaines, *Ierem. 3. 10. And yet for all this, her treacherous sister Iudah hath not turned vnto me with her whole heart, but feinedly, saith the Lord.* So *Hos. 7. 14.* the Lord complaines, *And they haue not cried vnto mee with their whole heart, when they howled vpon their beds, they assemble themselves for corne and wine, and they rebel against me.* And *Psalm. 78. 35. 36. And they remembered that God was their rocke, and the high God their Redeemer; neuerthelesse they did flatter him with their mouth, and they lied vnto him with their tongues. They had good speeches with their lips, but their hearts were not vpright.*

1  
Trials of hypocriticall repentance.

Ier. 3. 10.

Hos. 7. 14.

Psalm. 78. 35. 36.

Secondly, *When a man is more grieved for the punishment of his sinne than for the sinne it selfe.* As Cain saide vnto the Lord, *Genes. 4. 13. My punishment is greater then I can beare;* but he neuer cried out for his sin: So *Num. 21. 7.* The people came to *Moses*, importuning him to pray to God to remooue the fierie Serpents from them; but were not so earnest for to remooue their sinnes: The Prophets are full of these complaints of the people to remooue the Iudgments of God from them: when yet their endeauors to remooue their sinnes were faint or none at all; and is it not so with vs? Here is sometimes a kinde of shew of sorrow, sadnesse, and complaining on our crosses and grieuances, and so an outward profession of Repentance, which without the heart and true reformation of life is but an hypocriticall repentance.

Thirdly, *When a man repents him of a sin, and by and by falls as wilfully into the same sinne as before:* as the Lord complaines by the Prophet, *Psalm. 106. 13. They soone forgot his workes, and waited not for his counsell.* So *Pharoah* repented often, *Exod. 8. 9.* yet when the punishment

N n

was

was off him, he was as ill as before. Therefore when a man wiltake on to enuie against any sin, be it swearing, drunkenesse, &c. and by and by runne into the same sinnes, it is an hypocriticall repentance. I grant some sinnes hang vpon a man through the corruption of Nature, and will hardly bee shaken off: So that if we doe not strue against them and labour to weaken their forces, they must and will by their vse and custome bring on hardnesse of heart, and so no repentance at all, wherefore let vs set a watch vpon our hearts for feare of returning to our old sinnes, and leaue sinne before it leaue vs.

4

Fourthly, *When a man will repent of one sinne, and yet liue wittingly in a number of other sinnes.* This was the sinne of *Indas*, hee seemed to repent the betraying of his master, but neuer thought (for ought we know) of a number of other sinnes he liued in. So *Ahab* made a shew of repentance for the killing of *Naboth*, but neuer repented for killing the Lords Prophets nor of his Idolatrice. It is true indeed, That he that repents truly of any one sinne, repents of all; because, *Eadem formalis ratio*, makes him hate all: which hatred will at last, make him get out of all these snares: yet there is in many a corruption or taint of sinne cleauing to some, and forsaking others: which is another sort of hypocriticall repentance.

## The second Contrarie to true Repentance,

<sup>2</sup>  
Desperat  
repentance,

I told you was *desperate repentance*, when a man seeth his sinns, and the horror of them, and yet neuer hath any serious thoughts of turning from them, but perish thus; and so it may be at last in some fury or rage they cry out vpon them, as we know *Indas* did, he confessed his sinne and saw it, but did despaire of Gods mercy in pardoning it, this was vnfound repentance: For repentance is such



a secret foe to sinne, that it makes one with all his heart  
 indeuour to turne from it: therefore whosoever doth not  
 turne from his sinne, is not likely to come vnto Repen-  
 tance. So *Julian* the Apostate came at last to desperati-  
 on, when he threw vphis blood in the ayre, and cryed *Julian;*  
 out; *O Galilean thou hast at last overcome!* Now this *Tandem Galilei-  
 ces viciisti.*  
 Repentance shall bee in all the damned at the day of  
 Iudgement, to see and bewaile their sinnes; yet perishing  
 vnder the burden of them, desiring hills and mountaines  
 to fall vpon them, and couer them. It is true then that  
 all men shall repent at one time or other, sooner or later;  
 either in this life or at the day of Iudgement. Therefore  
 how much better were it for men to repent here in this  
 life, where they may haue peace and ioy in God and  
 their owne consciences, then too late, with all torments  
 vnsupportable hereafter, when they shall haue no bene-  
 fite by such an afflictue penall repentance. Therefore let vs  
 repent betimes since God is so gracious to accept of vs,  
 though wee haue beene great and grievous sinners; for  
 this, see what *Samuel* said vnto the people, in their con-  
 trition, *1.Sam.12.20.* *Feare not, yee haue done all this* *1.Sam.12.20.*  
*wickednesse, yet turne not aside from following after the*  
*Lord, but serue the Lord with all your heart, and turne*  
*ye not aside; for then should yee goe after vaine things*  
*which cannot profite nor deliuer, for they are vaine: for*  
*the Lord will not forsake his people for his owne great*  
*Names sake, &c.* So *Peter* in his Sermon, *Act.3.19.* ex-  
 horts them; *Repent yee therefore and bee conuerted, that*  
*your sinnes may be blotted out.* So *Ierem.3.1.* *Thou hast*  
*played the harlot with many louers, yet turne againe to me,*  
*saieth the Lord.*

And farther, besides these two sorts of vnfound Re-  
 pentance, there be two sorts may be suspected.

1. *Pœnitentia sera*: Late Repentance.

2. *Pœnitentia Coacta*: Forced Repentance.

Now though both these sorts of Repentance may bee  
 true,

Late Repen-  
tance.

true, yet may they also be suspected, first as for *Late Repentance*, when a man neglects and puts it off all his life, vntill the day of death, it is greatly to be suspected, especially when a man hath had good meanes of conuersion, growing in grace, and liuing vnder a good ministrie.

*Esaies* Teares.

Wee reade in the storie of *Esaie*, *Heb. 12. 17.* because hee neglected the time of obtaining the blessing, that afterward when he would haue inherited the blessing hee was reiected. for he found no place of Repentance, though hee sought it carefully with teares. So it may be suspected that if a man neglect repentance all his life-time, it will be hardly found at last; For *Augustine* in this case saith well: *If a man repent when he can sinne no more, it may be thought he forsakes not his sinne, but his sinne forsakes him* Hereunto is objected by the delayers of Repentance, that the good *Theefe* on the *Crosse*, his repentance was late and true. Therefore a man may truly repent at last. I answer, I say not that late Repentance may not be true; but that it may faile, and be suspected: as for the good *Theefe*.

Obiect.

Ans.

1  
2

consider two things: First, that this is a rare example, the like not in all the Bible againe. Secondly, his repentance was accompanied with so many graces of the spirit in that disgracefull extremitie, that few (who haue so liued) attaine vnto at the day of death; especially such who haue hard hearts, and all their life-time put it off vntill that time. But wee must not presume vpon the like, because the secret of Gods acceptance is *Celsarcanum*, A Diuine secret, and not within our reach.

2  
Constrained  
Repentance.

Secondly, *Constrained Repentance*, when one does repent, but in the time of trouble, or in some great sicknesse, afflictions, or when the iudgements of God are vpon him: as was seen in *Pharoah*, *Exod. 8. 15.* of whom it is written; *But when Pharoah saw that there was respite, hee hardened his heart, and hearkened not vnto them as the Lord had said.* So also *Numb. 16. 34.* when the ground opened and swallowed vp *Korah, Dathan & Abiram*, with their company

companie, the children of Israel hearing the crie fled away, and were affraid lest they also should bee swallowed vp, but yet notwithstanding after this iudgement they did murmur against God and against *Moses*. So there is a number of men and women amongst vs that neuer thinke of Repentance, but when the hand of God lyes heaue vpon them, as it is *Psal. 78 34. 35. When hee ſew them then they ſought him, &c.* Therefore let vs pray vnto God to take away the hardnelle of our hearts from vs, and giue vs a melting relenting heart, with the ſpirit of grace to ouer-rule our corruptions. Firſt let vs pray to God, that we may repent of our finnes with inward ſorrow: Secondly, that wee may be grieued for our finnes rather then the puniſhment of them: Thirdly, that wee may repent with reſolution to ſinne no more. And laſtly, that wee may repent of all our finnes, thoſe moſt predominant as well as the reſt, which wee ſeeme to hate and abhorre.

---







LECT. XIII.

OF THE INCREASE  
of Repentance.

2. PET. 3. 18.

*But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord  
and Saviour Iesus Christ; to him bee glorie both now and  
for ever. Amen.*



If a man should bring all you that are  
herepresent to a Mine of gold, and Mine of gold.  
tell you that euery man might gather  
for himselfe; what would you doe?  
stand still and gaze about you; nay  
rather would you not set your selues  
about together: Euen so doth the Lord deale with you  
in the vse of these good meanes, he brings you to a Mine  
of Gold, better then any the world can yeeld; hee bids  
you euery man to gather for himselfe, and therefore,  
Lord that any man should stand still, mispend the time,  
and not apply himselfe to gather these pretious things  
that bee before him! Weespake the last day as you  
N n n 4 heard

heard of the *Contraries to Repentance*, which are two: *Impenitencie* and *unsound Repentance*: Now it remains in the next and last place that wee speake of *The Increase of Repentance*; How a Christian as hee increases in other graces of God, so also must grow in the grace of Repentance: wherein two things are to bee declared:

1. *That no mans Repentance is perfect in this life.*
2. *Because our Repentance is imperfect in this life, therefore as wee increase in other graces of God, so must wee grow in this also.*

Now if no mans Repentance bee perfect in this life, then no man liuing can perfectly repent him of his sinnes, and therefore when hee hath repented, hee had need to turne againe and to pray God to forgiue the imperfection of it. Yet lest any man should be deceiued in this, wee must know that two wayes Repentance is said to bee imperfect;

1. *In regard of the Nature of Repentance.*
2. *In regard of the Degrees, and the Measure of it.*

Euery mans Repentance therefore (as wee say) is imperfect, but how? *Not in regard of the Nature of Repentance to him that hath truly repented, but onely in regard of the degrees and the measure of it, it doth not want any part of true Repentance, but onely wants the perfection of that part*; and so wee say in respect of measure and degrees euery mans repentance is imperfect in this life. Euen as wee see a little child hath all the parts of a man none wanting, yet hath it not the perfection of those parts; it is not yet come to the strength, growth, iust measure, sizes and height of a man: So it is in the Repentance of a true Christian, it hath all the parts of true Repentance, onely (as I say) it wants the perfections of those parts, being  
not

A childes  
parts,



not imperfect in Nature, but in Measure and Degrees. Now that euery mans Repentance is imperfect in this life, it is proued;

1. Generally.
2. Particularly.

Generally, because the state of this life is a state of Imperfection; therefore no man can possibly attaine to Perfection in this world, this God hath referued vntill wee come home to heauen. Schoolemen say well and agreeable to the Scriptures: from *Math. 5. 25.* That as long as wee are in this life, wee are not in our countrey, but in the way: As there it is said, *Agree quickly with thine aduersarie whilst thou art in the way with him, &c.* Our way now is the way to heauen, therefore because wee are but yet on our iourney in the way, our state is a state of imperfection, as the Apostle shewes, *1. Cor. 13. 9. 10.* For we know in part and prophecie in part, but when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. So S. Paul saith of himselfe, *Phil. 3. 12.* *Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect; but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which I also am apprehended of Christ Iesus.* So *Iob 9. 20.* *If I iustifie my selfe (saith he) mine owne mouth shall condemn mee: if I say I am perfect it shall also proue me peruerse.* And *Iames 3. 2.* hee affirmes in many things wee offend all; *If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole bodie.* Thus it appeares (as a Father speakes) that all iust men haue but an vnperfect perfection in this life.

Particularly it is proued thus: First, No man can know all his finnes, which if he cannot know, then hee cannot repent of them so fully as he should: to which purpose the Prophet speakes and prayes, *Psal. 19. 12.* *Who can understand his errors? Cleanse thou me from secret faults: wherefore it is cleere, one cannot repent him expressly of those*

those sins he knows not ; but what he knowes and is conuinc'd of, those he ought to repent particularly. Secondly, *No man, though he knew euery sinne he committed, is able to repent of the same perfectly, in regard of his corruption, so long as he carries fraile flesh about him, and why ? Because there is no motion of the spirit, but it is much weakened by the tentations of the flesh : as Gal. 5. 17. For the flesh lusteth against the spirit, and the spirit against the flesh, and they are contrarie the one to the other, so that yee cannot doe the things that yee would.* So the Apostle confesses of himselfe ; *Rom 7. 18. For I know that in mee, that is in my flesh dwelleth no good thing, for to will is present with me, but how to performe that which is good I finde not ;* and why ? because the law of our members still rebels against the law of our minde, and therefore as when men poure water into a glasse of wine, the water abates the strength, taste and colour of the Wine : euen so it is betweene the flesh and the spirit, the motions of the spirit be alwayes weakened with the motions of the flesh in some measure or other : so as wee cannot doe as wee would, but liue incumbred with a number of corruptions, clogged and weighed downe with naturall frailties ; which make that we cannot perfectly repent vs of all our sinnes in this life. Now against this doctrine there may be three obiections.

Water and  
Wine.

Obiect. 1.

Obiect. 1. *All the workes of God are perfect ;  
Repentance is a worke of God :  
Therefore Repentance may bee perfect in a  
man in this life.*

Ans.

To this I answer, the workes of God are of two sorts, First, *Some God workes immediatly.* Secondly, *Some hee workes not immediatly by himselfe, but mediately by man.* Now those works of God which he worketh by himselfe they be perfect works, and haue no defects ; *but those works which God workes by meanes of man, those be not alwayes perfect,*

perfect, but many times carry some points and marks of frailtie in them: As wee know, a scriuener who writes a perfect hand of himselfe, yet let him put the Penne into a Childes hand; though he guide it, his writing will not be lead. so faire as that of his teacher, because it some what participates of the childes vnskillfulnesse: So it is in this matter of Repentance, because this is not a worke which God workes meere by himselfe, but by the meanes of a man himselfe assisting, vsing his will and other affections therein; Therefore because there is defect in mans affection and Reluctation in his will, resisting well-doing, therefore his repentance must needs be imperfect.

*The second Obiection is taken out of Scripture; Object. 2. where the Scripture many times seemes to speake of the perfection of a Christian, sometimes commanding it; as Math. 5. 48. Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heauen is perfect: Sometime commending man for it: as 1. Cor. 2. 6. Howbeit wee speake wisdom amongst them that are perfect, &c. So Phil. 3. 13. Let vs therefore as many as bee perfect be thus minded, &c.*

*And therefore if there bee perfection in other graces, There is also perfection in Repentance.*

To this I say, Perfection that the Scripture speakes of, Answ. is either *Comparative*, in comparison of others, as in the same third chapter of the *Philippians*, S. Paul hath plainly affirmed that he was not perfect before God: howeuer now he is perfect *Comparatiuè* more perfect then other men, who had not such excellent gifts and graces: As *Noah* was a iust and perfect man, in respect of those wretched people who liued in those times, *Gen. 6. 50.* So *Iob* and *Zacharie* in this respect were called iust men, Secondly, *Ex parte*, we may be said to be iust and perfect in some respect and degrees: as *Math. 5. Be ye therefore perfect as your heauenly Father is perfect.* Here we cannot be



be so perfect in the intention of our loue: but in the Ex-  
tention thereof, to loue all sorts, to loue our enemies; to  
loue friends and foes, and doe good to all of all sorts,  
with an eye vnto God; that is, that perfection here meant  
and spoken of.

Obiect. 3.

*The third Obiection is this: All the graces of God that  
bee imperfect in this life, shall bee perfected in hea-  
uen, 1. Cor. 13. 10.*

*But our Repentance shall not bee perfected in Heauen,  
for in heauen there is no sorrow for sinne, as Reu. 16.  
17. for God shall wipe away all teares from their  
eyes.*

*Therefore because repentance shall not bee perfected in  
heauen, it must needs be perfected in this life.*

To this I answer, there bee two parts of Repentance,  
considerable:

1. *There is a Pœnall part (if I may so call it.)*
2. *A Part that consists in sanctified motions.*

Answe.

That part of Repentance which is Pœnall sorrow, af-  
flicting teares, and such like, shall cease in heauen, and is  
meerely shut vp within the bounds of this life. But, that  
part thereof which consists in sanctified motions shall bee  
perfected in heauen, because we shall perfectly dislike and  
hate all the sinnes that ouer wee haue committed: Thus  
the doctrine being cleere, the vies are three.

Viz:

First, seeing that no mans repentance is perfect in this  
life, therefore, as we pray vnto God to pardon our other im-  
perfections; so we must pray to pardon the failings of our  
repentance; not to weigh them in the ballance of Iustice,  
lest they bee found light, but in the ballance of mercie,  
where small things are taken in good worth; and there-  
fore as the man in the Gospell came to Christ with teares,  
saying, Lord I beleeue, helpe my v-beliefe; So must we all  
cry vnto God with mournfull and heavy hearts: Lord I  
repent, but for Christs sake pardon the many failings of  
my Repentance.

Mark. 9. 24.

Secondly,

Secondly, seeing our Repentance is imperfect in this Vſe 1.  
 life; therefore it is cleere, that no man by his Repentance  
 can merite any thing at the hands of God; The very  
 Schoole-men say the ſelfe ſame thing: that any defect, *caietan. q. 11.*  
 want or impenitencie makes our Repentance to be imper- *ad Conrad.*  
 feſt; yea, all wee can doe is full of defects and wants,  
 therefore no merit before God; and if it merite nothing  
 at the hands of God, then when men haue repented them  
 of their ſins, they haue need ſtill of the Blood of Chriſt  
 to make Reconciliation and attonement for them. It is  
 the opinion of ſome in the world, that if one haue repen-  
 ted of a ſinne, by and by he ſhall be ſaued by the vertue of  
 his repentance. But the truth is, that though repentance  
 bee a neceſſarie duty and diſpoſition, without which no  
 man liuing can be ſaued in this ſtate of ſinne; and though  
 it be neuer ſo ſincerely performed and often reiterated,  
 yet becauſe it is full of ſo many imperfections, it had need  
 of the Blood of Chriſt to perfect it, and reconcile vs vnto  
 God, holy, cleane, and vnblamable in his ſight: as *Peter*  
*tells vs; Tce alſo as liuely ſtones are built vp a ſpirituall* *1. Pet. 2. 5.*  
*houſe, an holy Priethood, to offer vp ſpirituall ſacrifice,*  
*acceptable to God by Ieſus Chriſt.* So that doe what wee  
 can, all ſacrifices and ſeruices be onely acceptable to God  
 through him.

Thirdly, ſeeing all our Repentance is vnperfect, ſo Vſe 3.  
 long as we liue in this world: Therefore no man is to diſ-  
 may himſelfe, and bee too much caſt downe, if hee doe not  
 finde repentance to be perfect in him; If hee doe not finde  
 a perfect hatred of ſinne, loue of God, indeuour to pleaſe  
 God in that he requireth; In this caſe one muſt not too  
 much afflict himſelfe, becauſe he cannot attaine to things  
 impoſſible in this life; conſidering, that it is not perfecti-  
 on but truth of Repentance that God looks for in this life:  
 in which caſe *S. Paul* comforts the abieſt, ſaying, *2. Cor. 8.*  
*12. For if there be firſt a willing minde, it is accepted accor-*  
*ding to that a man hath, and not according to that a man*  
*hath not.*

2

Maine point.  
The increase  
of Repentance

Childe writing.

Note well.  
Comfort.

A Tree growing.

The second maine thing is, *That because every mans Repentance is imperfect in this life; Therefore there must bee an increase thereof in the life of a Christian: As wee increase in other graces, so increaseth in the grace of Repentance.* Therefore Christians haue no cause to bee dismayed at this, when God brings them off againe and againe to renew their Repentance. A number of poore Christians cannot tell what to make of this, when they haue repented their sinnes, and beene comforted with the Promises of the Gospell, and gone on a long-while in a cheerefull estate vpon a sudden; all their old sinnes are cast vpon them againe to terrifie them worse then before, and so by a heauy recourse of sorrow they become much perplexed and amazed. *But let such thinke that this is nothing else but Repentance:* As in a little childe when hee begins first to write, hee frames his businesse somewhat vnhandsomely, when he hath perfected a letter, his Master sets him to make the same letter againe, vntill he doe it better and better, vntill at last it bee excellently well. Euen so because there are not those firme and true intentions of our affections in our first Repentance, the Lord is faine to goe ouer againe with vs, and to set vs anew to repent of our old sinnes: thus is the growth and frame of a Christians progresse in grace, to goe it ouer againe still, vntill it come to perfection. I haue heretofore obserued, that a tree alwayes growes vntill it come to his full pitch of state; yet it growes not alwayes in one sort, but sometimes it growes in the boughes, sometimes in the branches, sometimes in the root. Euen so it is with a Christian, hee hath his times of growth, hee doth not alwayes grow in one and the same sort; but sometimes in one Grace, and sometimes in another; sometimes in knowledge, faith, loue, obedience, &c. and yet bee in a good estate, though he be put still to renew his Repentance from time to time, which (if I may so speake) becomes so much the purer, like gold when it is often refined; by ardent and often praying, againe and againe: therefore



fore distressed Christians in this case, haue no iust cause to be so perplexed and cast downe as many times they are.

Wherefore seeing it is necessarie still to grow in Repentance, and that it can neuer bee too pure nor perfect, nor too often gone ouer in this life; wee must therefore labour, and euery day indeuour to be more and more penitent for our sinnes, bitterly to lament them, and increase in the detestation and hatred of them: so making vse both of the mercies and iudgements of God this way, as to further vs in the growth of our repentance. So we see *Peter* did, by occasion of Christs mercie vnto him in the draught of fishes, *Luk. 5. 8.* *Hee fell downe on his knees and said, depart from me, I am but a sinfull man o Lord!* So did the Lords people by occasion of the iudgement in the Thunder and lightning, *1. Sam. 12. 19.* say vnto *Samuel*, *Pray for thy seruants vnto the Lord that wee dye not, for wee haue added vnto all our sinnes this euill to take a King;* thus must we grow in this as in other graces. It is therefore a great corruption for any to desire to grow in other graces if this be neglected, and to doe some things conscionably, and to neglect those other maine duties in Religion. For if one had a childe, and the childe should grow in one part and not in another; one hand and one leg should chriue, but not the other, but keepe still at a stand, how bitterly would he complaine of this; and yet so is it in the state of many a Christian, one part of the graces of God growes well, but the other doth not grow at all; many increase in knowledge, shew a great deale of zeale, of deuotion, haue sufficiencie of faith and are cheerefull in their obedience, but they grow not a whit in Repentance, they are not a whit more humbled for their sinnes, more penitent and cast downe before the LORD, and therefore can say, what cause haue wee to bee deiected and afflicted so for it? but let vs of better knowledge, learne to bee better affected, our care being to bee more and more humbled for our sinnes.

Exhortation  
to Repentance

Childe.

Wee

Man buried.

Wee see in Nature when a man is buried and layed in the ground, the more earth and mould you cast vpon him, the more hee consumes from day to day, being so much the more vnfit to rise vp againe, (suppose alieue) from vnder the weight and burden of the earth which presses him downe. Euen so it is with the sinne of a Christian : when a man hath buried sinne in himselfe, the more hee increaseth his repentance and holy humiliation, the more earth and mold hee casts vpon it in this kinde, the lesse able will it be to rise and reuiue againe : nay, our sad and serious Repentance will make it that it shall not rise againe. Now there be three wayes wherein a Christian must increase in the *Grace of Repentance*, as well as in other Graces.

1. *In the Number of his Graces.*
2. *In the Measure of his Graces.*
3. *In the good vse of them.*

¶

In the number  
of Graces.

First for the *Number of Graces* ; see what Peter saith, *2. Pet. 1. 5. Adde to your faith vertue, and to vertue knowledge, and to knowledge temperance, and to temperance Patience, and to patience godlinesse, &c.* And so *2. Cor. 8. 7. Therefore as yee abound in euery thing, in faith and vnderstanding and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue to vs, see that yee abound in this Grace also.* Therefore it should grieue a Christian to heare a man speake of any grace which hee hath not in himselfe. Fine and daintie women we know who haue a delight in curious gardens, if they heare of any goodly Plant, or delicate Flower in another bodys garden, they neuer rest till they haue got a slip of it into their owne : yea, here they beg a root and there a slip, and so set it into the ground. Euen so must a Christian doe, because his soule is the garden of Gods graces, therefore whatsoeuer grace of God hee heares of to be amongst others, by and by hee must labour to get it home vnto himselfe, therefore it is great corruption for

Daintie  
women.

for men to get some one grace of God, and neglect the rest, to get a little knowledge, zeale, deuotion,&c. and yet neuer labour for a good conscience, sobrietic, patience, faith, loue,&c. letting these things passe vnrespected and vnregarded: A Christian must bee like a little childe, who every yeare growes somewhat, and addes to his stature and growth in all proportion of parts not growing in one member, and declining in another, so must Christians doe; indeuour to thriue in all graces.

Secondly, *Wee must grow up in the measure of Graces,* 2 as the Apostle exhorts, *1.Theff.4.1.10. Furthermore then wee beseech you Brethren and exhort you by the Lord Iesus,* that as yee haue receined of vs how yee ought to walke and to please God, so yee would abound more and more. So *2.Pet.3.18. But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saniour Iesus Christ.* Therefore if wee beleeue, let vs beleeue more; if loue, indeuour we for more; if patient, let Patience haue its perfect worke (as *S.James* speaks) that we may be entire and want nothing. Wee reade *Math.13.31.* The graces of God are compared to a little seed, not to a little stone, because though a seed be little, yet it is of such a thriving nature that it will not alwayes be little, but grow and increase to his limited stature and greatnesse: So the thing is cleere, a Christian must increase as well in the Measure as number of Graces, bee like the thriving seed, not like to a little stone that growes no bigger; which shewes their fearefull estate, who grow not in the measure of their graces.

Thirdly, *In the vse of them,* for one may haue good Graces, and yet neuer put them to any imployment, like vnto that vnthriftie seruant, *Luk 19.20.* who tyed vp his Talent in a napkin: and like that lame man by the Poole of *Bethesda, Iohn 5.7.* who though he had legs, yet had no vse of them vntill Christ restored them: so we may haue some graces of God, and no right vse of them, if we be not carefull to rub them vp and set them a work, wherfore the



Church prayes, *Cant. 4. 16.* Awake o North, and come thou South, blow upon my garden, that the spices thereof may flow out, let my beloued come into his garden and eat his pleasant fruits. So *Psal. 119. 34.* David prayes, Give mee vnderstanding and I shall keepe thy law, yea I shall obserue it with my whole heart. Therefore as Mary not onely brought a Boxe of oyntment to Christ, so that all the house was filled with the smell thereof: euen so must we not onely bring our Boxes of ointments, of graces vnto Christ, but effuse and poure them out, that God may smell the sauour, and others may receiue good by them. If a man had a thousand Tunne of wine in a Cellar, which he had no vse of, but were kept closely there, what were any man the better for it? but if hee would make a large Cisterne, and turne out a Conduite cocke into the streete, that euery one who passeth by might drinke thereof, then would they commend his bountie, and be thankfull vnto him: So when wee haue good graces of God which wee keepe to our selues, not being profitable vnto any, it is matter of rebuke and reproch, vntill wee let the cocke runne to water and refresh others.

Ointment.

Wine.

One thing more is to be considered, for conclusion of all; which is,

### *How a Christian may grow in Grace?*

For it may be many a one would bee willing to grow in Grace, if they knew how; being ready to thinke or say with the Iewes vnto Christ, *Iohn 6. 28.* What shall we doe that wee might worke the worke of God? So may yee say to mee, you talke of excellent duties, but how shall wee performe them? To which I answer there bee foure things to be performed of euery one that would grow in Grace.

*Iohn 6. 28.*

First, *In the vse of them to bee carefull that they may  
shrine*

shrine and grow, as the Apostle prescribes, *1. Pet. 2. 2.* *As* Means to grow in grace.  
*new borne babes desire the sincere milke of the word, that* Seeds not watered nor weeded.  
*you may grow thereby.* If one sow good seeds in his garden, and neuer water or weed them, or set vp stickes by them for their support and leading vpwards, all his labour will be in vaine: So if one doe not nourish the good seeds of Gods graces sowed in his heart and soule, if hee doe not water, weed them, and set vp supporters vnto them; a thousand to one that they will neuer thriue nor grow to any purpose. Therefore we must doe as the *Iuic* Iuic.  
*doth*, because the stalke thereof is weake, the string not being able to support it to grow vp straight, therefore it catcheth hold with his keyes and clawes, vpon euery post and tree that it may climbe vp by. So because commonly wee all creepe vpon the ground, and be not able to lift vp our soules vnto Heauen by our owne strength; let vs lay hold of the hely things of God, the promises of the Gospel, and the merits of Christ; neuer leauing nor giuing them ouer, vntill they haue lifted vs vp vnto heauen.

Secondly, *Wee must vse all the ordinarie meanes, besides extraordinarie graces and prayer:* for if we vse some and neglect the rest, no maruell though God denie his blessing to the rest: as if one vse Prayer, and yet will not come to the preaching of the Word; or if hee heare the Word, and neglect the Sacraments: this man may misse of his aime and comfort: as the Disciples, *Math. 17. 20.* vsed some meanes, but because they failed in other some in the matter of faith, therefore they wanted a blessing on their worke for that time. It must therefore bee our care and wisdom to vse all the meanes which God hath appointed, as we know by experience, goe to a Doctor for 2 Means to grow in grace.  
a paine in the head, he prescribes you foure things for the remedie; of which if you take but two, and neglect the other two, no good can be done; for when you returne to the Doctor and tell him, that you haue onely taken two of the foure things prescribed: no maruell may hee say; you are not cured, who haue neglected the halfe of the  
Doct.  

O o o 2

meanes

meanes appointed for your cure: So it is, when men will not be yed vnto all the meanes which God hath appointed.

3

Meanes to  
grow in grace.

Thirdly, *Wee must vse all the meanes constantly which may stand vs chiefly in stead: as it is Heb. 6. 7. For the earth which drinketh in the rain that commeth often vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God.* If a man haue found out an excellent plaister which will cure his sore: if he pluck it away and doe not let it lye when he is on the mending hand, but expose it to the aire: Hee may relapse into a worser condition, or kill himselfe: So when a man hath got some profite by the vse of good meanes, if he doe not then keepe to them, but grow loose and idle, hee may fall into as bad estate as before he knew of any cure: or much worse. Trees that grow by the sent of water; if the water be drawne from them, they cannot thriue thriuingly, as before: so take away the constant vse of good meanes from a Christian, and you take away his life, hee cannot thriue or grow.

A Plaister.

Trees.

4

Meanes to  
grow in grace.

Fourthly, *Wee must so vse all the meanes as we must be carefull, and indeanour to bee bettered by them, and not onely grow, but grow to a taste of perfection by the vse of them, as neere as may bee.* According to the Apostles Exhortation, 2. Cor. 6. 1. *Wee then as workers together with him, beseech you also, that you receiue not the grace of God in vaine.* Therefore wee must doe as wise merchants, who when they haue made a venture at Sea, cast vp their bookes, and looke into their accounts to see what they haue gained. So Christians who beare a part in the house of God, and traffique against sinne with his graces, must cast vp their accounts, looke into their bookes, see what they haue gotten or gained, what graces bee the stronger, and what graces the more weakened in their hearts.

Merchants.

Lastly, it may be objected: is there now remaining any thing else to be said in this Treatise of Repentance? I answer for my selfe; nothing else I haue to deliuer vnto you



you concerning this Treatise : onely to intreate you that as one hauing passed alongft a goodly pleasant long valley, where he hath seene on both sides great store of delightful Woods, Townes, Castles, Riuers, &c. when he is readie to leaue that plaine, turnes about to view the place once more, and make impression thereof in his memorie: so that you (hauing passed along and heard so many excellent points in this doctrine of Repentance,) would turne about againe, once more to view them all ere wee leaue them.

Valley reuiue.

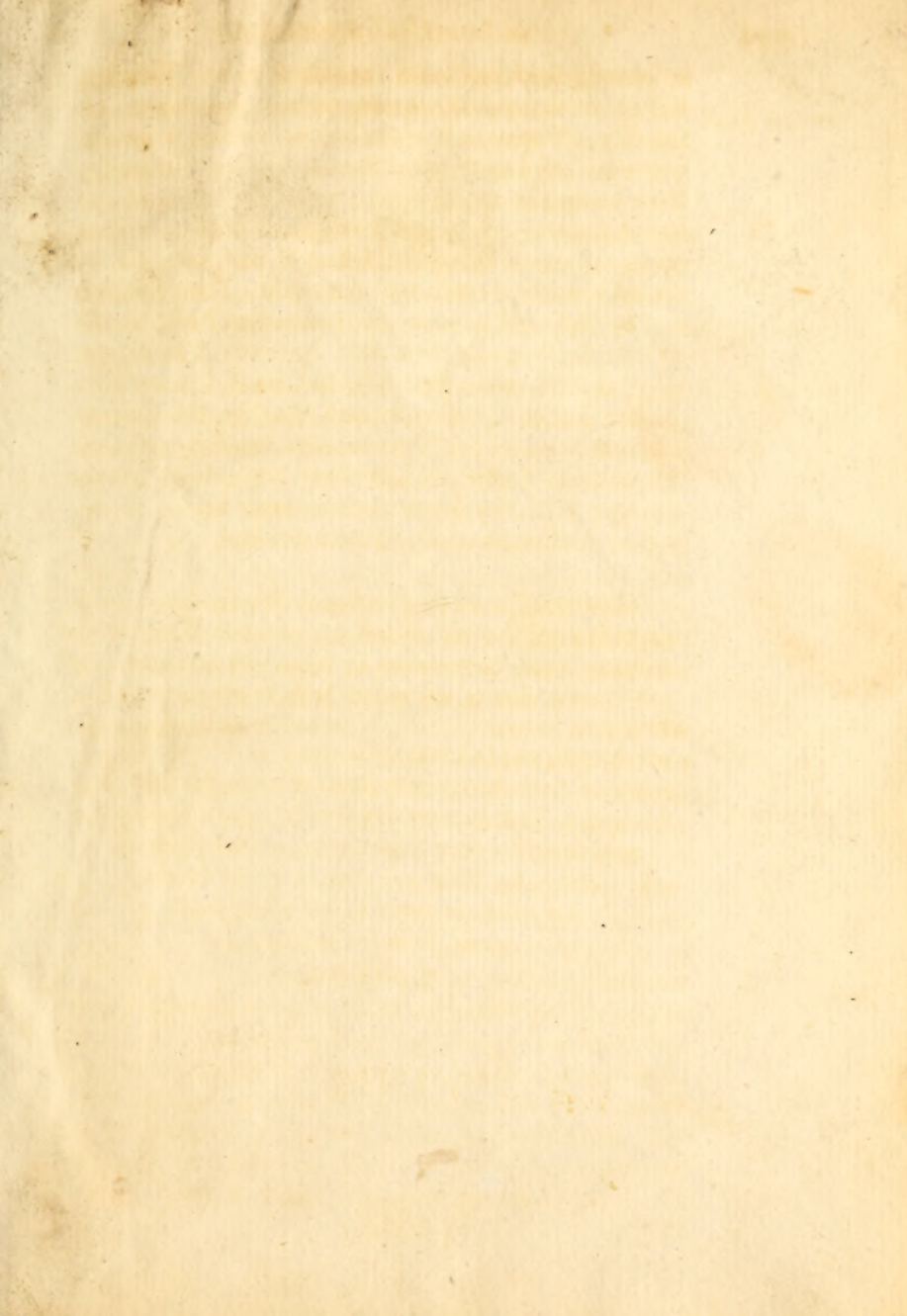
First, you haue heard of the *Necessitie of Repentance*, Summe of all that wee cannot be saued without it. Secondly, *The order of it with other Graces*; Repentance being first seene in the life of a Christian. Thirdly, *The Nature of Repentance*, in which was foure things; First, that it is a changing and turning: Secondly, a turning in all and euery faculty of the soule: Thirdly, a turning from all sinne: Fourthly, a turning from all sinne vnto God. Fourthly, *The Causes of Repentance*, were three: 1. God the Efficient Cause: 2. The preaching of the Law and Gospell, the Instrumentall Cause. 3. The helping Causes: the Mercies of God, his Iudgements and our owne considerations. Fifthly, *The Time of Repentance* was twofold: Generall and Particular, in the Generall two Rules. 1. That we must repent in this life. 2. That we must repent as soon as we can. 2. In the speciall time of Repentance, were five Particulars: 1. When we haue fallen into any new sinne. 2. When the iudgements of God are threatned against vs: 3. When there is an offer of spirituall meanes of grace. 4. When we are to vndertake any great worke. 2. To renew our repentance euery morning and euening. Sixtly, *The parts of Repentance* in which foure things was obserued: 1. Examination. 2. Humiliation. 3. Deprecation. 4. Resolution for the time to come. Seuenthly, *The Impediments of Repentance*, were two. First, in Iudgement. Secondly, in Affection: In Iudgement foure wayes: First, either to thinke our selues not sicke of sinne:

or secondly sicke, not so sicke as indeed we be. Thirdly, if sicke, yet that we may recouer without repentance; or fourthly, if Repentance must needs be, yet that it needes not to be so full and strict as Preachers tell vs. Secondly, Impediments in our affections, were first the loue of the world. Secondly the loue of pleasures. Thirdly, the loue of our owne ease. Fourthly, the loue of our sinnes. Fifthly, the desire to keepe credit with the world. Then we came to *The Cases of Repentance*, five in number: First, the case of Relapse: Secondly, the Case of Iteration: Thirdly, the Case of Restitution: Fourthly, the Case of Teares: Fifthly, the Case of Comfort in death. Ninthly, *The Contraries to Repentance*: First Impenitencie. Secondly, vnfound Repentance. Lastly, the Increase of Repentance, in two things: First, that Repentance can neuer bee but imperfect in this life: Secondly, wherein it failes?

Thus haue I, according to that abilitie God gaue, indetoured to cast the seed of God into your hearts, now your wisdom must bee to water it, when you are at home in your houses, that as my paines hath beene to preach it vnto you, so yours may be to remember and make a right vse thereof; and so I end, beseeching God that the memorie of these things may remaine with you till your dying day. That as euery day you sinne, so euery day you may so renew your Repentance, as *Peter* speakes,

*Act. 3. 19. That your sinnes may bee blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.*

FINIS.







John W. Pease  
2nd son

